

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 01581796 8

UNIV. OF  
TORONTO  
LIBRARY





BINDING LIST JUL 4 1927





I

10162

# THE NEW TESTAMENT





THE  
NEW TESTAMENT

A NEW TRANSLATION

BY

JAMES MOFFATT

D.D., D.LITT.

YATES PROFESSOR OF NEW TESTAMENT GREEK AND EXEGESIS,  
MANSFIELD COLLEGE, OXFORD

138869  
22/6/16

HODDER AND STOUGHTON

LONDON NEW YORK TORONTO

*First Edition printed November 1913,  
Second Edition, December 1913,  
Third Edition, revised April 1914,  
Fourth Edition, November 1914,  
and this, the Fifth Edition, November 1915.*



## PREFACE

✓

IN his essay on Protestantism, de Quincey has a characteristic paragraph upon the popular delusion that "every idea and word which exists, or has existed, for any nation, ancient or modern, must have a direct interchangeable equivalent in all other languages." No one who attempts to translate any part of the New Testament is likely to remain very long under such a delusion. Thus there is no exact English equivalent for terms like λόγος and μυστήριον and δικαιοσύνη. The first of these I have simply transliterated once or twice; 'Logos' is at any rate less misleading than 'Word' would be to a modern reader. Even when an equivalent can be got for some New Testament term like ἔθνη or Ἰουδαῖοι, it cannot be used invariably. I have kept "Gentiles" for ἔθνη in cases where the contrast between Judaism and the outer world is prominent; if Kipling's "Recessional" was intelligible to modern readers, "Gentiles" here should not cause them undue difficulty. But now and then the Greek term carries a sense which can only be represented by our "pagans" or "heathen," and occasionally it is no more than "nations." This will serve as an illustration of the difficulties which confront a translator. But once the translation of the New Testament is freed from the influence of the theory of verbal inspiration, these difficulties cease to be so formidable. I have tried not to sacrifice the spirit to the letter. It is true, as de Quincey observes in the same essay, that "the great ideas of the Bible protect themselves. The heavenly truths, by their own imperishableness, defeat the mortality of languages with which for a moment they are associated." Still, this is a victory in which even the camp-followers or translators have a modest share. They can or they should further this linguistic triumph. Hellenistic Greek has its own defects, from the point of view of the classical scholar, but it is an eminently translatable language, and the evidence of papyrology shows it was more flexible than once was imagined. My intention, therefore, has been to produce a

## PREFACE

version which will to some degree represent the gains of recent lexical research and also prove readable. I have attempted to translate the New Testament exactly as one would render any piece of contemporary Hellenistic prose; in this way, students of the original text may perhaps be benefited. But I hope also that the translation may fall into the hands of some who know how to freshen their religious interest in the meaning of the New Testament by reading it occasionally in some unauthorized English or foreign version, as well as into the hands of others who for various reasons neglect the Bible even as an English classic. This is a hope which, no doubt, is accompanied with some risks and fears. Every translation has to face a double ordeal. Some of its readers know the original, some do not, and both classes have to be met. "The English reader," as Dr. Rouse remarks, "may be quite competent to judge of a translation as literature and as intelligible or not intelligible, but he cannot judge of its accuracy. The scholar alone can judge of its accuracy, but (granting that he has literary taste) he knows the original too well to be independent of it, and hence cannot judge of the impression which the translation will make on the minds of those who are not scholars." If this is true of Homer, it is three times true of the New Testament. Any new translation starts under a special handicap. It appears to challenge in every line the rhythm and diction of an English classic, and this irritates many who have no knowledge of the original. *The old, they say, is better.* They are indifferent to the changes which recent grammatical research has necessitated in the translation of the aorist, the article, and the particles, for example, even since the Revised Version of 1881 was made. But intelligibility is more than associations, and to atone in part for the loss of associations I have endeavoured to make the New Testament, especially St. Paul's epistles, as intelligible to a modern English reader as any version that is not a paraphrase can hope to make them.

This raises one of the numerous points of difficulty that beset the translator. How far is he justified in modernizing an Oriental book? How far can he assume that certain turns of expression have become naturalized in English by the Authorized Version itself? I have never seen any satisfactory solution of this problem, and I have not been able to find one. However, it is superfluous to discuss such matters at length. This is not the place to develop any theories on the subject. What the general public

vi



## PREFACE

cares for is a translator's practice rather than his principles, and students can easily detect the latter, or the lack of them, in the former.

I wish only to add this caution, that a translator appears to be more dogmatic than he really is. He must come down on one side of the fence or on the other. He has often to decide on a rendering, or even on the text of a passage, when his own mind is by no means clear and certain. In a number of cases, therefore, when the evidence is conflicting, I must ask scholars and students to believe that a line has been taken only after long thought and only with serious hesitation.

The translation has been made from the text recently issued by Von Soden of Berlin, but I have not invariably followed his arrangement and punctuation. Wherever I have felt obliged to adopt a different reading, this is noted at the foot of the page.

Quotations or direct reminiscences of the Old Testament are printed in italics.

The books are arranged for the convenience of the general reader in the order of the English Bible. This applies to the order of chapters as well. Thus the last four chapters of Second Corinthians appear in their usual canonical position instead of in what I believe to be their original position between First and Second Corinthians. The only exception I have made to this rule is in the case of some occasional transpositions either of verses or of paragraphs, for example, in the case of the Fourth Gospel. Any one who cares to look into the evidence for such changes will find it in my *Introduction to the Literature of the New Testament*.

Lastly, it is right to add that I have not consulted any other version of the New Testament in preparing this work, though probably echoes and reminiscences have clung to one's mind. The only version I have kept before me is the one I prepared thirteen years ago for my *Historical New Testament*. But the present version is not a revision of that. It is an independent work. I agreed to undertake it with sharp misgivings, but I trust that the spirit and method of its composition may at any rate do something to make some parts of the New Testament more intelligible to some readers.

JAMES MOFFATT.

1913.



17

# CONTENTS

MATTHEW . . . . .	PAGE 1
MARK . . . . .	43
LUKE . . . . .	69
JOHN . . . . .	113
ACTS . . . . .	145
ROMANS . . . . .	187
I. CORINTHIANS . . . . .	205
II. CORINTHIANS . . . . .	223
GALATIANS . . . . .	234
EPHESIANS . . . . .	240
PHILIPPIANS . . . . .	246
COLOSSIANS . . . . .	250
I. THESSALONIANS . . . . .	254
II. THESSALONIANS . . . . .	258
I. TIMOTHEUS . . . . .	261
II. TIMOTHEUS . . . . .	266
TITUS . . . . .	270
PHILEMON . . . . .	272
HEBREWS . . . . .	273
JAMES . . . . .	286
	ix

# CONTENTS

	PAGE
I. PETER . . . . .	291
II. PETER . . . . .	296
I. JOHN . . . . .	299
II. JOHN . . . . .	304
III. JOHN . . . . .	305
JUDAS . . . . .	306
REVELATION . . . . .	308

## THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO

### S. MATTHEW

CHAP.

1 THE birth-roll of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.  
 2 Abraham was the father of Isaac, Isaac the father of Jacob, Jacob the father of Judah and his  
 3 brothers, Judah the father of Perez and Zerah by Tamar, Perez the father of Hezron, Hezron the father  
 4 of Aram, Aram the father of Aminadab, Aminadab the father of Nahshon, Nahshon the father of Salmon, Salmon the father of Boaz  
 5 by Rahab, Boaz the father of Obed by Ruth, Obed the father of Jessai,  
 6 and Jessai the father of king David.  
 David was the father of Solomon  
 7 by Uriah's wife, Solomon the father of Rehoboam, Rehoboam the father of Abijah, Abijah the father of Asa,  
 8 Asa the father of Jehoshaphat, Jehoshaphat the father of Joram,  
 9 Joram the father of Uzziah, Uzziah the father of Jotham, Jotham the father of Ahaz, Ahaz the father of  
 10 Hezekiah, Hezekiah the father of Manasseh, Manasseh the father of Amon, Amon the father of Josiah,  
 11 and Josiah the father of Jechoniah and his brothers at the period of  
 12 the Babylonian captivity. After the Babylonian captivity, Jechoniah was the father of Shealtiel, Shealtiel the father of Zerubbabel,  
 13 Zerubbabel the father of Abiud, Abiud the father of Eliakim, Eliakim the father of Azor, Azor the father of Zadok, Zadok the father of Achim, Achim the father of  
 15 Eliud, Eliud the father of Eleazar,

Eleazar the father of Matthan, Matthan the father of Jacob, Jacob 16 the father of Joseph, and Joseph (to whom the virgin Mary was betrothed) the father of Jesus, who is called 'Christ.'

Thus all the generations from 17 Abraham to David number fourteen, from David to the Babylonian captivity fourteen, and from the Babylonian captivity to the Christ fourteen.

The birth of [Jesus] Christ came 18 about thus. His mother Mary was betrothed to Joseph, but before they came together she was discovered to be pregnant by the holy Spirit. As Joseph her hus- 19 band was a just man but unwilling to disgrace her, he resolved to divorce her secretly; but after he 20 had planned this, there appeared an angel of the Lord to him in a dream saying, "Joseph, son of David, fear not to take Mary your wife home, for what is begotten in her comes from the holy Spirit. She will bear a son, and you will 21 call him 'Jesus,' for he will save his people from their sins." All 22 this happened for the fulfilment of what the Lord had spoken by the prophet:

*The maiden will conceive and 23 bear a son, and his name will be called Immanuel*

(which may be translated, *God is with us*). So on waking from sleep 24 Joseph did as the angel of the Lord



had commanded him; he took his  
25 wife home, but he did not live with  
her as a husband till she bore a son,  
whom he called Jesus.

CHAP.

2 Now when Jesus was born at  
Bethlehem, belonging to Judaea,  
in the days of king Herod, magi-  
cians from the East arrived at  
2 Jerusalem, asking, "Where is the  
newly-born king of the Jews? We  
saw his star when it rose, and  
we have come to worship him."  
3 The news of this troubled king  
Herod and all Jerusalem as  
4 well; so he gathered all the high  
priests and scribes of the people  
and made inquiries of them  
about where the messiah was  
5 to be born. They told him, "In  
Bethlehem belonging to Judaea:  
for thus it is written by the  
prophet:  
6 *And you Bethlehem, in Judah's  
land,  
You are not least among the  
rulers of Judah:  
For a ruler will come from  
you,  
Who will shepherd Israel my  
people.*"  
7 Then Herod summoned the magi-  
cians in secret and ascertained  
from them the time of the star's  
8 appearance. He also sent them  
to Bethlehem, telling them, "Go  
and make a careful search for  
the child, and when you have  
found him report to me, so  
that I can go and worship him  
9 too." The magicians listened to  
the king and then went their  
way. And the star they had seen  
rise went in front of them till it  
stopped over the place where the  
10 child was. When they caught sight  
of the star they were intensely glad.

And on reaching the house they saw 11  
the child with his mother Mary,  
they fell down to worship him,  
and opening their caskets they  
offered him gifts of gold and frank-  
incense and myrrh. Then, as they 12  
had been divinely warned in a  
dream not to return to Herod, they  
went back to their own country by  
a different road.

After they had gone, there ap- 13  
peared an angel of the Lord to  
Joseph in a dream, saying, "Rise,  
take the child and his mother and  
flee to Egypt; stay there till I tell  
you. For Herod is going to search  
for the child and destroy him." 14  
So he got up, took the child and his  
mother by night, and went off to  
Egypt, where he stayed until the 15  
death of Herod. This was to fulfil  
what the Lord had said by the  
prophet: *I called my Son from  
Egypt.*

Then Herod saw the magicians 16  
had trifled with him, and he was  
furiously angry; he sent and slew  
all the male children in Bethlehem  
and in all the neighbourhood who  
were two years old or under, calcu-  
lating by the time he had ascer-  
tained from the magicians. Then 17  
the saying was fulfilled which had  
been uttered by the prophet Jere-  
miah:

*A cry was heard in Rama, 18  
weeping and sore lamentation—  
Rachel weeping for her children,  
and inconsolable because they  
are no more.*

But when Herod died, there ap- 19  
peared an angel of the Lord in a  
dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying, 20  
"Rise, take the child and his  
mother and go to the land of Israel,  
for those who sought the child's  
life are dead." So he rose, took 21  
the child and his mother and went

## S. MATTHEW III, IV

- 22 to the land of Israel; but on hearing that Archelaus reigned over Judaea in place of his father Herod, he was afraid to go there and, by a divine injunction in a dream, withdrew to the region of Galilee.
- 23 He went and settled in a town called Nazaret, so that what had been said by the prophets might be fulfilled: 'He shall be called a Nazarene.'

CHAP.

- 3 In those days John the Baptist came on the scene, preaching in the 2 desert of Judaea, "Repent, the 3 Reign of heaven is near." (This was the man spoken of by the prophet Isaiah:

*The voice of one who cries in the desert,*

*'Make the way ready for the Lord,*

*level the paths for him.')*

- 4 This John had his clothes made of camel's hair, with a leather girdle round his loins; his food was locusts 5 and wild honey. Then Jerusalem and the whole of Judaea and all the Jordan-district went out to him 6 and got baptized by him in the 7 Jordan, confessing their sins. But when he noticed a number of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming for his baptism, he said to them, "You brood of vipers, who told you to flee from the coming Wrath? 8 Now, produce fruit that answers to 9 your repentance, instead of presuming to say to yourselves, 'We have a father in Abraham.' I tell you, God can raise up children for 10 Abraham from these stones! The axe is lying all ready at the root of the trees; any tree that is not producing good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.

I baptize you with water for 11 repentance, but he who is coming after me is mightier, and I am not fit even to carry his sandals; he will baptize you with the holy Spirit and fire. His winnowing-fan is in his 12 hand, he will clean out his threshing-floor, his wheat he will gather into the granary, but the straw he will burn with fire' unquenchable."

Then Jesus came on the scene 13 from Galilee, to get baptized by John at the Jordan. John tried 14 to prevent him; "I need to get baptized by you," he said, "and you come to me!" But Jesus 15 answered him, "Come now, this is how we should fulfil all our duty to God." Then John gave in to him. Now when Jesus had been 16 baptized, the moment he rose out of the water, the heavens opened and he saw the Spirit of God coming down like a dove upon him. And 17 a voice from heaven said, 'This is my Son, the Beloved, in him is my delight.'

CHAP.

THEN Jesus was led into the 4 desert by the Spirit to be tempted by the devil. He fasted forty days 2 and forty nights and afterwards felt hungry. So the tempter came up 3 and said to him, "If you are God's son, tell these stones to become loaves." He answered, "It is 4 written,

*Man is not to live on bread alone,*

*but on every word that issues from the mouth of God."*



## S. MATTHEW V

5 Then the devil conveyed him to  
the holy city and, placing him on  
6 the pinnacle of the temple, said  
to him, "If you are God's son,  
throw yourself down; for it is  
written,

*He will give his angels charge of  
you ;  
they will bear you on their hands,  
lest you strike your foot against a  
stone."*

7 Jesus said to him, "It is written  
again, *You shall not tempt the Lord*

8 *your God."* Once more the devil  
conveyed him to an exceedingly  
high mountain and showed him all  
the realms of the world and their

9 grandeur; he said, "I will give you  
all that if you will fall down and

10 worship me." Then Jesus told  
him, "Begone, Satan! it is written,

11 *You must worship the Lord your  
God, and serve him alone."* At

this the devil left him, and  
angels came up and ministered to  
him.

12 Now when Jesus heard that  
John had been arrested, he with-

13 drew to Galilee; he left Nazaret  
and settled at Capharnahum beside  
the lake, in the territory of Zebulun

14 and Naphtali—for the fulfilment  
of what had been said by the

prophet Isaiah :

15 *Land of Zebulun, land of Naphtali  
lying to the sea, across the  
Jordan,*

*Galilee of the Gentiles !*

16 *The people who sat in darkness  
saw a great light,*

*yea light dawned on those who  
sat in the land and the shadow  
of death.*

17 From that day Jesus began to  
preach, saying, "Repent, the Reign  
of heaven is near."

18 As he was walking along the  
sea of Galilee he saw two brothers,

Simon (who is called Peter) and  
his brother Andrew, casting a net  
in the sea—for they were fisher-  
men; so he said to them, "Come, 19  
follow me, and I will make you  
fish for men." And they dropped 20

their nets at once and followed  
him. Then going on from there 21

he saw two other brothers, James  
the son of Zebedaeus and his brother

John, mending their nets in the  
boat beside their father Zebedaeus.

He called them, and they left the 22  
boat and their father at once, and  
went after him.

Then he made a tour through 23  
the whole of Galilee, teaching in

their synagogues, preaching the  
gospel of the Reign, and healing

all the sickness and disease of the  
people. The fame of him spread all 24

through the surrounding country,\*  
and people brought him all their

sick, those who suffered from all  
manner of disease and pain, de-

moniacs, lunatics, and paralytics;  
he healed them all.

And he was followed by great 25  
crowds from Galilee and Decapolis

and Jerusalem and Judaea and from  
across the Jordan.

CHAP.

So when he saw the crowds, he 5  
went up the hill and sat down; his

disciples came up to him and he 2  
opened his lips and began to teach  
them. He said :

"Blessed are those who feel poor 3  
in spirit !

the Realm of heaven is theirs.

Blessed are the mourners ! 4  
they will be consoled.

\* I accept Blass's suggestion that *Συλα*  
here is a corruption of *συνοπία* (see Mark  
i. 28), which is actually read by one  
uncial manuscript Γ.

## S. MATTHEW V

- 5 Blessed are *the humble!*  
they *will inherit the earth.*
- 6 Blessed are those who hunger  
and thirst for goodness!  
they will be satisfied.
- 7 Blessed are the merciful!  
they will find mercy.
- 8 Blessed are the pure in heart!  
they will see God.
- 9 Blessed are the peacemakers!  
they will be ranked sons of  
God.
- 10 Blessed are those who have been  
persecuted for the sake of  
goodness!  
the Realm of heaven is theirs.
- 11 Blessed are you when men  
denounce you and persecute you  
and utter all manner of evil against  
12 you for my sake; rejoice and  
exult in it, for your reward is  
rich in heaven; that is how they  
persecuted the prophets before you.
- 13 You are the salt of the earth.  
But if salt becomes insipid, what  
can make it salt again? After that  
it is fit for nothing, fit only to be  
thrown outside and trodden by the  
feet of men.
- 14 You are the light of the world.  
A town on the top of a hill cannot  
15 be hidden. Nor do men light a  
lamp to put it under a bowl; they  
put it on a stand and it shines for  
16 all in the house. So your light is  
to shine before men, that they may  
see the good you do and glorify  
your Father in heaven.
- 17 Do not imagine I have come to  
destroy the Law or the prophets;  
I have not come to destroy but to  
18 fulfil. (I tell you truly, till heaven  
and earth pass away not an iota,  
not a comma, will pass from the  
Law until it is all in force. There-  
fore
- 19 whoever relaxes a single one of  
these commands, were it

even one of the least, and  
teaches men so,  
he will be ranked least in the  
Realm of heaven;  
but whoever obeys them and  
teaches them,  
he will be ranked great in the  
Realm of heaven.) For I 20  
tell you, unless your goodness  
exceeds that of the scribes and Phari-  
sees, you will never get into the  
Realm of heaven.

You have heard how the men of 21  
old were told, '*Murder not:*  
whoever murders must come up  
for sentence,\*  
whoever maligns his brother must  
come before the Sanhedrin, 22  
whoever curses his brother must  
go to the fire of Gehenna.'

But I tell you, whoever is angry  
with his brother [without cause]  
will be sentenced by God. So if 23  
you remember, even when offering  
your gift at the altar, that your  
brother has any grievance against  
you, leave your gift at the very 24  
altar and go away; first be recon-  
ciled to your brother, then come  
back and offer your gift.

Be quick and make terms with 25  
your opponent, so long as you and  
he are on the way to court, in case  
he hands you over to the judge, and  
the judge to the jailer, and you are  
thrown into prison; truly I tell 26  
you, you will never get out till you  
pay the last halfpenny of your debt.

You have heard how it used to 27  
be said, *Do not commit adultery.*  
But I tell you, any one who even 28  
looks with lust at a woman has  
committed adultery with her al-  
ready in his heart.

\* I follow the suggestion that the  
second and third clauses of ver. 22  
should be restored to what seems to be  
their original position as a rabbinic  
comment upon the closing words of ver. 21.

## S. MATTHEW VI

- 29 If your right eye is a hindrance to you,  
pluck it out and throw it away :  
better for you to lose one of your members  
than to have all your body  
thrown into Gehenna.
- 30 And if your right hand is a hindrance to you,  
cut it off and throw it away :  
better for you to lose one of your members  
than to have all your body  
thrown into Gehenna.
- 31 It used to be said, *Whoever divorces his wife must give her a*  
32 *divorce-certificate.* But I tell you,  
anyone who divorces his wife for  
any reason except unchastity makes  
her an adulteress; and whoever  
marries a divorced woman commits  
adultery.
- 33 Once again, you have heard how  
the men of old were told, '*You must*  
34 *not forswear yourself but discharge*  
*your vows to the Lord*'. But I tell  
you, you must not swear any oath,  
neither by *heaven*,  
for it is *the throne of God*,  
35 nor by *earth*,  
for it is *the footstool of his feet*.  
nor by Jerusalem,  
for it is *the city of the great*  
*King* ;
- 36 nor shall you swear by your head,  
for you cannot make a single  
hair white or black.
- 37 Let what you say be simply  
'yes' or 'no' ;  
whatever exceeds that springs  
from evil.
- 38 You have heard the saying, *An*  
*eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.*
- 39 But I tell you, you are not to resist  
an injury :  
whoever strikes you on the right  
cheek,  
turn the other to him as well ;

whoever wants to sue you for 40  
your shirt,  
let him have your coat as well ;  
whoever forces you to go one 41  
mile,  
go two miles with him ;  
give to the man who begs from 42  
you,  
and turn not away from him  
who wants to borrow.

You have heard the saying, '*You 43*  
*must love your neighbour and hate*  
*your enemy.*' But I tell you, 44  
love your enemies and pray for  
those who persecute you, that you 45  
may be sons of your Father in  
heaven :  
he makes his sun rise on the evil  
and the good,  
and sends rain on the just and  
the unjust.

For if you love only those who 46  
love you, what reward do  
you get for that ?  
do not the very taxgatherers  
do as much ?  
and if you only salute your 47  
friends, what is special about  
that ?  
do not the very pagans do as  
much ?

*You must be perfect* as your 48  
heavenly Father is perfect.

CHAP.

TAKE care not to practise your 6  
charity before men in order to  
be noticed ; otherwise you get  
no reward from your Father in  
heaven. No,

When you give alms, 2  
make no flourish of trumpets like  
the hypocrites in the syna-  
gogues and the streets,  
so as to win applause from  
men ;  
I tell you truly, they do get  
their reward.



## S. MATTHEW VI

- 3 When you give alms,  
do not let your left hand know  
what your right hand is  
doing,
- 4 so as to keep your alms secret ;  
then your Father who sees  
what is secret will reward  
you openly.\*
- 5 Also, when you pray, you must not  
be like the hypocrites,  
for they like to stand and pray in  
the synagogues and at the  
street-corners,  
so as to be seen by men ;  
I tell you truly, they do get  
their reward.
- 6 When you pray,  
*go into your room and shut the  
door,*  
*pray to your Father who is in  
secret,*  
and your Father who sees  
what is secret will reward  
you.
- 7 Do not pray by idle rote like  
pagans,  
for they suppose they will be  
heard the more they say ;
- 8 you must not copy them ;  
your Father knows your needs  
before you ask him.
- 9 Let this be how you pray :  
'our Father in heaven,  
thy name be revered,  
10 thy Reign begin,  
thy will be done  
on earth as in heaven !
- 11 give us to-day our bread for  
the morrow,  
12 and forgive us our debts  
as we ourselves have for-  
given our debtors,  
13 and lead us not into tempta-  
tion  
but deliver us from evil.'

- For if you forgive men their tres- 14  
passes,  
then your heavenly Father will  
forgive you ;
- but if you do not forgive men, 15  
your Father will not forgive your  
trespasses either.
- When you fast, 16  
do not look gloomy like the hypo-  
crites,  
for they look woebegone to let  
men see they are fasting ;  
I tell you truly, they do get  
their reward.
- But when you fast, 17  
anoint your head and wash your  
face,  
so that your fast may be seen 18  
not by men but by your  
Father who is in secret,  
and your Father who sees  
what is secret will reward  
you.
- Store up no treasures for your- 19  
selves on earth,  
where moth and rust corrode,  
where thieves break in and  
steal :
- store up treasures for yourselves 20  
in heaven,  
where neither moth nor rust  
corrode,  
where thieves do not break in  
and steal.
- For where your treasure lies, 21  
your heart will lie there too.
- The eye is the lamp of the body : 22  
so, if your Eye is generous,  
the whole of your body will be  
illuminated,
- but if your Eye is selfish, 23  
the whole of your body will be  
darkened.
- And if your very light turns dark,  
then—what a darkness it is !
- No one can serve two masters : 24  
either he will hate one and love  
the other,

\* Retaining *ἐν τῷ φανερώ*, which has  
powerful support in the Old Latin and  
Syriac versions.

## S. MATTHEW VII

or else he will stand by the one  
and despise the other—  
you cannot serve both God and  
Mammon.

25 Therefore I tell you,  
do not trouble about what you  
are to eat or drink in life,  
nor about what you are to  
put on your body;  
surely life means more than food,  
surely the body means more  
than clothes!

26 Look at the wild birds;  
they sow not, they reap not,  
they gather nothing in  
granaries,  
and yet your heavenly Father  
feeds them.

Are you not worth more than  
birds?

27 Which of you can add an ell to  
his height by troubling  
about it?

28 And why should you trouble  
over clothing?

Look how the lilies of the field  
grow;

they neither toil nor spin,

29 and yet, I tell you, even Solo-  
mon in all his grandeur  
was never robed like one  
of them.

30 Now if God so clothes the grass of  
the field which blooms to-day and  
is thrown to-morrow into the fur-  
nace, will not he much more clothe  
you? O men, how little you trust

31 him! Do not be troubled, then,  
and cry, 'What are we to eat?' or  
'what are we to drink?' or 'how

32 are we to be clothed?' (pagans  
make all that their aim in life) for  
your heavenly Father knows quite

33 well you need all that. Seek God's  
Realm and his goodness, and all  
that will be yours over and above.

34 So do not be troubled about to-  
morrow;

to-morrow will take care of  
itself.

The day's own trouble is quite  
enough for the day.

CHAP.

JUDGE not, that you may not be 7  
judged yourselves;

for as you judge so you will be 2  
judged,

and the measure you deal out to  
others will be dealt out to  
yourselves.

Why do you note the splinter in 3  
your brother's eye and fail to see  
the plank in your own eye? How 4  
can you say to your brother, 'Let  
me take out the splinter from your  
eye,' when there lies the plank in  
your own eye? You hypocrite! 5  
take the plank out of your own eye  
first, and then you will see properly  
how to take the splinter out of your  
brother's eye.

Do not give dogs what is sacred 6  
and do not throw pearls before  
swine, in case they trample them  
under foot and turn to gore  
you.

Ask and the gift will be yours, 7  
seek and you will find,  
knock and the door will  
open to you;

for every one who asks receives, 8  
the seeker finds,

the door is opened to any-  
one who knocks.

Why, which of you, when asked 9  
by his son for a loaf, will  
hand him a stone?

Or, if he asks a fish, will you 10  
hand him a serpent?

Well, if for all your evil you 11  
know to give your children  
what is good,

how much more will your  
Father in heaven give good  
gifts to those who ask him?

## S. MATTHEW VIII

12 Well then, whatever you would like men to do to you, do just the same to them; that is the meaning of the Law and the prophets.

13 Enter by the narrow gate :  
for [the gate] is broad and the road is wide that leads to destruction,  
and many enter that way.

14 But the road that leads to life is both narrow and close,  
and there are few who find it.

15 Beware of false prophets; they come to you with the garb of sheep but at heart they are ravenous  
16 wolves. You will know them by their fruit; do men gather grapes from thorns or figs from thistles? No,

17 every good tree bears sound fruit,  
but a rotten tree bears bad fruit;

18 a good tree cannot bear bad fruit,  
and a rotten tree cannot bear sound fruit.

20 So you will know them by their  
19 fruit.\* Any tree that does not produce sound fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.

21 It is not everyone who says to me 'Lord, Lord!', who will get into the Realm of heaven, but he who does the will of my Father in  
22 heaven. Many will say to me at that Day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name? did we not cast out daemons in your name? did we not perform many miracles  
23 in your name?' Then I will declare to them, 'I never knew you;

\* Ver. 19 is repeated from iii. 10; to preserve the proper sequence of thought, it must be placed after ver. 20 as a link with the following paragraph.

*depart from my presence, you workers of iniquity.'*

Now, everyone who listens to 24 these words of mine and acts upon them will be like a sensible man who built his house on rock. The 25 rain came down, the floods rose, the winds blew and beat upon that house, but it did not fall, for it was founded on rock. And everyone 26 who listens to these words of mine and does not act upon them will be like a stupid man who built his house on sand. The rain came 27 down, the floods rose, the winds blew and beat upon that house, and down it fell—with a mighty crash."

When Jesus finished his speech, 28 the crowds were astounded at his teaching; for he taught them like 29 an authority, not like their own scribes.

CHAP.

WHEN he came down from the 8 hill, he was followed by large crowds. A leper came up and knelt before him, saying, "If you only choose, sir, you can cleanse me"; so he stretched his hand out and 3 touched him, with the words, "I do choose, be cleansed." And his leprosy was cleansed at once. Then 4 Jesus told him, "See, you are not to say a word to anybody; away and show yourself to the priest and offer the gift prescribed by Moses, to notify men."

When he entered Capharnahum 5 an army-captain came up to him and appealed to him, saying, "Sir, my servant is lying ill at home with paralysis, in terrible agony." He 7 replied, "I will come and heal him." The captain answered, "Sir, I am 8 not fit to have you under my roof; only say the word, and my servant will be cured. For though I am 9



## S. MATTHEW VIII

a man under authority myself, I have soldiers under me; I tell one man to go, and he goes, I tell another to come, and he comes, I tell my servant, 'Do this,' and he does it." When Jesus heard that, he marvelled; "I tell you truly," he said to his followers, "I have never met faith like this anywhere in Israel. Many, I tell you, will come from east and west and take their places beside Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in the Realm of heaven, while the sons of the Realm will pass \* outside, into the darkness; there men will wail and gnash their teeth." Then Jesus said to the captain, "Go; as you have had faith, your prayer is granted." And the servant was cured at that very hour.

On entering the house of Peter, Jesus noticed his mother-in-law was down with fever, so he touched her hand; the fever left her and she rose and ministered to him.

Now when evening came they brought him many demoniacs, and he cast out the spirits with a word and healed all the invalids—that the word spoken by the prophet Isaiah might be fulfilled, *He took away our sicknesses and he removed our diseases.*

When Jesus saw crowds round him he gave orders for crossing to the other side. A scribe came up and said to him, "Teacher, I will follow you anywhere"; Jesus said to him,

"The foxes have their holes,  
the wild birds have their nests,

\* Reading *ἐκλεέσονται* with N\*, the Old Latin and Syriac versions, the Diatessaron, etc. The variant *ἐκβαλεθήσονται* represents a conventional term which would easily be substituted for the less common expression.

but the Son of man has nowhere to lay his head."

Another of the disciples said to him, 21 "Lord, let me go and bury my father first of all"; Jesus said to 22 him, "Follow me, and leave the dead to bury their own dead." Then he embarked in the boat, 23 followed by his disciples. Now a 24 heavy storm came on at sea, so that the boat was buried under the waves. He was sleeping. So the 25 disciples went and woke him up, saying, "Help, Lord, we are drowning!" He said to them, "Why are 26 you afraid? How little you trust God!" Then he got up and checked the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm. Men 27 marvelled at this; they said, "What sort of man is this? the very winds and sea obey him!"

When he reached the opposite 28 side, the country of the Gadarenes, he was met by two demoniacs who ran out of the tombs; they were so violent that nobody could pass along the road there. They 29 shrieked, "Son of God, what business have you with us? Have you come here to torture us before it is time?" Now, some dis- 30 tance away, there was a large drove of swine grazing; so the daemons 31 begged him saying, "If you are going to cast us out, send us into that drove of swine." He said to 32 them, "Begone!" So out they came and went to the swine, and the entire drove rushed down the steep slope into the sea and perished in the water. The herds- 33 men fled; they went off to the town and reported the whole affair of the demoniacs. Then all the 34 town came out to meet Jesus, and when they saw him they begged him to move out of their district.

## S. MATTHEW IX

CHAP.

- 9 So he embarked in the boat and crossed over to his own town.
- 2 There a paralytic was brought to him, lying on a pallet; and when Jesus saw the faith of the bearers he said to the paralytic, "Courage, my son! your sins are forgiven."
- 3 Some scribes said to themselves, "The man is talking blasphemy!"
- 4 Jesus saw what they were thinking and said, "Why do you think evil
- 5 in your hearts? Which is the easier thing, to say, 'Your sins are forgiven,' or to say, 'Rise and
- 6 walk'?" But to let you see the Son of man has power on earth to forgive sins"—he then said to the paralytic, "Get up, lift your pallet,
- 7 and go home." And he got up
- 8 and went home. The crowds who saw it were awed and glorified God for giving such power to men.
- 9 As Jesus passed along from there, he saw a man called Matthew sitting at the tax-office; he said to him, "Follow me"; and he rose and followed him.
- 10 Jesus was at table indoors, and many taxgatherers and sinners had come to be guests with him
- 11 and his disciples. So when the Pharisees saw this, they said to his disciples, "Why does your teacher eat with taxgatherers and
- 12 sinners?" When Jesus heard it he said, "Those who are strong have no need of a doctor, but
- 13 those who are ill. Go and learn the meaning of this word, *I care for mercy not for sacrifice*. For I have not come to call just men but sinners."
- 14 Then the disciples of John came up to him and said, "Why do we and the Pharisees fast a great deal, and your disciples do not fast?"

Jesus said to them, 15  
 "Can friends at a wedding mourn so long as the bridegroom is beside them?  
 A time will come when the bridegroom is taken from them, and then they will fast.  
 No one sews a piece of undressed 16  
 cloth on an old coat, for the patch breaks away from it, and the tear is made worse:  
 nor do men pour fresh wine into 17  
 old wineskins, otherwise the wineskins burst, and the wine is spilt, the wineskins are ruined.  
 They put fresh wine into fresh wineskins,  
 and so both are preserved."

As he said this, an official came in 18  
 and knelt before him, saying, "My daughter is just dead; do come and lay your hand on her, and she will live." So Jesus rose and went 19  
 after him, accompanied by his disciples. Now a woman who had had 20  
 a hemorrhage for twelve years came up behind him and touched the tassel of his robe; what she 21  
 said to herself was this, "If I can only touch his robe, I will recover."  
 Then Jesus turned round, and when 22  
 he saw her he said, "Courage, my daughter, your faith has made you well." And the woman was well from 23  
 that hour. Now when Jesus reached the official's house and saw the flute-players and the din the crowd were making, he said, "Be off with you; 24  
 the girl is not dead but asleep." They laughed at him. But after 25  
 the crowd had been put out, he went in and took her hand, and the girl rose up. The report of this went 26  
 all over that country.

As Jesus passed along from there, 27  
 he was followed by two blind men



## S. MATTHEW X

who shrieked, "Son of David, have  
 28 pity on us!" When he went  
 indoors the blind men came up to  
 him, and Jesus asked them, "Do  
 you believe I can do this?" They  
 29 said, "Yes, sir." Then he touched  
 their eyes and said, "As you  
 believe, so your prayer is granted,"  
 30 and their eyes were opened. Jesus  
 sternly charged them, "See, nobody  
 31 is to know of this." But they  
 went out and spread the news of  
 32 him all over that country. As  
 they went out, a dumb man was  
 brought to him, who was pos-  
 33 sessed by a daemon, and when the  
 daemon had been cast out, the  
 dumb man spoke. Then the  
 crowd marvelled; they said, "Such  
 a thing has never been seen in  
 Israel!" \*

35 Then Jesus made a tour through  
 all the towns and villages, teaching  
 in their synagogues, preaching the  
 gospel of the Reign, and healing  
 36 every disease and complaint. As  
 he saw the crowds he was moved  
 with pity for them; they were  
 harassed and dejected, like sheep  
 37 without a shepherd. Then he said  
 to his disciples, "The harvest is  
 38 rich, but the labourers are few; so  
 pray the Lord of the harvest to send  
 labourers to gather his harvest."

CHAP.

10 AND summoning his twelve dis-  
 ciples he gave them power over  
 unclean spirits, power to cast them  
 out and also to heal every disease  
 2 and every ailment. These are the  
 names of the twelve apostles: first

\* Ver. 34 ('But the Pharisees said,  
 "He casts out daemons by the prince of  
 daemons"') is to be omitted, with D, Syr.<sup>sin</sup>,  
 the Old Latin, the Diatessaron, etc. It  
 is probably a later insertion from xii. 24  
 or Mark iii. 22, to prepare for xii. 24 f.

Simon (who is called Peter) and  
 Andrew his brother, James the  
 son of Zebedaeus and John his  
 brother, Philip and Bartholomew, 3  
 Thomas and Matthew the tax-  
 gatherer, James the son of Alphaeus  
 and Lebbaeus whose surname is  
 Thaddaeus, Simon the Zealot and 4  
 Judas Iscariot who betrayed him.  
 These twelve men Jesus despatched 5  
 with the following instructions,  
 "Do not go among the Gentiles,  
 rather make your way to the lost 6  
 sheep of the house of Israel. And 7  
 preach as you go, tell men, 'The  
 Reign of heaven is near.' Heal 8  
 the sick, raise the dead, cleanse  
 lepers, cast out daemons; give  
 without paying, as you have got  
 without paying; you are not to 9  
 take gold or silver or coppers in  
 your girdle, nor a wallet for the 10  
 road, nor two shirts, nor sandals,  
 nor stick—the workman deserves  
 his rations. Whatever town or 11  
 village you go into, find out a de-  
 serving inhabitant and stay with  
 him till you leave.

When you enter the house, salute 12  
 it;

if the household is deserving, 13  
 let your peace rest on it;

but if the household is unde-  
 serving,

let your peace return to you.

Whoever will not receive you or 14  
 listen to your message, leave that  
 house or town and shake off the  
 very dust from your feet. I tell 15  
 you truly, on the day of judg-  
 ment it will be more bearable  
 for Sodom and Gomorra than for  
 that town. I am sending you 16  
 out like sheep among wolves; so  
 be wise like serpents and guileless  
 like doves. Beware of men, they 17  
 will hand you over to sanhedrins  
 and scourge you in their syna-

## S. MATTHEW X

18 gogues, and you will be haled before  
governors and kings for my sake—  
it will be a testimony to them and  
19 to the Gentiles. Now, when they  
bring you up for trial, do not trouble  
yourselves about how to speak or  
what to say; what you are to say  
will come to you at the moment,  
20 for you are not the speakers, it is  
the Spirit of your Father that is  
21 speaking through you. Brother  
will betray brother to death, the  
father will betray his child, *children*  
*will rise against their parents* and  
22 put them to death, and you will  
be hated by all men on account of  
my name; but he will be saved who  
holds out to the very end.

23 When they persecute you in one  
town, flee to the next; truly I tell  
you, you will not have covered the  
towns of Israel before the Son of  
man arrives.

24 A scholar is not above his teacher,  
nor a servant above his lord;  
25 enough for the scholar to fare  
like his teacher,  
and the servant like his lord.  
If men have called the master  
of the house Beelzebul,  
how much more will they mis-  
call his servants!

26 Fear them not :—  
nothing is veiled that shall not  
be revealed,  
or hidden that shall not be  
known;  
27 what I tell you in the dark, you  
must utter in the open,  
what you hear in a whisper  
you must proclaim on the  
housetop.

28 Have no fear of those who kill  
the body but cannot kill  
the soul:  
rather fear Him who can de-  
stroy both soul and body  
in Gehenna.

Are not two sparrows sold for a 29  
farthing?  
Yet not one of them will fall  
to the ground unless your  
Father wills it.  
The very hairs on your head are 30  
all numbered;  
fear not, then, you are worth 31  
far more \* than spar-  
rows!  
Everyone who will acknowledge 32  
me before men,  
I will acknowledge him before  
my Father in heaven;  
and whoever will disown me 33  
before men,  
I will disown him before my  
Father in heaven.

Do not imagine I have come to 34  
bring peace on earth;  
I have not come to bring peace  
but a sword.  
I have come to set a man *against* 35  
*his father,*  
*a daughter against her mother,*  
*a daughter-in-law against her*  
*mother-in-law;*  
yes, *a man's own household will* 36  
*be his enemies.*  
He who loves father or mother 37  
more than me  
is not worthy of me;  
he who loves son or daughter  
more than me  
is not worthy of me :  
he who will not take his cross and 38  
follow after me  
is not worthy of me.  
He who has found his life will 39  
lose it,  
and he who loses his life for my  
sake will find it.

\* The *πολλῶν* of the text is either a corruption of *πολλῆς* or, as Wellhausen points out, a mistranslation of the Aramaic equivalent for that. 'The distinction is qualitative, not quantitative.'

## S. MATTHEW XI

- 40 He who receives you receives me,  
and he who receives me receives Him who sent me.
- 41 He who receives a prophet because he is a prophet, will receive a prophet's reward;  
he who receives a good man because he is good, will receive a good man's reward.
- 42 And whoever gives one of these little ones even a cup of cold water because he is a disciple,  
I tell you, he shall not lose his reward."

CHAP.

- 11 AFTER finishing these instructions to his twelve disciples, Jesus removed from there to teach and preach among their towns.
- 2 Now when John heard in prison what the Christ was doing, he sent 3 his disciples to ask him, "Are you the Coming One? Or are we to 4 look out for someone else?" Jesus answered them, "Go and report to John what you hear and see: 5 *the blind see*, the lame walk, lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, and 6 the dead are raised.\* And blessed is he who is repelled by nothing 7 in me!" As the disciples of John went away, Jesus proceeded to speak to the crowds about John:
- "What did you go out to the desert to see?  
A reed swayed by the wind?  
8 Come, what did you go out to see?

\* Omitting *καὶ πτωχοὶ εὐαγγελίζονται*, which seems a harmonistic interpolation from Luke vii. 22. Matthew never uses *εὐαγγελίζεσθαι*.

A man arrayed in soft raiment?  
The wearers of soft raiment are in royal palaces.  
Come, why did you go out? 9  
To see a prophet?  
Yes, I tell you, and far more than a prophet.  
This is he of whom it is 10 written,  
*Here I send my messenger before your face to prepare the way for you.*  
I tell you truly, no one has 11 arisen among the sons of women who is greater than John the Baptist, and yet the least in the Realm of heaven is greater than he is. From the days of John the Baptist 12 till now the Realm of heaven suffers violence, and the violent press into it. For all the prophets and 13 the Law prophesied of it until John:—if you care to believe it, 14 he is the Elijah who is to come. He who has an ear, let him listen 15 to this.

But to what shall I compare 16 this generation? It is like children sitting in the marketplace, who call to their playmates,  
'We piped to you and you would 17 not dance,  
we lamented and you would not beat your breasts.'  
For John has come neither eat- 18 ing nor drinking,  
and men say, 'He has a devil';  
the Son of man has come eating 19 and drinking,  
and men say, 'Here is a glutton and a drunkard,  
a friend of taxgatherers and sinners!'  
Nevertheless, Wisdom is vindicated by all that she does."



20 Then he proceeded to upbraid the towns where his many miracles had been performed, because they  
 21 would not repent. "Woe to you, Khorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! Had the miracles performed in you been performed in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and  
 22 ashes. I tell you this, it will be more bearable for Tyre and Sidon on the day of judgment than for  
 23 you. And you, O Capharnahum! *Exalted to heaven? No, you will sink to Hades!*—for if the miracles performed in you had been performed in Sodom, Sodom would  
 24 have lasted to this day. I tell you, it will be more bearable for Sodom on the day of judgment than for you."

25 At that time Jesus spoke and said, "I praise thee, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, for hiding all this from the wise and learned and revealing it to the simple-minded; yes, Father, I praise thee that such was thy chosen purpose.

27 All has been handed over to me by my Father:

and no one knows the Son except the Father—

nor does anyone know the Father except the Son, and he to whom the Son chooses to reveal him.

28 Come to me, all who are labouring and burdened, and I will refresh you.

29 Take my yoke upon you and learn from me,

for I am gentle and humble in heart,

and *you will find your souls refreshed;*

30 my yoke is kindly and my burden light."

At that time Jesus walked one 12 sabbath through the cornfields, and as his disciples were hungry they started to pull some ears of corn and eat them. When the 2 Pharisees noticed it, they said to him, "Look at your disciples, they are doing what is not allowed on the sabbath." He replied, "Have 3 you not read what David did when he and his men were hungry, how 4 he went into the house of God, and there they ate *the loaves of the Presence* which neither he nor his men were allowed to eat, but only the priests? Have you not read 5 in the Law that the priests in the temple are not guilty when they desecrate the sabbath? I tell 6 you, One is here who is greater than the temple. Besides, if you 7 had known what this meant, *I care for mercy not for sacrifice,* you would not have condemned men who are not guilty. For 8 the Son of man is Lord of the sabbath."

Then he moved on from there and 9 went into their synagogue. Now 10 a man with a withered hand was there; so in order to get a charge against him they asked him, "Is it right to heal on the sabbath?" He said to them, "Is there a man 11 of you with one sheep, who will not catch hold of it and lift it out of a pit on the sabbath, if it falls in? And how much more is a man worth 12 than a sheep? Thus it is right to do 13 a kindness on the sabbath." Then 14 he said to the man, "Stretch out your hand." He stretched it out, and it was quite restored, as sound as the other. So the Pharisees with- 14 drew and plotted against him, to destroy him; but as Jesus knew of 15 it he retired from the spot. Many followed him, and he healed them



## S. MATTHEW XII

16 all, charging them strictly not to  
17 make him known—it was for the  
fulfilment of what had been said by  
the prophet Isaiah,

18 *Here is my servant whom I have  
selected,  
my Beloved in whom my soul  
delights ;*

*I will invest him with my Spirit,  
and he will proclaim religion to  
the Gentiles.*

19 *He will not wrangle or shout,  
no one will hear his voice in the  
streets.*

20 *He will not break the bruised  
reed,  
he will not put out the smouldering  
flax,*

*till he carries religion to victory :*

21 *and the Gentiles will hope in his  
name.*

22 Then a blind and dumb demoniac  
was brought to him, and he healed  
him, so that the dumb man spoke

23 and saw. And all the crowds were  
amazed; they said, "Can this be

24 the Son of David?" But when  
the Pharisees heard of it they said,

"This fellow only casts out dae-  
mons by Beelzebul the prince of  
25 demons." As Jesus knew what  
they were thinking, he said to  
them,

"Any realm divided against itself  
comes to ruin,  
any city or house divided  
against itself will never  
stand;

26 and if Satan casts out Satan,  
he is divided against him-  
self;

how then can his realm  
stand?

27 Besides, if I cast out demons  
by Beelzebul,

by whom do your sons cast  
them out?

Thus they will be your judges.

But if I cast out daemons by 28  
the Spirit of God,  
then the Reign of God has  
reached you already.

Why, how can anyone enter the 29  
strong man's house and plunder his  
goods, unless he first of all binds the  
strong man? Then he can plunder  
his house.

He who is not with me is against 30  
me,

and he who does not gather  
with me scatters.

I tell you therefore, men will be 31  
forgiven any sin and blas-  
phemy,

but they will not be forgiven  
for blaspheming the Spirit.

Whoever says a word against the 32  
Son of man will be forgiven,

but whoever speaks against  
the holy Spirit will never  
be forgiven,

neither in this world nor in  
the world to come.

Either make the tree good and 33-  
its fruit good,

or make the tree rotten and  
its fruit rotten;

for the tree is known by its  
fruit.

You brood of vipers, how can 34  
you speak good when you  
are evil?

For the mouth utters what the  
heart is full of.

The good man brings good out of 35  
his good store,

and the evil man brings evil  
out of his store of evil.

I tell you, men will have to 36  
account on the day of judgment  
for every light word they utter;

for by your words you will be 37  
acquitted,

and by your words you will be  
condemned."

Then some of the scribes and 38

Pharisees said to him, "Teacher, we would like to have some  
39 Sign from you." He replied to them,

"It is an evil and disloyal generation that craves a Sign,

but no Sign will be given to it except the Sign of the prophet Jonah;

40 for as *Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the whale,*

so the Son of man will be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Ninive will rise at the judgment with this generation and condemn it;

for when Jonah preached they did repent, and here is One greater than Jonah.

42 The queen of the South will rise at the judgment with this generation and condemn it;

for she came from the ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon, and here is One greater than Solomon.

43 When an unclean spirit leaves a man, it roams through dry places in search of refreshment and finds  
44 none. Then it says, 'I will go back to the house I left,' and when it comes it finds the house vacant,  
45 clean, and all in order. Then it goes off to fetch seven other spirits worse than itself; they go in and dwell there, and the last state of that man is worse than the first. This is how it will be with the present evil generation."

46 He was still speaking to the crowds when his mother and brothers came and stood out-

side; they wanted to speak to him.\* But he replied to the man 48 who told him this, "Who is my mother? and who are my brothers?" Stretching out his 49 hand towards his disciples he said, "Here are my mother and my brothers! Whoever does the will 50 of my Father in heaven, that is my brother and sister and mother."

CHAP.

THAT same day Jesus went out 13 of the house and seated himself by the seaside; but, as great 2 crowds gathered to him, he entered a boat and sat down, while all the crowd stood on the beach. He 3 spoke at some length to them in parables, saying: "A sower went out to sow, and as he sowed some 4 seeds fell on the road and the birds came and ate them up. Some other 5 seeds fell on stony soil where they had not much earth, and shot up at once because they had no depth of soil; but when the sun rose they 6 got scorched and withered away because they had no root. Some 7 other seeds fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up and choked them. Some other seeds fell on 8 good soil and bore a crop, some a hundredfold, some sixty, and some thirtyfold. He who has an ear, 9 let him listen to this."

Then the disciples came up and 10 said to him, "Why do you speak in parables?" He replied, "Be- 11 cause it is granted you to under-

\* Ver. 47, which is rightly omitted by N\*BL, the Old Latin and Syriac versions, etc., has been interpolated by an early copyist who wished to prepare for ver. 48 by using the material of Mark iii. 32. It runs thus: "And a man said to him, 'Here are your mother and brothers standing outside and wanting to speak to you.'"

stand the open secrets of the Realm of heaven, but it is not granted to these people.

12 For he who has, to him shall more be given and richly given, but whoever has not, from him shall be taken even what he has.

13 This is why I speak to them in parables, because for all their seeing they do not see and for all their hearing they do not hear

14 or understand. In their case the prophecy of Isaiah is being fulfilled :

*You will hear and hear but never understand,*

*you will see and see but never perceive.*

15 For the heart of this people is obtuse,

*their ears are heavy of hearing, their eyes they have closed,*

*lest they see with their eyes and hear with their ears,*

*lest they understand with their heart and turn again, and I cure them.*

16 But blessed are your eyes for they see,

and your ears, for they hear !

17 I tell you truly, many prophets and good men have longed to see what you see,

but they have not seen it ;

and to hear what you hear,

but they have not heard it.

18 Now, listen to the parable of the sower. When anyone hears the word of the Realm and does not understand it, the evil one comes and snatches away what has been sown in his heart ; that is the man

20 who is sown 'on the road.' As for him who is sown 'on stony soil,' that is the man who hears the word and accepts it at once with enthusiasm ;

21 he has no root in himself, he does not last, but when the word brings

trouble or persecution he is at once repelled. As for him who is 22 sown 'among thorns,' that is the man who listens to the word, but the worry of the world and the delight of being rich choke the word ; so it proves unfruitful. As for him 23 who is sown 'on good soil,' that is the man who hears the word and understands it ; he bears fruit, producing now a hundredfold, now sixty, and now thirtyfold."

He put another parable before 24 them. "The Realm of heaven," he said, "is like a man who sowed good seed in his field, but while 25 men slept his enemy came and re-sowed weeds among the wheat and then went away. When the blade 26 sprouted and formed the kernel, then the weeds appeared as well. So the servants of the owner went 27 to him and said, 'Did you not sow good seed in your field, sir? How then does it contain weeds?' He 28 said to them, 'An enemy has done this.' The servants said to him, 'Then would you like us to go and gather them?' 'No,' he said, 'for 29 you might root up the wheat when you were gathering the weeds. Let 30 them both grow side by side till harvest; and at harvest-time I will tell the reapers to gather the weeds first and tie them in bundles to be burnt, but to collect the wheat in my granary.'"

He put another parable before 31 them. "The Realm of heaven," he said, "is like a grain of mustard-seed which a man takes and sows in his field. It is less than any seed 32 on earth, but when it grows up it is larger than any plant, it becomes a tree, so large that *the wild birds* come and *roost in its branches.*"

He told them another parable. 33 "The Realm of heaven," he said,



## S. MATTHEW XIV

"is like dough which a woman took and buried in three pecks of flour, till all of it was leavened."

34 Jesus said all this to the crowds in parables; he never spoke to them except in a parable—to fulfil what had been said by the prophet,

*I will open my mouth in parables,  
I will speak out what has been hidden since the foundation of the world.*

36 Then he left the crowds and went indoors. And his disciples came up to him saying, "Explain to us the parable of the weeds in the field."

37 So he replied, "He who sows the good seed is the Son of man; the field is the world; the good seed means the sons of the Realm; the weeds

39 are the sons of the evil one; the enemy who sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world, and the reapers are angels. Well then, just as the weeds are gathered and burnt in the fire, so will it be

41 at the end of the world; the Son of man will despatch his angels, and they will gather out of his Realm all who are hindrances and who

42 practise iniquity, and throw them into the furnace of fire; there men will wail and gnash their teeth.

43 Then the just will shine like the sun in the Realm of their Father. He who has an ear, let him listen to this.

44 The Realm of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field; the man who finds it hides it and in his delight goes and sells all he possesses and buys that field.

45 Again, the Realm of heaven is like a trader in search of fine pearls; 46 when he finds a single pearl of high price, he is off to sell all he possesses and buy it.

47 Again, the Realm of heaven is

like a net which was thrown into the sea and collected fish of every sort. When it was full, they dragged it 48 to the beach and sitting down they gathered the good fish into vessels but flung away the bad. So will it 49 be at the end of the world. The angels will go out and separate the evil from among the just and 50 fling them into the furnace of fire; there men will wail and gnash their teeth.

Have you understood all this?" 51 They said to him, "Yes." So he 52 said to them, "Well then, every scribe who has become a disciple of the Realm of heaven is like a householder who produces what is new and what is old from his stores."

Now when Jesus had finished 53 these parables he set out from there, and went to his native place, where 54 he taught the people in the synagogue till they were astounded. They said, "Where did he get this wisdom and these miraculous powers? Is this not the son of the 55 joiner? Is not his mother called Mary, and his brothers James and Joseph and Simon and Judas? Are 56 not his sisters settled here among us? Then where has he got all this?" So they were repelled by 57 him. But Jesus said to them, "A prophet never goes without honour except in his native place and in his home." There he could 58 not do many miracles owing to their lack of faith.

CHAP.

At that time Herod the tetrarch 14 heard about the fame of Jesus. And he said to his servants, "This 2 is John the Baptist; he has risen from the dead. That is why miraculous powers are working through him."

## S. MATTHEW XIV

3 For Herod had then arrested John and bound him and put him in prison on account of Herodias the wife of his brother Philip, 4 since John had told him, "You 5 have no right to her." He was anxious to kill him but he was afraid of the people, for they held 6 John to be a prophet. However, on Herod's birthday, the daughter of Herodias danced in public to the 7 delight of Herod; whereupon he promised with an oath to give her 8 whatever she wanted. And she, at the instigation of her mother, said, "Give me John the Baptist's head 9 this moment on a dish." The king was sorry, but for the sake of his oath and his guests he ordered it to 10 be given her; he sent and had John 11 beheaded in the prison, his head was brought on a dish and given to the girl, and she took it to her mother. 12 His disciples came and removed the corpse and buried him; then they went and reported it to Jesus. 13 When Jesus heard it he withdrew by boat to a desert place in private; but the crowds heard of it and fol- 14 lowed him on foot from the towns. So when he disembarked he saw a large crowd, and out of pity for them he 15 healed their sick folk. When evening fell, the disciples came up to him and said, "It is a desert place and the day is now gone; send off the crowds to buy food for them- 16 selves in the villages." Jesus said to them, "They do not need to go away; give them some food 17 yourselves." They said, "We have only five loaves with us and two 18 fish." He said, "Bring them here 19 to me." Then he ordered the crowds to recline on the grass, and after taking the five loaves and the two fish he looked up to heaven, blessed them, and after breaking

the loaves handed them to the disciples, and the disciples handed them to the crowds. They all ate 20 and had enough; besides, they picked up the fragments left over and filled twelve baskets with them. The men who ate numbered 21 about five thousand, apart from the women and children.

Then he made the disciples em- 22 bark in the boat and cross before him to the other side, while he dismissed the crowds; after he had 23 dismissed the crowds he went up the hill by himself to pray. When evening came he was there alone, but the boat was now in the middle 24 of the sea, buffeted by the waves (for the wind was against them). In 25 the fourth watch of the night he went to them, walking on the sea, but when the disciples saw him 26 walking on the sea they were terrified; "It is a ghost," they said and shrieked for fear. Then Jesus spoke 27 to them at once; "Courage," he said, "it is I, have no fear." Peter 28 answered him, "Lord, if it is really you, order me to come to you on the water." He said, "Come." 29 Then Peter got out of the boat and walked over the water on his way to Jesus; but when he saw the 30 strength of the wind he was afraid and began to sink. "Lord," he shouted, "save me." Jesus at 31 once stretched his hand out and caught him, saying, "How little you trust me! Why did you doubt?" When they got into the 32 boat the wind dropped, and the men 33 in the boat worshipped him, saying, "You are certainly God's Son."

On crossing over they came to 34 land at Gennesaret. The men of 35 that place recognized him and sent all over the surrounding country, bringing him all who were ill and



## S. MATTHEW XV

36 begging him to let them touch the mere tassel of his robe—and all who touched it got perfectly well.

CHAP.

15 THEN Pharisees and scribes from Jerusalem came to Jesus, saying,  
2 "Why do your disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? They do not wash their hands when they 3 take their food." He replied, "And why do you transgress the command of God with your tra- 4 ditions? God enjoined, *Honour your father and mother*, and, *He who curses his father or mother is to 5 suffer death*. But you say, whoever tells his father or mother, 'This money might have been at your service but it is dedicated to 6 God,' need not honour his father or mother. So you have repealed the law of God to suit your own 7 tradition. You hypocrites! Isaiah made a grand prophecy about you when he said,

8 *This people honours me with their lips,*  
*but their heart is far away from me:*  
9 *vain is their worship of me,*  
*for the doctrines they teach are but human precepts."*

10 Then he called the crowd and said to them, "Listen, understand this:

11 it is not what enters a man's mouth that defiles him, what defiles a man is what comes out of his mouth."

12 Then the disciples came up and said to him, "Do you know that the Pharisees have taken offence 13 at what they hear you say?" He replied, "Any plant that my heavenly Father has not planted 14 will be rooted up. Let them alone; they are blind guides of the blind,

and if one blind man leads another, both of them will fall into a pit." Peter answered, "Explain 15 this parable to us at anyrate." He said, "And are you totally 16 ignorant? Do you not see how all 17 that enters the mouth passes into the belly and is then thrown out into the drain, while what comes 18 out of the mouth comes from the heart—and that is what defiles a man. For out of the heart come 19 evil designs, murder, adultery, sexual vice, stealing, false witness, and slander. That is what defiles 20 a man; a man is not defiled by eating with hands unwashed!"

Going away from there Jesus 21 withdrew to the district of Tyre and Sidon. And a woman of Canaan 22 came out of these parts and wailed, "Have pity on me, Lord, O Son of David! My daughter is cruelly possessed by a daemon." But he 23 made no answer to her. Then his disciples came up and pressed him, saying, "Send her away, she is wailing behind us." He replied, "It 24 was only to the lost sheep of the house of Israel that I was sent." But she came and knelt before him, 25 saying, "Lord, do help me." He 26 replied, "It is not fair to take the children's bread and throw it to the dogs." "No, sir," she said, 27 "but even the dogs eat the crumbs that fall from their master's table." 28 At that Jesus replied, "O woman, you have great faith; your prayer is granted as you wish." And from that hour her daughter was cured.

Then Jesus removed from that 29 country and went along the sea of Galilee; he went up the hillside and sat there. And large crowds came to him bringing the lame, the blind, the dumb, the maimed, and 30 many others; they laid them at



31 his feet, and he healed them. This made the crowd wonder, to see dumb people speaking,\* the lame walking, and the blind seeing.

32 Then Jesus called his disciples and said, "I am sorry for the crowd; they have been three days with me now, and they have nothing to eat. I will not send them away starving, in case they faint on the road."

33 The disciples said to him, "Where are we to get loaves enough in a desert to satisfy such a crowd?"

34 Jesus said to them, "How many loaves have you got?" They said,

35 "Seven, and some little fish." So he ordered the crowd to recline on the ground. He took the seven loaves and the fish and after giving thanks he broke them and gave them to the disciples, and the disciples to the crowds. So the people all ate and were satisfied, and they picked up the fragments left over and filled seven large baskets with them.

38 The men who ate numbered four thousand, apart from the children

39 and the women. Then he sent the crowd away, got into the boat and went to the territory of Magadan.

CHAP.

16 Now the Pharisees and Sadducees came up and, in order to tempt him, asked him to show them a Sign from heaven. He replied,

4 "It is an evil and disloyal generation that craves a Sign, and no Sign shall be given to it except the Sign of Jonah."†

Then he left them and went away.

\* Leaving out the phrase *κυλλοὺς ὀγιεῖς* with S, the Latin version, the Old Syriac, Origen, etc. Its insertion for harmonistic reasons is more likely than its omission.

† Three uncials (C D W) of the fifth century and several versions, including the Latin and the Syriac (Vulgate), to-

When the disciples reached the opposite side, they found they had forgotten to bring any bread. Jesus said to them, "See and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees." They argued among themselves, "But we have not brought any bread!" When Jesus noted this he said, "How little trust you have in me! Why all this talk, because you have brought no bread? Do you not understand even yet? Do you not remember the five loaves of the five thousand and how many baskets you took up? And the seven loaves of the four thousand and how many large baskets you took up? Why do you not see that I was not speaking to you about bread? No, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees." Then they realized that what he told them to beware of was not leaven‡ but the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

Now when Jesus came to the district of Caesarea Philippi he asked his disciples, "Who do people say the Son of man is?" They told him, "Some say John the Baptist, others Elijah, others Jeremiah or one of the prophets." He said to them, "And who do you

gether with the Diatessaron, insert at the beginning of this answer the following :

"When evening comes, you say, 'It will be fine,' for the sky is red; in the morning you say, 'It will be stormy to-day,' for the sky is red and cloudy. You know how to distinguish the look of the sky, but you cannot read the signs of the times."

The majority of the uncials, with the Old Syriac and Origen, rightly omit the passage as irrelevant to the original text.

‡ Omitting *τῶν ἔρῳαν* after *ζύμης* with strong support from the Old Latin and Syriac versions.

## S. MATTHEW XVII

16 say I am?" So Simon Peter replied, "You are the Christ, the Son  
17 of the living God." Jesus answered him, "You are a blessed man, Simon Bar-jona, for it was my Father in heaven, not flesh and blood, that revealed this to you.  
18 Now I tell you, Peter is your name\* and on this rock I will build my church; the powers of Hades shall  
19 not succeed against it. I will give you the keys of the Realm of heaven;

whatever you prohibit on earth will be prohibited in heaven, and whatever you permit on earth will be permitted in heaven."

20 Then he forbade the disciples to tell anyone he was the Christ.

21 From that time Jesus began to show his disciples that he had to leave for Jerusalem and endure great suffering at the hands of the elders and high priests and scribes, and be killed and raised on the

22 third day. Peter took him and began to reprove him for it; "God forbid, Lord," he said, "This must

23 not be." But he turned and said to Peter, "Get behind me, you Satan! You are a hindrance to me! Your outlook is not God's

24 but man's." Then Jesus said to his disciples, "If anyone wishes to come after me, let him deny himself, take up his cross, and so follow me;

25 for whoever wants to save his life will lose it, and whoever loses his life for my sake will find it.

26 What profit will it be if a man gains

\* English fails to bring out the play on the Greek word for "rock." The French version reproduces it: "Et moi je te dis aussi que tu es le Pierre, et sur cette pierre je bâtirai mon église."

the whole world and forfeits his own soul? What will a man offer as an equivalent for his soul? For 27 the Son of man is coming in the glory of his Father with his angels, and then he will reward everyone for what he has done. I tell you 28 truly, there are some of those standing here who will not taste death till they see the Son of man coming himself to reign."

CHAP.

Six days afterwards Jesus took 17 Peter, James and his brother John, and led them up a high hill by themselves; in their presence he was 2 transfigured, his face shone like the sun, and his clothes turned white as light. There appeared to them 3 Moses and Elijah, who conversed with Jesus. So Peter addressed 4 Jesus and said, "Lord, it is a good thing we are here; if you like, I will put up three tents here, one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah." He was still speaking 5 when a bright cloud overshadowed them, and from the cloud a voice said, "This is my Son, the Beloved, in him is my delight: listen to him."

When the disciples heard the voice 6 they fell on their faces in terror; but Jesus came forward and touched 7 them, saying, "Rise, have no fear." And on raising their eyes they saw 8 no one except Jesus all alone. As 9 they went down the hill Jesus ordered them, "Tell this vision to nobody until the Son of man is raised from the dead." The disciples in- 10 quired of him, "Then why do the scribes say that Elijah has to come first?" He replied, "Elijah to 11 come and restore all things? Nay, 12 I tell you Elijah has already come, but they have not recognized him—



## S. MATTHEW XVIII

- they have worked their will on him. And the Son of man will suffer at their hands in the same way."
- 13 Then the disciples realized he was speaking to them about John the Baptist.
- 14 When they reached the crowd, a man came up and knelt to him.
- 15 "Ah, sir," he said, "have pity on my son; he is an epileptic and he suffers cruelly, he often falls into the fire and often into the water.
- 16 I brought him to your disciples, but
- 17 they could not heal him." Jesus answered, "O faithless and perverse generation, how long must I still be with you? How long have I to bear with you? Bring him here
- 18 to me." So Jesus checked the daemon and it came out of him, and from that hour the boy was
- 19 healed. Then the disciples came to Jesus in private and said, "Why
- 20 could we not cast it out?" He said to them, "Because you have so little faith. I tell you truly, if you had faith the size of a grain of mustard-seed, you could say to this hill, 'Move from here to there,' and remove it would; nothing would be impossible for you."
- 22 When his adherents mustered in Galilee Jesus told them, "The Son of man is to be betrayed into the
- 23 hands of men, they will kill him, but on the third day he will be raised." They were greatly distressed at this.
- 24 When they reached Capharnahum, the collectors of the temple-tax came and asked Peter, "Does your teacher not pay the temple-tax?"
- 25 He said, "Yes." But when he went indoors Jesus spoke first; "Tell me, Simon," he said, "from whom do earthly kings collect customs or taxes? Is it from their own people
- 26 or from aliens?" "From aliens,"

he said. Then Jesus said to him, "So their own people are exempt. However, not to give any offence to 27 them, go to the sea, throw a hook in, and take the first fish you bring up. Open its mouth and you will find a five-shilling piece; take that and give it to them for me and for yourself."

CHAP.

At that hour the disciples came 18 and asked Jesus, "Who is greatest in the Realm of heaven?" So he 2 called a child, set it among them, and said, "I tell you truly, unless 3 you turn and become like children, you will never get into the Realm of heaven at all. Whoever humbles 4 himself like this child, he is the greatest in the Realm of heaven; and whoever receives a little child 5 like this for my sake, receives me. But whoever is a hindrance to one 6 of these little ones who believe in me, better for him to have a great mill-stone hung round his neck and be sunk in the deep sea. Woe to the 7 world for hindrances! Hindrances have to come, but—woe to the man by whom the hindrance does come!

If your hand or your foot is a 8 hindrance to you, cut it off and throw it away; better be maimed or crippled and get into Life, than keep both feet or hands and be thrown into the everlasting fire.

If your eye is a hindrance to you, 9 tear it out and throw it away; better get into Life with one eye than keep your two eyes and be thrown into the fire of Gehenna.

See that you do not despise one 10



## S. MATTHEW XIX

- of these little ones; for I tell you, their angels in heaven always look on the face of my Father in heaven.
- 12 Tell me, if a man has a hundred sheep and one of them strays, will he not leave the ninety-nine sheep on the hills and go in search of the one that has strayed? And if he happens to find it, I tell you he rejoices over it more than over the ninety-nine that never went astray.
- 14 So it is not the will of your Father in heaven that a single one of these little ones should be lost.
- 15 If your brother sins [against you], go and reprove him, as between you and him alone. If he listens to you, then you have won your brother over; but if he will not listen, take one or two others along with you, so that *every case may be decided on the evidence of two or of three witnesses*. If he refuses to listen to them, tell the church; and if he refuses to listen to the church, treat him as a pagan or a taxgatherer. I tell you truly, whatever you prohibit on earth will be prohibited in heaven, and whatever you permit on earth will be permitted in heaven.
- 19 I tell you another thing: if two of you agree on earth about anything you pray for, it will be done for you by my Father in heaven. For where two or three have gathered in my name, I am there among them."
- 21 Then Peter came up and said to him, "Lord, how often is my brother to sin against me and be forgiven? Up to seven times?" Jesus said to him, "Seven times? I say, seventy times seven! That is why the Realm of heaven may be compared to a king who resolved to settle accounts with his servants. When he began the settlement, a debtor was brought in who owed him three million pounds; as he was unable to pay, his master ordered him to be sold, along with his wife and children and all he had, in payment of the sum. So the servant fell down and prayed him, 'Have patience with me, and I will pay you it all.' And out of pity for that servant his master released him and discharged his debt. But as that servant went away, he met one of his fellow-servants who owed him twenty pounds, and seizing him by the throat he said, 'Pay your debt!' So his fellow-servant fell down and implored him, saying, 'Have patience with me, and I will pay you.' But he refused; he went and had him thrown into prison, till he should pay the debt. Now when his fellow-servants saw what had happened they were greatly distressed, and they went and explained to their master all that had happened. Then his master summoned him and said, 'You scoundrel of a servant! I discharged all that debt for you, because you implored me. Ought you not to have had mercy on your fellow-servant, as I had on you?' And in hot anger his master handed him over to the torturers, till he should pay him all the debt. My Father will do the same to you unless you each forgive your brother from the heart."

CHAP.

WHEN Jesus finished saying this he moved from Galilee and went to the territory of Judaea that lies across the Jordan. Large crowds followed him and he healed them there.

Then the Pharisees came up to tempt him. They asked, "Is it

## S. MATTHEW XIX

right to divorce one's wife for any  
4 reason?" He replied, "Have you  
never read that He who *created them*  
*male and female* from the beginning  
5 said,

*Hence a man shall leave his father  
and mother,  
and cleave to his wife,  
and the pair shall be one flesh?*

6 So they are no longer two, but one  
flesh. What God has joined, then,  
7 man must not separate." They said  
to him, "Then why did Moses lay it  
down that we were to *divorce by*  
8 *giving a separation-notice?*" He said  
to them, "Moses permitted you to  
divorce your wives, on account of  
the hardness of your hearts, but it  
was not so from the beginning.  
9 I tell you, whoever divorces his wife  
except for unchastity and marries  
another woman, commits adultery;  
and he who marries a divorced  
10 woman commits adultery." The  
disciples said to him, "If that  
is a man's position with his wife,  
11 there is no good in marrying." He  
said to them, "True, but this truth  
is not practicable for everyone, it is  
only for those who have the gift.

12 There are eunuchs who have been  
eunuchs from their birth,  
there are eunuchs who have been  
made eunuchs by men,  
and there are eunuchs who have  
made themselves eunuchs for  
the sake of the Realm of  
heaven.

Let anyone practice it for whom  
it is practicable."

13 Then children were brought to  
him that he might lay his hands  
on them and pray over them. The  
14 disciples checked the people, but  
Jesus said to them, "Let the  
children alone, do not stop them  
from coming to me: the Realm of  
heaven belongs to such as these."

Then he laid his hands on them and 15  
went upon his way.

Up came a man and said to him, 16  
"Teacher, what good deed must  
I do to gain life eternal?" He 17  
said to him, "Why do you ask me  
about what is good? One alone  
is good. But if you want to get  
into Life, keep the commands."  
"Which?" he said. Jesus an- 18  
swered, "The commands, *you shall*  
*not kill, you shall not commit adul-*  
*tery, you shall not steal, you shall*  
*not bear false witness, honour your* 19  
*father and mother, and you must*  
*love your neighbour as yourself."*  
The young man said, "I have 20  
observed all these. What more is  
wanting?" Jesus said to him, "If 21  
you want to be perfect, go and  
sell your property, give the  
money to the poor and you shall  
have treasure in heaven; then come  
and follow me." When the young 22  
man heard that, he went sadly  
away, for he had great possessions.  
And Jesus said to his disciples, "I 23  
tell you truly, it will be difficult  
for a rich man to get into the  
Realm of heaven. I tell you again, 24  
it is easier for a camel to get  
through a needle's eye than for  
a rich man to get into the Realm  
of God." When the disciples 25  
heard this they were utterly  
astounded; they said, "Who then  
can possibly be saved?" Jesus 26  
looked at them and said, "This is  
impossible for men, but anything  
is possible for God." Then Peter 27  
replied, "Well, we have left our all  
and followed you. Now what are  
we to get?" Jesus said to them, 28  
"I tell you truly, in the new  
world, when the Son of man shall  
sit on the throne of his glory, you  
who have followed me shall also sit  
on twelve thrones to govern the



## S. MATTHEW XX

29 twelve tribes of Israel. Everyone who has left brothers or sisters or father or mother or wife or children or lands or houses for my name's sake will get a hundred times as much and inherit life eternal.

30 Many who are first shall be last, and many who are last shall be first.

20 For the Realm of heaven is like a householder who went out early in the morning to hire labourers for his vineyard; and after agreeing with the labourers to pay them a shilling a day he sent them into his vineyard. Then, on going out at nine o'clock he noticed some other labourers standing in the marketplace doing nothing; to them he said, 'You go into the vineyard too, and I will give you whatever wage is fair.' So they went in. Going out again at twelve o'clock and at three o'clock, he did the same thing. And when he went out at five o'clock he came upon some others who were standing; he said to them, 'Why have you stood doing nothing all the day?' 'Because nobody hired us,' they said. He told them, 'You go into the vineyard too.'

8 Now when evening came the master of the vineyard said to his bailiff, 'Summon the labourers and pay them their wages, beginning with the last and going on to the first.\*'

9 When those who had been hired about five o'clock came, they got a shilling each. So when the first labourers came up, they supposed they would get more; but they too got each their shilling. And on getting it they grumbled at the householder. 'These last,' they said, 'have only worked a single hour, and yet you have ranked

them equal to us who have borne the brunt of the day's work and the heat!' Then he replied to one 13 of them, 'My man, I am not wronging you. Did you not agree with me for a shilling? Take what 14 belongs to you and be off. I choose to give this last man the same as you. Can I not do as I please 15 with what belongs to me? Have you a grudge because I am generous?' So shall the last be 16 first and the first last."

Now as Jesus was about to go 17 up to Jerusalem he took the twelve aside by themselves and said to them as they were on the road, "We are going up to Jerusalem, 18 and the Son of man will be betrayed to the high priests and scribes; they will sentence him to death and 19 hand him over to the Gentiles to be mocked and scourged and crucified; then on the third day he will be raised."

Then the mother of the sons of 20 Zebedaeus came up to him with her sons, praying him for a favour. He said to her, "What do you 21 want?" She said, "Give orders that my two sons are to sit at your right hand and at your left in your Realm." Jesus replied, 22 "You do not know what you are asking. Can you drink the cup I am going to drink?" They said to him, "We can." "You shall 23 drink my cup," said Jesus, "but it is not for me to grant seats at my right hand and at my left; these belong to the men for whom they have been destined by my Father." When the ten heard of 24 this, they were angry at the two brothers, but Jesus called them 25 and said,

"You know the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them,

\* Note the connexion between this parable (ver. 16) and xix. 30.



## S. MATTHEW XXI

and their great men overbear them :

26 not so with you.

Whoever wants to be great among you must be your servant,

27 and whoever wants to be first among you must be your slave ;

28 just as the Son of man has not come to be served but to serve,

and to give his life as a ransom for many."

29 As they were leaving Jericho

30 a crowd followed him, and when two blind men who were sitting beside the road heard Jesus was passing, they shouted, "O Lord,

Son of David, have pity on us !"

31 The crowd checked them and told them to be quiet, but they shouted all the louder, "O Lord, Son of

32 David, have pity on us !" So Jesus stopped and called them.

He said, "What do you want me

33 to do for you?" "Lord," they said, "we want our eyes opened."

34 Then Jesus in pity touched their eyes, and they regained their sight at once and followed him.

CHAP.

21 WHEN they came near Jerusalem and had reached Bethphage at the Hill of Olives, then Jesus des-

2 patched two disciples, saying to them, "Go to the village in front

of you and you will at once find an ass tethered with a colt alongside

of her; untether them and bring

3 them to me. If anyone says anything to you, you will say that the

Lord needs them; then he will at

4 once let them go." This took place for the fulfilment of what had been

spoken by the prophet,

5 *Tell the daughter of Sion,*

*'Here is your king coming to you,*

*He is gentle and mounted on an ass,  
And on a colt the foal of a beast  
of burden.'*

So the disciples went and did as 6  
Jesus told them; they brought the 7

ass and the colt and put their

clothes on them. Jesus seated 8  
himself on them, and the greater

part of the crowd spread their

clothes on the road, while others 9  
cut branches from the trees and

strewed them on the road. And 10  
the crowds who went in front of

him and who followed behind 11  
shouted,

"*Hosanna to the Son of David !  
Blessed be he who comes in the  
Lord's name !*

*Hosanna in high heaven !*"

When he entered Jerusalem the 12  
whole city was in excitement over

him. "Who is this?" they said, 13  
and the crowds replied, "This is

the prophet Jesus from Nazaret 14  
in Galilee!" Then Jesus went

15 into the temple of God and drove 16  
out all who were buying and sell-

ing inside the temple; he upset 17  
the tables of the money-changers

and the stalls of those who sold 18  
doves, and told them, "It is written,

19 *My house shall be called a house of  
prayer, but you make it a den of  
robbers.'*"

Blind and lame people came up 20  
to him in the temple and he healed

them. But when the high priests 21  
and scribes saw his wonderful deeds

and saw the children who shouted 22  
in the temple, "Hosanna to the

Son of David!" they were indig- 23  
nant; they said to him, "Do you

24 hear what they are saying?" 25  
"Yes," said Jesus, "have you

never read *Thou hast brought praise  
to perfection from the mouth of babes  
and sucklings?*" Then he left 26  
them and went outside the city

to Bethany, where he spent the night.

18 In the morning as he came back  
 19 to the city he felt hungry, and noticing a fig tree by the roadside he went up to it, but found nothing on it except leaves. He said to it, "May no fruit ever come from you after this!" And instantly the  
 20 fig tree withered up. When the disciples saw this they marvelled. "How did the fig tree wither up in  
 21 an instant?" they said. Jesus answered, "I tell you truly, if you have faith, if you have no doubt, you will not only do what has been done to the fig tree but even if you say to this hill, 'Take and throw yourself into the sea,' it will be  
 22 done. All that ever you ask in prayer you shall have, if you believe."

23 When he entered the temple, the high priests and elders of the people came up to him as he was teaching, and said, "What authority have you for acting in this way? Who gave you this  
 24 authority?" Jesus replied, "Well, I will ask you a question, and if you answer me, then I will tell you what authority I have for  
 25 acting as I do. Where did the baptism of John come from? From heaven or from men?" Now they argued to themselves, "If we say, 'From heaven,' he will say to us, 'Then why did  
 26 you not believe him?' And if we say, 'From men,' we are afraid of the crowd, for they all hold that John was a prophet."  
 27 So they answered Jesus, "We do not know." He said to them, "No more will I tell you what authority I have for acting as I do.  
 28 Tell me what you think. A man had two sons. He went to the

first and said, 'Son, go and work in the vineyard to-day'; he replied, 29 'I will go, sir,' but he did not go. The man went to the second and 30 said the same to him; he replied, 'I will not,' but afterwards he changed his mind and did go. Which of the two did the will of 31 the father?" They said, "The last." Jesus said to them, "I tell you truly, the taxgatherers and harlots are going into the Realm of God before you. For 32 John showed you the way to be good and you would not believe him; the taxgatherers and harlots believed him, and even though you saw that, you would not change your mind afterwards and believe him.

Listen to another parable. There 33 was a householder who *planted a vineyard, put a fence round it, dug a wine-vat inside it, and built a watchtower*: then he leased it to vinedressers and went abroad. When the fruit-season was near, 34 he sent his servants to the vinedressers to collect his fruit; but 35 the vinedressers took his servants and flogged one, killed another, and stoned a third. Once more he 36 sent some other servants, more than he had sent at first, and they did the same to them. Afterwards 37 he sent them his son; 'They will respect my son,' he said. But 38 when the vinedressers saw his son they said to themselves, 'Here is the heir; come on, let us kill him and seize his inheritance!' So 39 they took and threw him outside the vineyard and killed him. Now, when the owner of the 40 vineyard comes, what will he do to these vinedressers?" They 41 replied, "He will utterly destroy the wretches and lease the vine-



yard to other vinedressers who will give him the fruits in their season."

42 Jesus said to them, "Have you never read in the scriptures,

*The stone that the builders rejected  
is the chief stone now of the  
corner :*

*this is the doing of the Lord,  
and a wonder to our eyes ?*

43 I tell you therefore that the Realm of God will be taken from you and given to a nation that bears the fruits of the Realm.

44 [Everyone who falls on this stone will be shattered,  
and whoever it falls upon will be crushed.]"

45 When the high priests and Pharisees heard these parables they knew

46 he was speaking about them; they tried to get hold of him, but they were afraid of the crowds, as the crowds held him to be a prophet.

CHAP.

22 THEN Jesus again addressed them 2 in parables. "The Realm of

heaven," he said, "may be compared to a king who gave a marriage-banquet in honour of his son.

3 He sent his servants to summon the invited guests to the feast,

4 but they would not come. Once more he sent some other servants, saying, 'Tell the invited guests, here is my supper all prepared, my oxen and fat cattle are killed, everything is ready; come to the

5 marriage-banquet.' But they paid no attention and went off, one to his estate, another to his business,

6 while the rest seized his servants and ill-treated them and killed 7 them. The king was enraged; he sent his troops and destroyed

those murderers and burned up 8 their city. Then he said to his servants, 'The marriage-banquet

is all ready, but the invited guests did not deserve it. So go to the 9 byeways and invite anyone you meet to the marriage-banquet.'

And those servants went out on the 10 roads and gathered all they met, bad and good alike. Thus the marriage-banquet was supplied with guests. Now when the king came 11 in to view his guests, he saw a man there who was not dressed in a wedding-robe. So he said to him, 12 'My man, how did you get in here without a wedding-robe?' The man was speechless. Then said 13 the king to his servants, 'Take him hand and foot, and throw him outside, out into the darkness; there men will wail and gnash their teeth. For many are invited but 14 few are chosen.'

Then the Pharisees went and 15 plotted to trap him in talk. They 16 sent him their disciples with the Herodians, who said, "Teacher, we know you are sincere and that you teach the Way of God honestly and fearlessly; you do not court human favour. Tell us, then, 17 what you think about this. Is it right to pay taxes to Caesar or not?" But Jesus detected their 18 malice. He said, "Why do you tempt me, you hypocrites? Show 19 me the coin for taxes." So they brought him a shilling. Then Jesus 20 said to them, "Whose likeness, whose inscription is this?" "Caesar's," they said. Then he 21 told them, "Give Caesar what belongs to Caesar, give God what belongs to God." When 22 they heard that, they marvelled; then they left him and went away.

That same day some Sadducees 23 came up to him, men who hold there is no resurrection. They



24 put this question to him: "Teacher, Moses said that *if anyone dies without children, his brother is to espouse his wife and raise offspring for his brother*. Now there were seven brothers in our number. The first married and died; as he had no children he left his wife to his brother. The same happened with the second and the third, down to the seventh. After them all, the 27 woman died. Now at the resurrection whose wife will she be? They 29 all had her." Jesus answered them, "You go wrong because you understand neither the scriptures nor the power of God. At the resurrection people neither marry nor are married, they are like the angels of God in heaven. 31 And as for the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what was 32 said to you by God, *I am the God of Abraham and the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob*? He is not a God 33 of dead people but of living." And when the crowds heard it, they were astounded at his teaching. 34 When the Pharisees heard he had silenced the Sadducees, they 35 mustered their forces, and one of them, a jurist, put a question in order to tempt him. "Teacher," 36 he said, "what is the greatest command in the Law?" He replied, 37 "*You must love the Lord your God with your whole heart, with your whole soul, and with your whole 38 mind*. This is the greatest and 39 chief command. There is a second like it: *you must love your neighbour as yourself*. The whole Law and the prophets hang upon these two commands." 41 As the Pharisees had mustered, Jesus put a question to them. 42 "Tell me," he said, "what you think about the Christ. Whose

son is he?" They said to him, "David's." He said to them, "How is it then that David in the 43 Spirit calls him *Lord*?"

*The Lord said to my Lord, 'Sit at my right hand, till I put your enemies under your feet.'*

If David calls him *Lord*, how can 45 he be his son?" No one could 46 make any answer to him, and from that day no one ventured to put another question to him.

CHAP.

THEN Jesus spoke to the crowds 23 and to his disciples. "The scribes 2 and Pharisees sit on the seat of Moses; so do whatever they tell 3 you, obey them, but do not do as they do. They talk but they do not act. They make up heavy 4 loads and lay them on men's shoulders but they will not stir a finger to remove them. Besides, 5 all they do is done to catch the notice of men; they make their phylacteries broad, they wear large tassels, they are fond of the best 6 places at banquets and the front seats in the synagogues; they like to be saluted in the marketplaces 7 and to be called 'rabbi' by men.

But you are not to be called 8 'rabbi,'

for One is your teacher, and you are all brothers; you are not to call anyone 9 'father' on earth,

for One is your heavenly Father;

nor must you be called 'leaders,' 10 for One is your leader, even the Christ.

He who is greatest among you 11 must be your servant.

Whoever uplifts himself will be 12 humbled,

- and whoever humbles himself  
will be uplifted.
- 13 Woe to you, you impious scribes  
and Pharisees !  
you shut the Realm of heaven  
in men's faces ;  
you neither enter yourselves,  
nor will you let those enter  
who are on the point of  
entering.
- 15 Woe to you, you impious scribes  
and Pharisees !  
you traverse sea and land to  
make a single proselyte,  
and when you succeed you  
make him a son of Ge-  
henna twice as bad as  
yourselves.
- 16 Woe to you, blind guides that  
you are !  
you say, ' Swear by the sanctu-  
ary, and it means nothing ;  
but swear by the gold of the  
sanctuary, and the oath  
is binding.'
- 17 You are senseless and blind !  
for which is the greater,  
the gold or the sanctuary that  
makes the gold sacred ?
- 18 You say again, ' Swear by the  
altar, and it means  
nothing ;  
but swear by the gift upon it,  
and the oath is binding.'
- 19 You are blind ! for which is  
the greater,  
the gift or the altar that makes  
the gift sacred ?
- 20 He who swears by the altar  
swears by it and by all that  
lies on it ;
- 21 he who swears by the sanctuary  
swears by it and by Him  
who inhabits it ;
- 22 he who swears by heaven  
swears by the throne of God  
and by Him who sits upon  
it.

Woe to you, you impious scribes 23  
and Pharisees !  
you tithe mint and dill and  
cummin,  
and omit the weightier matters  
of the law,  
justice and mercy and faith-  
fulness ;  
these latter you ought to have  
practised—without omit-  
ting the former.

Blind guides that you are, 24  
filtering away the gnat and  
swallowing the camel !

Woe to you, you irreligious 25  
scribes and Pharisees !  
you clean the outside of the  
cup and the plate,  
but inside they are filled  
with your rapacity and  
self-indulgence.

Blind Pharisee ! first clean the 26  
inside of the cup,  
so that the outside may be  
clean as well.

Woe to you, you irreligious scribes 27  
and Pharisees !  
you are like tombs white-  
washed ;  
they look comely on the out-  
side,  
but inside they are full of  
dead men's bones and all  
manner of impurity.

So to men you seem just, 28  
but inside you are full of  
hypocrisy and iniquity.

Woe to you, you irreligious 29  
scribes and Pharisees ! You build  
tombs for the prophets and  
decorate the tombs of the just,  
and you say ' If we had been living 30  
in the days of our fathers, we  
would not have joined them in  
shedding the blood of the prophets.'  
So you are witnesses against your- 31  
selves, that you are sons of those  
who killed the prophets ! And you 32



will fill up \* the measure that  
 33 your fathers filled. You serpents !  
 you brood of vipers ! how can you  
 escape being sentenced to Gehenna ?  
 34 This is why I will send you prophets,  
 wise men, and scribes, some of  
 whom you will kill and crucify,  
 some of whom you will flog in your  
 synagogues and persecute from  
 35 town to town ; it is that on you  
 may fall the punishment for all the  
 just blood shed on earth from  
 the blood of Abel the just down to  
 the blood of Zechariah the son of  
 Barachiah, whom you murdered  
 between the sanctuary and the  
 36 altar. I tell you truly, it will all  
 come upon this generation.  
 37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem ! slaying  
 the prophets and stoning those  
 who have been sent to you ! How  
 often I would fain have gathered  
 your children as a fowl gathers her  
 brood under her wings ! But you  
 38 would not have it ! See, *your*  
 39 *House is left to you, desolate.* For I  
 tell you, you will never see me again  
 till you say, *Blessed be he who comes*  
*in the Lord's name."*

CHAP.

24 So Jesus left the temple and went  
 on his way. His disciples came  
 forward to point out to him the  
 2 temple-buildings, but he replied  
 to them, " You see all this ? I  
 tell you truly, not a stone here will  
 be left upon another, without being  
 torn down."  
 3 So as he sat on the Hill of  
 Olives the disciples came up to him  
 in private and said, " Tell us, when  
 will this happen ? What will be  
 the sign of your arrival and of  
 4 the end of the world ? " Jesus re-  
 plied, " Take care that no one mis-  
 5 leads you ; for many will come in

my name, saying ' I am the Christ,'  
 and they will mislead many. You 6  
 will hear of wars and rumours of  
 wars ; see and do not be alarmed.  
*These have to come*, but it is not the  
 end yet. For *nation will rise against 7*  
*nation, and realm against realm ;*  
 there will be famines and earth-  
 quakes here and there. All that 8  
 is but the beginning of the trouble.  
 Then men will hand you over to 9  
 suffer affliction, and they will kill  
 you ; you will be hated by all the  
 Gentiles on account of my name.  
 And *many will be repelled* then, 10  
 they will betray one another and  
 hate one another. Many false 11  
 prophets will rise and mislead  
 many. And in most of you love 12  
 will grow cold by the increase of  
 iniquity ; but he will be saved 13  
 who holds out to the very end.  
 This gospel of the Reign shall be 14  
 preached all over the wide world  
 as a testimony to all the Gentiles,  
 and then the end will come.

So when you see *the appalling 15*  
*Horror* spoken of by the prophet  
 Daniel, standing erect *in the holy*  
*place* (let the reader note this), then 16  
 let those who are in Judaea fly to  
 the hills ; a man on the housetop 17  
 must not go down to fetch what is in-  
 side his house, and a man in the field 18  
 must not turn back to get his coat.  
 Woe to women with child and to 19  
 women who give suck in those days !  
 Pray that you may not have to fly 20  
 in winter or on the sabbath, for 21  
 there will be *sore misery* then, *such*  
*as has never been from the beginning*  
*of the world till now*—no and never  
 shall be. Had not those days been 22  
 cut short, not a soul would be saved  
 alive ; however, for the sake of  
 the elect, those days will be cut  
 short.

If anyone tells you at that time, 23

\* Reading *πληρώσεται* with B, Syr.Sin.



## S. MATTHEW XXIV

'Here is the Christ!' or, 'there he is!' do not believe it; for  
24 false Christs and *false prophets will*  
rise and *bring forward great signs*  
and *wonders*, so as to mislead the  
very elect,—if that were possible.

25 (I am telling you this beforehand.)

26 If they tell you, 'Here he is  
in the desert,'

do not go out;

'here he is in the chamber,'

do not believe it.

27 For like lightning that shoots  
from east to west,  
so will be the arrival of the  
Son of man.

28 Wherever the body lies,  
there will the vultures gather.

29 Immediately after the misery of  
those days

*the sun will be darkened,*

*and the moon will not yield her  
light,*

*the stars will drop from heaven*

*and the orbs of the heavens will  
be shaken.*

30 Then the Sign of the Son of man  
will appear in heaven; then *all*  
*tribes on earth* will wail, they will  
see *the Son of man coming on the*  
*clouds of heaven* with great power  
31 and glory. He will despatch his  
angels *with a loud trumpet-call to*  
*muster his elect from the four winds,*  
*from the verge of heaven to the verge*  
*of earth.*

32 Let the fig tree teach you a  
parable. As soon as its branches  
turn soft and put out leaves, you  
33 know summer is at hand; so,  
whenever you see all this happen,  
you may be sure He is at hand, at  
the very door.

34 I tell you truly, the present  
generation will not pass away till  
35 all this happens. Heaven and  
earth will pass away, but my words  
will never pass away.

34

Now no one knows anything 36  
about that day or hour, not even  
the angels in heaven, but only my  
Father. As were the days of Noah, 37  
so will the arrival of the Son of man  
be. For as in the days before the 38  
deluge people ate and drank, mar-  
ried and were married, till the day  
*Noah entered the ark*; and as they 39  
knew nothing till the deluge came  
and swept them all away; so  
will the arrival of the Son of man  
be.

Then there will be two men in 40  
the field,

one will be taken and one will  
be left;

two women will be grinding at 41  
the millstone,

one will be taken and one will  
be left.

Keep on the watch then, for you 42  
never know what day your Lord  
will come. But be sure of this, 43  
that if the householder had known  
at what watch in the night the thief  
was coming, he would have been  
on the watch, he would not have  
allowed his house to be broken into.  
So be ready yourselves, for the Son 44  
of man is coming at an hour you do  
not expect.

Now where is the trusty and 45  
thoughtful servant, whom his lord  
and master has set over his house-  
hold to assign them their supplies  
at the proper time? Blessed is that 46  
servant if his lord and master finds  
him so doing when he arrives! I tell 47  
you truly, he will set him over all his  
property. But if the\* bad servant 48  
says to himself, 'My lord and master  
is long of coming,' and if he starts 49  
to beat his fellow-servants and to  
eat and drink with drunkards, that 50  
servant's lord and master will arrive

\* Omitting [ἐκεῖνος], a harmonistic  
gloss from Luke xii. 45.

on a day when he does not expect him and at an hour which he does not know; he will cut him in two and assign him the fate of the hypocrites. There men will wail and gnash their teeth.

CHAP.

25 THEN shall the Realm of heaven be compared to ten maidens who took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom and the bride.\*  
 2 Five of them were stupid and five  
 3 were sensible. For although the stupid took their lamps, they took  
 4 no oil with them, whereas the sensible took oil in their vessels as  
 5 well as their lamps. As the bridegroom was long of coming, they all grew drowsy and went to sleep.  
 6 But at midnight the cry arose, 'Here is the bridegroom! Come out to meet him!' Then all the maidens rose and trimmed their lamps.  
 8 The stupid said to the sensible, 'Give us some of your oil, for our  
 9 lamps are going out.' But the sensible replied, 'No, there may not be enough for us and for you. Better go to the dealers and buy  
 10 for yourselves.' Now while they were away buying oil, the bridegroom arrived; those maidens who were ready accompanied him to the marriage-banquet, and the door  
 11 was shut. Afterwards the rest of the maidens came and said, 'Oh sir, oh  
 12 sir, open the door for us!' but he replied, 'I tell you frankly, I do not  
 13 know you.' Keep on the watch then, for you know neither the day nor the hour.

\* The words *καὶ τῆς νύμφης* are added by D X\*, the Latin and Syriac versions, etc. Their omission may have been due to the feeling of the later church that Jesus as the Bridegroom ought alone to be mentioned.

For the case is that of a man 14 going abroad, who summoned his servants and handed over his property to them; to one he 15 gave twelve hundred pounds, to another five hundred, and to another two hundred and fifty; each got according to his capacity. Then the man went abroad. The 16 servant who had got the twelve hundred pounds at once went and traded with them, making another twelve hundred. Similarly the ser- 17 vant who had got the five hundred pounds made another five hundred. But the servant who had got the 18 two hundred and fifty pounds went off and dug a hole in the ground and hid his master's money. Now 19 a long time afterwards the master of those servants came back and settled accounts with them. Then 20 the servant who had got the twelve hundred pounds came forward, bringing twelve hundred more; he said, 'You handed me twelve hundred pounds, sir; here I have gained another twelve hundred.' His master said to him, 'Capital, 21 you excellent and trusty servant! You have been trusty in charge of a small sum: I will put you in charge of a large sum. Come and share your master's feast.' Then the 22 servant with the five hundred pounds came forward. He said, 'You handed me five hundred pounds, sir; here I have gained another five hundred.' His master 23 said to him, 'Capital, you excellent and trusty servant! You have been trusty in charge of a small sum: I will put you in charge of a large sum. Come and share your master's feast.' Then the servant who 24 had got the two hundred and fifty pounds came forward. He said, 'I knew you were a hard man, sir,



## S. MATTHEW XXV

reaping where you never sowed  
and gathering where you never  
25 winnowed. So I was afraid; I  
went and hid your two hundred  
and fifty pounds in the earth.  
26 There's your money!' His master  
said to him in reply, 'You rascal,  
you idle servant! You knew, did  
you, that I reap where I have  
never sowed and gather where  
27 I have never winnowed! Well  
then, you should have handed  
my money to the bankers and I  
would have got my capital with  
28 interest when I came back. Take  
therefore the two hundred and fifty  
pounds away from him, give it to  
the servant who had the twelve  
hundred.

29 For to everyone who has shall  
more be given and richly  
given;

but from him who has nothing,  
even what he has shall be  
taken.

30 Throw the good-for-nothing servant  
into the darkness outside; there  
men will wail and gnash their  
teeth.

31 When the Son of man comes in  
his glory and *all the angels with him*,  
then he will sit on the throne of his  
32 glory, and all nations will be  
gathered in front of him; he will  
separate them one from another,  
as a shepherd separates the sheep  
33 from the goats, setting the sheep  
on his right hand and the goats on  
34 his left. Then shall the King say  
to those on his right, 'Come, you  
whom my Father has blessed, come  
into your inheritance in the realm  
prepared for you from the founda-  
tion of the world.

35 For I was hungry and you fed  
me,

I was thirsty and you gave me  
drink,

I was a stranger and you enter-  
tained me,

I was unclothed and you 36  
clothed me,

I was ill and you looked after  
me,

I was in prison and you visited  
me.'

Then the just will answer, 37

'Lord, when did we see you  
hungry and fed you? or  
thirsty and gave you drink?  
when did we see you a stranger 38  
and entertain you? or un-  
clothed and clothed you?  
when did we see you ill or in 39  
prison and visit you?'

The King will answer them, 'I tell 40  
you truly, in so far as you did it to  
one of these brothers of mine, even  
to the least of them, you did it to  
me.' Then he will say to those on 41  
the left, 'Begone from me, you  
accursed ones, to the eternal fire  
which has been prepared for the  
devil and his angels!

For I was hungry but you never 42  
fed me,

I was thirsty but you never  
gave me drink,

I was a stranger but you never 43  
entertained me,

I was unclothed but you never  
clothed me,

I was ill and in prison but you  
never looked after me.'

Then they will answer too, 'Lord, 44  
when did we ever see you hungry  
or thirsty or a stranger or unclothed  
or ill or in prison, and did not  
minister to you?' Then he will 45  
answer them, 'I tell you truly, in  
so far as you did not do it to one of  
these, even the least of them, you  
did not do it to me.'

So they shall depart to eternal 46  
punishment,  
and the just to eternal life."



## S. MATTHEW XXVI

CHAP.

26 WHEN Jesus finished saying all  
2 this he said to his disciples, "You  
know the passover is to be held  
two days after this; and the Son  
of man will be delivered up to be  
crucified."

3 Then the high priests and the  
elders of the people met in the  
palace of the high priest who was  
called Caiaphas and took counsel  
together to get hold of Jesus  
by craft and have him put to  
4 death. "Only," they said, "it  
must not be during the festi-  
val, in case of a riot among the  
people."

6 Now when Jesus was at Bethany  
in the house of Simon the leper, a  
7 woman came up to him with an  
alabaster flask of expensive perfume  
which she poured over his head as  
8 he lay at table. When the disciples  
saw this they were angry. "What  
is the use of this waste?" they  
9 said; "the perfume might have  
been sold for a good sum, and the  
10 poor might have got that." But  
Jesus was aware of what they said,  
and he replied, "Why are you  
annoying the woman? It is a  
beautiful thing she has done to me.  
11 The poor you always have beside  
you, but you will not always have  
12 me. In pouring this perfume on  
my body she has acted in view of  
13 my burial. I tell you truly, wher-  
ever this gospel is preached through  
all the world, men will speak of  
what she has done in memory of  
her."

14 Then one of the twelve called  
Judas Iscariot went and said to the  
15 high priests, "What will you give  
me for betraying him to you?"  
And *they weighed out for him thirty*  
16 *silver pieces.* From that moment  
he sought a good opportunity to  
betray him.

On the first day of unleavened 17  
bread the disciples of Jesus came  
up and said to him, "Where do you  
want us to prepare for you to eat  
the passover?" He said, "Go 18  
into the city to so-and-so; tell him  
that the Teacher says, 'My time is  
near, I will celebrate the passover  
at your house with my disciples.'  
So the disciples did as Jesus had 19  
told them and prepared the pass-  
over. When evening came he lay 20  
at table with the disciples, and as 21  
they were eating he said, "One of  
you is going to betray me." They 22  
were greatly distressed at this, and  
each of them said to him, "Lord,  
surely it is not me." He answered, 23  
"One who has dipped his hand  
into the same dish as myself is  
going to betray me. The Son of 24  
man goes the road that the scripture  
has described for him, but woe to  
the man by whom the Son of man  
is betrayed! Better that man had  
never been born!" Then Judas 25  
his betrayer said, "Surely it is  
not me, rabbi?" He said to him,  
"Is it not?"

As they were eating he took a 26  
loaf and after the blessing he broke  
it; then he gave it to the disciples  
saying, "Take and eat this, it  
means my body." He also took 27  
a cup and after thanking God he  
gave it to them saying, "Drink of  
it, all of you; this means my blood, 28  
the new *covenant-blood*, shed for  
many, to win the remission of their  
sins. I tell you, after this I will 29  
never drink this produce of the  
vine till the day I drink it new  
with you in the Realm of my  
Father."

After the hymn of praise they 30  
went out to the Hill of Olives.  
Then Jesus said to them, "You 31  
will all be disconcerted over me

## S. MATTHEW XXVI

to-night, for it is written, *I will strike at the shepherd and the sheep of the flock will be scattered.* But after my rising I will precede you to Galilee." Peter answered, "Supposing they are all disconcerted over you, I will not be disconcerted." Jesus said to him, "I tell you truly, you will disown me three times this very night, before the cock crows." Peter said to him, "Even though I have to die with you, I will never disown you." And all the disciples said the same thing.

Then Jesus came with them to a place called Gethsemane, and he told the disciples, "Sit here till I go over there and pray." But he took Peter and the two sons of Zebedaeus along with him; and when he began to feel distressed and agitated, he said to them, "*My heart is sad*, sad even to death; stay here and watch with me."

Then he went forward a little and fell on his face praying, "My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass me. Yet, not what I will but what thou wilt." Then he went to the disciples and found them asleep; and he said to Peter, "So the three of you could not watch with me for a single hour? Watch and pray, all of you, so that you may not slip into temptation. The spirit is eager but the flesh is weak." Again he went away for the second time and prayed, "My Father, if this cup cannot pass unless I drink it, thy will be done."

And when he returned he found them asleep again, for their eyes were heavy. So he left them and went back for the third time, praying in the same words as before. Then he went to the disciples and said to them, "Still

asleep? still resting? The hour is near, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. Come, get up and let us go. Here is my betrayer close at hand!" While he was still speaking, up came Judas, one of the twelve, accompanied by a large mob with swords and clubs who had come from the high priests and the elders of the people. Now his betrayer had given them a signal; he said, "Whoever I kiss, that is the man." So he went up at once to Jesus; "Hail, rabbi!" he said, and kissed him. Jesus said, "My man, do your errand." Then they laid hands on Jesus and seized him. One of his companions put out his hand, drew his sword, and struck the servant of the high priest, cutting off his ear. Then Jesus said to him, "Put your sword back into its place; all who draw the sword shall die by the sword. What! do you think I cannot appeal to my Father to furnish me at this moment with over twelve legions of angels? Only, how could the scriptures be fulfilled then—the scriptures that say this must be so?" At that hour Jesus said to the crowds, "Have you sallied out to arrest me like a robber, with swords and clubs? Day after day I sat in the temple teaching, and you never seized me. However, this has all happened for the fulfilment of the prophetic scriptures!"

Then all the disciples left him and fled; but those who had seized Jesus took him away to the house of Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and elders had gathered. Peter followed him at a distance as far as the courtyard of the high priest, and when he got inside



he sat down beside the attendants to see the end.

59 Now the high priests and the whole of the Sanhedrin tried to secure false witness against Jesus, in order to have him put to death; 60 but they could find none, although a number of false witnesses came forward. However, two men came 61 forward at last and said, "This fellow declared, 'I can destroy the temple of God and build it in three 62 days.'" So the high priest rose and said to him, "Have you no reply to make? What of this 63 evidence against you?" Jesus said nothing. Then the high priest addressed him, "I adjure you by the living God, tell us if you are the Christ, the Son of God!" 64 Jesus said to him, "Even so! But I tell you, in future you will all see *the Son of man seated at the right hand of the Power, and coming 65 on the clouds of heaven.*" Then the high priest tore his dress and cried, "He has blasphemed! What more evidence do we want? Look, you have heard his blasphemy for 66 yourselves! What is your view?" They replied, "He is doomed to 67 death." Then they spat in his face and buffeted him, some of them cuffing him and crying, 68 "Prophecy to us, you Christ! tell us who struck you!" 69 Now Peter was sitting outside in the courtyard. A maidservant came up and said to him, "You were with Jesus the Galilean too." 70 But he denied it before them all. "I do not know what you mean," 71 he said. When he went out to the gateway another maidservant noticed him and said to those who were there, "This fellow was with 72 Jesus the Nazarene." Again he denied it; he swore, "I do not

know the man." After a little 73 the bystanders came up and said to Peter, "To be sure, you are one of them too. Why, your accent betrays you!" At this he broke 74 out cursing and swearing, "I do not know the man." At that moment a cock crowed. Then 75 Peter remembered what Jesus had said, that 'before the cock crows, you will disown me three times.' And he went outside and wept bitterly.

CHAP. 27  
WHEN morning came, all the high priests and the elders of the people took counsel against Jesus, so as to have him put to death. After binding him, they led him 2 off and handed him over to Pontius Pilate the governor.

Then Judas his betrayer saw 3 he was condemned, and repented; he brought back the thirty silver pieces to the high priests and elders, saying, "I did wrong in betraying 4 innocent blood." "What does that matter to us?" they said, "it is your affair, not ours!" Then 5 he flung down the silver pieces in the temple and went off and hung himself. The high priests took the 6 money and said, "It would be wrong to put this into the treasury, for it is the price of blood." So 7 after consulting they bought with it the Potter's Field, to serve as a burying-place for strangers. That 8 is why the field is called to this day "The Field of Blood." Then 9 the word spoken by the prophet Jeremiah was fulfilled: *and I took the thirty silver pieces, the price of him who had been priced, whom they had priced and expelled from the sons of Israel; and I gave them 10 for the potter's field, as the Lord had bidden me.*



11 Now Jesus stood before the governor, and the governor asked him, "Are you the king of the Jews?"  
 12 Jesus replied, "Certainly." But while he was being accused by the high priests and elders, he  
 13 made no reply. Then Pilate said to him, "Do you not hear all  
 14 their evidence against you?" But, to Pilate's great astonishment, he would not answer him a single word.  
 15 At festival time the governor was in the habit of releasing any one prisoner whom the crowd  
 16 chose. At that time they had a notorious prisoner called Jesus \*  
 17 Bar-Abbas; so, when they had gathered, Pilate said to them, "Who do you want released?  
 18 Jesus Bar-Abbas or Jesus the so-called 'Christ'?" (He knew quite well that Jesus had been  
 19 delivered up out of envy. Besides, when he was seated on the tribunal, his wife had sent to tell him, "Do nothing with that innocent man, for I have suffered greatly to-day  
 20 in a dream about him.") But the high priests and elders persuaded the crowds to ask Bar-Abbas and  
 21 to have Jesus killed. The governor said to them, "Which of the two do you want me to release for you?" "Bar-Abbas," they said.  
 22 Pilate said, "Then what am I to do with Jesus the so-called 'Christ'?" They all said, "Have  
 23 him crucified!" "Why," said the governor, "what has he done wrong?" But they shouted on

more fiercely than ever, "Have him crucified!" Now when Pilate 24 saw that instead of him doing any good a riot was rising, he took some water and washed his hands in presence of the crowd, saying, "I am innocent of this good man's blood. It is your affair!" To this 25 all the people replied, "His blood be on us and on our children!" Then he released Bar-Abbas for 26 them; Jesus he scourged and handed over to be crucified.

Then the soldiers of the governor 27 took Jesus into the praetorium and got all the regiment round him; they stripped him and threw a 28 scarlet mantle round him, plaited 29 a crown of thorns and set it on his head, put a stick in his hand, and knelt before him in mockery, crying, "Hail, king of the Jews!" They spat on him, they took the 30 stick and struck him on the head, and after making fun of him they 31 stripped him of the mantle, put on his own clothes, and took him off to be crucified. As they went 32 out they met a Cyrenian called Simon, whom they forced to carry his cross. When they came to a 33 place called Golgotha (meaning the place of a skull), they gave him 34 *a drink of wine mixed with bitters*; but when he tasted it he would not drink it. Then they crucified him, 35 *distributed his clothes among them by drawing lots*, and sat down there 36 to keep watch over him. They 37 also put over his head his charge in writing,

THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE  
 JEWS.

Two robbers were also crucified with 38 him at that time, one on the right hand and one on the left.

\* Adding here and in the following verse Ἰησοῦν with the Sinaitic (and Palestinian) Syriac version, some good minuscules, and manuscripts known to Origen. The evidence is discussed in Professor Burkitt's *Evangelion da-Mepharreshe*, ii. 277 f.

## S. MATTHEW XXVII

39 Those who passed by scoffed at him, nodding at him in derision  
 40 and calling, "You were to destroy the temple and build it in three days! Save yourself, if you are God's Son! Come down from the  
 41 cross!" So, too, the high priests made fun of him with the scribes  
 42 and the elders of the people. "He saved others," they said, "but he cannot save himself! He the 'king of Israel'! Let him come down now from the cross; then  
 43 we will believe in him! *His trust is in God? Let God deliver him now if he cares for him!* He said he was  
 44 the Son of God!" The robbers who were crucified with him also denounced him in the same way.  
 45 Now from twelve o'clock to three o'clock darkness covered all  
 46 the land, and about three o'clock Jesus gave a loud cry, "*Eli, eli, lema sabachthani*" (that is, My God, my God, why hast thou  
 47 forsaken me?) On hearing this some of the bystanders said, "He  
 48 is calling for Elijah." One of them ran off at once and took a sponge, which he soaked in vinegar and put on the end of a stick to give him a drink. But the others  
 49 said, "Stop, let us see if Elijah does come to save him!" [Seizing a lance, another pricked his side, and out came water and blood.]  
 50 Jesus again uttered a loud scream  
 51 and gave up his spirit. And the curtain of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom, the earth  
 52 shook, the rocks were split, the tombs were opened, and a number of bodies of the saints who slept the  
 53 sleep of death rose up—they left the tombs after his resurrection and entered the holy city and appeared  
 54 to a number of people. Now when the army-captain and his men who

were watching Jesus saw the earthquake and all that happened, they were dreadfully afraid; they said, "This man was certainly a son of God!" There were also a number  
 55 of women there looking on from a distance, women who had followed Jesus from Galilee and waited on him, including Mary of Magdala,  
 56 Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of the sons of Zebedaeus.

Now when evening came, a rich  
 man from Arimathaea, called Joseph, who had become a disciple of Jesus, went to Pilate  
 58 and asked him for the body of Jesus. Pilate then ordered the body to be handed over to him. So Joseph took the body, wrapped  
 59 it in clean linen, and put it in his  
 60 new tomb, which he had cut in the rock; then, after rolling a large boulder to the opening of the tomb, he went away.

Mary of Magdala and the other  
 61 Mary were there, sitting opposite the tomb.

Next day (that is, on the day  
 62 after the Preparation) the high priests and Pharisees gathered round Pilate and said, "We re-  
 63 member, sir, that when this impostor was alive he said, 'I will rise after three days.' Now then,  
 64 give orders for the tomb to be kept secure till the third day, in case his disciples go and steal him and then tell the people, 'He has risen from the dead.' The end of the fraud will then be worse than the beginning of it." Pilate said  
 65 to them, "Take a guard of soldiers, go and make it as secure as you can." So off they went and made  
 66 the tomb secure by putting a seal on the boulder and setting the guard.

CHAP.

28 AT the close of the sabbath, as the first day of the week was dawning, Mary of Magdala and the other Mary went to look at the tomb. But a great earthquake took place; an angel of the Lord came down from heaven and went and rolled away the boulder and sat on it. His appearance was like lightning and his raiment white as snow. For fear of him the sentries shook and became like dead men; but the angel addressed the women, saying, "Have no fear; I know you are looking for the crucified Jesus. He is not here, he has risen, as he told you he would. See, here is the place where he [the Lord] lay. Now be quick and go to his disciples, tell them he has risen from the dead and that 'he precedes you to Galilee; you shall see him there.' That is my message for you." Then they ran quickly from the tomb in fear and great joy, to announce the news to his disciples. And Jesus himself met them, saying, "Hail!" So they went up to him and caught hold of his feet and worshipped him; then Jesus said to them, "Have no fear! Go and tell my brothers to leave for Galilee; they shall see me there."

While they were on their way, 11 some of the sentries went into the city and reported all that had taken place to the high priests, who, 12 after meeting and conferring with the elders, gave a considerable sum of money to the soldiers and told them to say that "his disciples 13 came at night and stole him when we were asleep." "If this comes 14 to the ears of the governor," they added, "we will satisfy him and see that you have no trouble about the matter." So the soldiers took 15 the money and followed their instructions; and this story has been disseminated among the Jews down to the present day.

Now the eleven disciples went 16 to Galilee, to the hill where Jesus had arranged to meet them. When 17 they saw him they worshipped him, though some were in doubt. Then 18 Jesus came forward to them and said, "Full authority has been given to me in heaven and on earth; go and make disciples of all 19 nations, baptize them in the name of the Father and the Son and the holy Spirit, and teach them to obey 20 all the commands I have laid on you. And I will be with you all the time, to the very end of the world."



## THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO

### S. MARK

CHAP.

1 THE beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ [the Son of God].

2 As it is written in the prophet Isaiah,

*Here I send my messenger before your face*

*to prepare the way for you :*

3 *the voice of one who cries in the desert,*

*' Make the way ready for the Lord,*

*level the paths for him '—*

4 John appeared baptizing in the desert and preaching a baptism of repentance for the remission of

5 sins; and the whole of Judaea and all the people of Jerusalem went out to him and got baptized

6 by him in the Jordan river, confessing their sins. John was dressed in camel's hair, with a leather girdle round his loins, and he ate

7 locusts and wild honey. He announced,

“After me one who is mightier will come,

and I am not fit to stoop and untie the string of his sandals :

8 I have baptized you with water, but he will baptize you with the holy Spirit.”

9 Now it was in those days that Jesus arrived from Nazaret in Galilee and got baptized in the

10 Jordan by John. And the moment he rose from the water he saw the heavens cleft and the Spirit coming down upon him like a dove;

11 then said a voice from heaven,

“Thou art my Son, the Beloved, in thee is my delight.”

Then the Spirit drove him immediately into the desert, and in 12 the desert he remained for forty days, while Satan tempted him; he was in the company of wild beasts, but angels ministered to him.

After John had been arrested 14 Jesus went to Galilee preaching the gospel of God; he said, “The 15 time has now come, God's reign is near: repent and believe in the gospel.”

Now as he passed along the sea 16 of Galilee he saw Simon and Simon's brother Andrew netting fish in the sea—for they were fishermen; so Jesus said to them, 17 “Come, follow me and I will make you fish for men.” At once they 18 dropped their nets and went after him. Then going on a little further 19 he saw James the son of Zebedaeus and his brother John; they too were in their boat, mending their nets; he called them at once, and 20 they left their father Zebedaeus in the boat with the crew and went to follow him.

They then entered Capharnahum. 21 As soon as the sabbath came, he at once began to teach in the synagogue; and they were astounded 22 at his teaching, for he taught them like an authority, not like the scribes. Now there was a man 23 with an unclean spirit in their synagogue, who at once shrieked

24 out, "Jesus of Nazaret, what business have you with us? Have you come to destroy us? We know who you are, you are God's holy  
 25 One." But Jesus checked it; "Be quiet," he said, "come out of him."  
 26 And after convulsing him the unclean spirit did come out of him  
 27 with a loud cry. Then they were all so amazed that they discussed it together, saying, "Whatever is this?" "It's new teaching with authority behind it!" "He orders even unclean spirits!"  
 "Yes, and they obey him!"  
 28 So his fame at once spread in all directions through the whole of the surrounding country of Galilee.  
 29 On leaving the synagogue they went straight to the house of Simon and Andrew, accompanied  
 30 by James and John. Simon's mother-in-law was in bed with fever, so they told him at once  
 31 about her, and he went up to her and taking her hand made her rise; the fever left her at once and  
 32 she ministered to them. Now when evening came, when the sun set, they brought him all who were ill or possessed by daemons—  
 33 indeed the whole town was gathered  
 34 at the door—and he cured many who were ill with various diseases and cast out many daemons; but as the daemons knew him he would not let them say anything. Then  
 35 in the early morning, long before daylight, he got up and went away out to a lonely spot. He was  
 36 praying there when Simon and his  
 37 companions hunted him out and discovered him; they told him, "Everybody is looking for you,"  
 38 but he said to them, "Let us go somewhere else, to the adjoining country-towns, so that I may preach

there as well; that is why I came out here." And he went preach- 39  
 ing in their synagogues throughout the whole of Galilee, casting out daemons.

A leper came to him beseeching 40  
 him on bended knee, saying, "If you only choose, you can cleanse me;" so he stretched his hand out 41  
 in pity and touched him saying, "I do choose, be cleansed." And 42  
 the leprosy at once left him and he was cleansed. Then he sent him 43  
 off at once with the stern charge, "See, you are not to say a word to 44  
 anybody; away and show yourself to the priest and offer what Moses prescribed for your cleansing, to notify men." But he went off and 45  
 proceeded to proclaim it aloud and spread news of the affair both far and wide. The result was that Jesus could no longer enter any town openly; he stayed outside in lonely places, and people came to him from every quarter.

CHAP.

WHEN he entered Capharnahum 2  
 again after some days it was reported that he was at home, and 2  
 a large number at once gathered, till there was no more room for them, not even at the door. He was speaking the word to them, when a 3  
 paralytic was brought to him; four men carried him, and as they could 4  
 not get near Jesus on account of the crowd they tore up the roof under which he stood and through the opening they lowered the pallet on which the paralytic lay. When 5  
 Jesus saw their faith, he said to the paralytic, "My son, your sins are forgiven." Now there were 6  
 some scribes sitting there who argued in their hearts, "What does 7  
 the man mean by talking like this?



It is blasphemy ! Who can forgive  
 8 sins, who but God alone?" Con-  
 scious at once that they were  
 arguing to themselves in this way,  
 Jesus asked them, "Why do you  
 9 argue thus in your hearts? Which  
 is the easier thing, to tell the para-  
 lytic, 'Your sins are forgiven,' or  
 to tell him, 'Rise, lift your pallet,  
 10 and go away'?" But to let you see  
 the Son of man has power on earth  
 to forgive sins"—he said to the  
 11 paralytic, "Rise, I tell you, lift  
 12 your pallet, and go home." And  
 he rose, lifted his pallet at once,  
 and went off before them all; at  
 this they were all amazed and  
 glorified God saying, "We never  
 saw the like of it!"

13 Then he went out again by the  
 seaside, and all the crowd came to  
 14 him and he taught them. As he  
 passed along he saw Levi the son  
 of Alphaeus sitting at the tax-  
 office; he said to him, "Follow  
 me," and he rose and followed him.

15 Now Levi was at table in his own  
 house, and he had many tax-  
 gatherers and sinners as guests  
 along with Jesus and his disciples  
 —for there were many of them  
 16 among his followers. So when  
 some scribes of the Pharisees saw  
 he was eating with sinners and tax-  
 gatherers they said to his dis-  
 ciples, "Why does he eat and  
 drink with taxgatherers and  
 17 sinners?" On hearing this, Jesus  
 said to them,  
 "Those who are strong have no  
 need of a doctor, but those  
 who are ill :  
 I have not come to call just men  
 but sinners."

18 As the disciples of John and  
 of the Pharisees were observing  
 a fast, people came and asked  
 him, "Why do John's disciples

and the disciples of the Pharisees  
 fast, and your disciples do not  
 fast?" Jesus said to them, 19  
 "Can friends at a wedding fast  
 while the bridegroom is be-  
 side them?  
 As long as they have the  
 bridegroom beside them  
 they cannot fast.  
 A time will come when the bride- 20  
 groom is taken from them;  
 then they will fast, on that  
 day.  
 No one stitches a piece of un- 21  
 dressed cloth on an old  
 coat,  
 otherwise the patch breaks  
 away, the new from the  
 old,  
 and the tear is made worse :  
 no one pours fresh wine into old 22  
 wineskins,  
 otherwise the wine will burst  
 the wineskins,  
 and both wine and wineskins  
 are ruined." \*

Now it happened that he was 23  
 passing through the cornfields on  
 the sabbath, and as the disciples  
 made their way through they began  
 to pull the ears of corn. The 24  
 Pharisees said to him, "Look at  
 what they are doing on the sabbath!  
 That is not allowed." He said to 25  
 them, "Have you never read what  
 David did when he was in need and  
 hungry, he and his men? He 26  
 went into the house of God  
 (Abiathar was high priest then)  
 and ate *the loaves of the Presence*  
 which no one except the priests is  
 allowed to eat, and also shared them  
 with his followers." And he said 27  
 to them,

\* Omitting ἀλλὰ οἶνον νέον εἰς ἀσκοὺς  
 καινοὺς, a harmonistic addition from the  
 parallel passage in Luke v. 38 and  
 Matthew ix. 17.



## S. MARK III

“The sabbath was made for man,  
not man for the sabbath :  
28 so that the Son of man is Lord  
even over the sabbath.”

CHAP.

3 AGAIN he entered the synagogue.  
Now a man was there whose hand  
2 was withered, and they watched  
to see if he would heal him on the  
sabbath, so as to get a charge  
3 against him. He said to the man  
with the withered hand, “Rise  
4 and come forward ;” then he asked  
them, “Is it right to help or to  
hurt on the sabbath, to save life  
or to kill ?” They were silent.  
5 Then glancing round him in anger  
and vexation at their obstinacy  
he told the man, “Stretch out  
your hand.” He stretched it out  
and his hand was quite restored.  
6 On this the Pharisees withdrew  
and at once joined the Herodians  
in a plot against him, to destroy  
him.  
7 Jesus retired with his disciples  
to the sea, and a large number of  
people from Galilee followed him ;  
also a large number came to him  
8 from Judaea, Jerusalem, Idumaea,  
the other side of the Jordan, and  
the neighbourhood of Tyre and  
Sidon, as they had heard of his  
9 doings. So he told his disciples to  
have a small boat ready ; it was  
to prevent him being crushed by  
10 the crowd, for he healed so many  
that all who had complaints were  
pressing on him to get a touch of  
11 him. And whenever the unclean  
spirits saw him they fell down  
before him, screaming, “You are  
12 the Son of God !” But he charged  
them strictly and severely not to  
make him known.

13 Then he went up the hillside  
and summoned the men he wanted,

and they went to him. He ap- 14  
pointed twelve to be with him,  
also that he might despatch them to  
preach with the power of casting 15  
out daemons ; there was Simon, 16  
whom he surnamed Peter, James 17  
the son of Zebedaeus and John  
the brother of James (he surnamed  
them Boanerges, or “Sons of  
thunder”), Andrew, Philip, Bar- 18  
tholomew, Matthew, Thomas,  
James the son of Alphaeus, Thad-  
daeus, Simon the zealot, and Judas 19  
Iscariot who betrayed him.

Then they went indoors, but the 20  
crowd gathered again, so that it  
was impossible even to have a  
meal. And when his family heard 21  
this, they set out to get hold of  
him, for what they said was, “He  
is out of his mind.” But the 22  
scribes who had come down from  
Jerusalem said, “He has Beelze-  
bul,” and “It is by the prince of  
daemons that he casts out  
daemons.” So he called them 23  
and said to them by way of  
parable, “How can Satan cast out  
Satan ?

If a realm is divided against itself, 24  
that realm cannot stand :

if a household is divided against 25  
itself,

that household cannot stand :

and if Satan has risen against 26  
himself and is divided,

he cannot stand, he comes  
to an end.

No one can enter the strong man’s 27  
house and plunder his goods un-  
less first of all he binds the strong  
man ; then he can plunder his  
house. I tell you truly, 28

the sons of men shall be forgiven  
all their sins,

and all the blasphemies they  
may utter,

but whoever blasphemes 29

## S. MARK IV

against the holy Spirit is never forgiven,

he is guilty of an eternal sin."

30 ('This was because they said, "He  
31 has an unclean spirit.") Then came his brothers and his mother, and standing outside they sent to call him; there was a crowd sitting round him, and he was told, "Here are your mother and brothers and sisters wanting you outside." He replied, "Who are my mother and my brothers?"

34 And glancing at those who were sitting round him in a circle he said, "There are my mother and  
35 my brothers! Whoever does the will of God, that is my brother and sister and mother."

CHAP.

4. . ONCE more he proceeded to teach by the seaside, and a huge crowd gathered round him; so he entered a boat on the sea and sat down, while all the crowd stayed  
2 on shore. He gave them many lessons in parables, and said to them in the course of his teaching:  
3 "Listen, a sower went out to sow,  
4 and as he sowed it chanced that some seed fell on the road, and the  
5 birds came and ate it up; some other seed fell on stony soil where it had not much earth, and it shot up at once because it had no depth  
6 of earth, but when the sun rose it got scorched and withered away, because it had no root; some  
7 other seed fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up and choked it,  
8 so it bore no crop; some other seed fell on good soil and bore a crop that sprang up and grew, yielding at the rate of thirty, sixty, and a  
9 hundredfold." He added, "Any-one who has ears to hear, let him listen to this."

When he was by himself his 10 adherents and the twelve asked him about the parable, and he said 11 to them: "The open secret of the Realm of God is granted to you, but these outsiders get everything by way of parables, so that

*for all their seeing they may not 12 perceive,*

*and for all their hearing they may not understand,*

*lest they turn and be forgiven."*

And he said to them, "You do 13 not understand this parable? Then how are you to understand the other parables? The sower sows 14 the word. As for those 'on the 15 road,' when the seed is sown there—as soon as they hear it, Satan at once comes and carries off the word sown within them. Similarly those 16 who are sown 'on stony soil' are the people who on hearing the word accept it\* with enthusiasm; but they have no root in themselves, 17 they do not last; the next thing is that when the word brings trouble or persecution, they are at once repelled. Another set are those 18 who are sown 'among thorns'; they listen to the word, but the 19 worries of the world and the delight of being rich and all the other passions come in to choke the word; so it proves unfruitful. As for 20 those who were sown 'on good soil,' these are the people who listen to the word and take it in and bear fruit at the rate of thirty, sixty, and a hundredfold."

He also said to them,

21

\* Omitting *εὐθὺς* with D, the Sinaitic Syriac, some manuscripts of the Old Latin, etc. The tendency was to add Mark's *εὐθὺς* rather than omit it, especially when it occurred as here in the Matthew-parallel (xiii. 20).



"Is a lamp brought to be placed under a bowl or a bed?  
Is it not to be placed upon the stand?"

22 Nothing is hidden except to be disclosed,  
nothing concealed except to be revealed.

23 If anyone has an ear to hear, let  
24 him listen to this." Also he said to them, "Take care what you hear; the measure you deal out to others will be dealt out to yourselves, and you will receive extra.

25 For he who has, to him shall more be given;  
while as for him who has not, from him shall be taken even what he has."

26 And he said, "It is with the Realm of God as when a man has  
27 sown seed on earth; he sleeps at night and rises by day, and the seed sprouts and shoots up—he knows  
28 not how. (For the earth bears crops by itself, the blade first, the ear of corn next, and then the  
29 grain full in the ear.) But whenever the crop is ready, he has the sickle put in at once, as harvest  
30 has come." He said also,

"To what can we compare the Realm of God?"

how are we to put it in a parable?

31 It is like a grain of mustard-seed—less than any seed on earth  
32 when it is sown on earth; but once sown it springs up to be larger than any plant, throwing out such big branches that *the wild birds*  
33 *can roost under its shadow.*" In many a parable like this he spoke the word to them, so far as they  
34 could listen to it; he never spoke to them except by way of parable, but in private he explained everything to his own disciples.

That same day when evening 35 came he said to them, "Let us cross to the other side;" so, leaving 36 the crowd, they took him just as he was in the boat, accompanied by some other boats. But a heavy 37 squall of wind came on, and the waves splashed into the boat, so that the boat filled. He was 38 sleeping on the cushion in the stern, so they woke him up saying, "Teacher, are we to drown, for all you care?" And he woke up, 39 checked the wind, and told the sea, "Peace, be quiet." The wind fell and there was a great calm. Then he said to them, "Why are 40 you afraid like this? Have you no faith yet?" But they were 41 overawed and said to each other, "Whatever can he be, when the very wind and sea obey him?"

CHAP.

THEN they reached the opposite 5 side of the sea, the country of the Gerasenes. And as soon as he 2 stepped out of the boat a man from the tombs came to meet him, a man with an unclean spirit who dwelt 3 among the tombs; by this time no one could bind him, not even with a chain, for he had often been 4 bound with fetters and chains and had snapped the chains and broken the fetters—nobody could tame him. All night and day among 5 the tombs and the hills he shrieked and gashed himself with stones. On catching sight of Jesus from 6 afar he ran and knelt before him, shrieking aloud, "Jesus, son of 7 God most High, what business have you with me? By God, I adjure you, do not torture me." (For he had said, "Come out of 8 the man, you unclean spirit.") Jesus asked him, "What is your 9



## S. MARK V

name?" "Legion," he said,  
 10 "there is a host of us." And they  
 begged him earnestly not to send  
 11 them out of the country. Now a  
 large drove of swine was grazing  
 12 there on the hillside; so the  
 spirits begged him saying, "Send  
 us into the swine, that we may  
 13 enter them." And Jesus gave  
 them leave. Then out came the  
 unclean spirits and entered the  
 swine, and the drove rushed down  
 the steep slope into the sea (there  
 were about two thousand of them)  
 and in the sea they were drowned.  
 14 The herdsmen fled and reported  
 it to the town and the hamlets.  
 So the people came to see what  
 15 had happened, and when they  
 reached Jesus they saw the lunatic  
 sitting down, clothed and in his  
 sober senses—the man who had  
 been possessed by 'Legion.' That  
 16 frightened them. And those who  
 had seen it related to them what had  
 happened to the lunatic and the  
 17 swine. Then they began begging  
 18 Jesus to leave their district. As he  
 was stepping into the boat the  
 lunatic begged that he might  
 19 accompany him; but he said,  
 "Go home to your own people,  
 and report to them all the Lord  
 has done for you and how he took  
 20 pity on you." So he went off and  
 began to proclaim throughout  
 Decapolis all that Jesus had done  
 for him; it made everyone  
 astonished.  
 21 Now when Jesus had crossed in  
 the boat to the other side again, a  
 large crowd gathered round him;  
 so he remained beside the sea.  
 22 A president of the synagogue called  
 Jairus came up, and on catching  
 sight of him fell at his feet with  
 23 earnest entreaties. "My little girl  
 is dying," he said, "do come and

lay your hands on her that she may  
 recover and live." So Jesus went 24  
 away with him. Now a large  
 crowd followed him; they pressed  
 round him. And there was a 25  
 woman who had had a hemorrhage  
 for twelve years—she had suffered 26  
 a great deal under a number of  
 doctors and had spent all her  
 means but was none the better;  
 in fact she was rather worse. She 27  
 heard about Jesus, got behind him  
 in the crowd, and touched his  
 robe; "if I can touch even his 28  
 clothes," she said to herself, "I  
 will recover." And at once the 29  
 hemorrhage stopped, and she felt  
 in her body that she was cured of  
 her complaint. Jesus was at once 30  
 conscious that some healing virtue  
 had passed from him, so he turned  
 round in the crowd and asked,  
 "Who touched my clothes?" His 31  
 disciples said to him, "You see the  
 crowd are pressing round you, and  
 yet you ask, 'Who touched me?'"  
 But he kept looking round to see 32  
 who had done it, and the woman, 33  
 knowing what had happened to  
 her, came forward in fear and  
 trembling and fell down before  
 him, telling him all the truth. He 34  
 said to her, "Daughter, your faith  
 has made you well; go in peace  
 and be free from your complaint."  
 He was still speaking when a 35  
 message came from the house of  
 the synagogue-president, "Your  
 daughter is dead. Why trouble  
 the teacher to come any further?"  
 Instantly Jesus ignored the remark 36  
 and told the president, "Have no  
 fear, only believe." He would not 37  
 allow anyone to accompany him ex-  
 cept Peter and James and John the  
 brother of James. So they reached 38  
 the president's house, where he  
 saw a tumult of people wailing

## S. MARK VI

39 and making shrill lament; and on  
entering he asked them, "Why  
40 make a noise and wail? The child  
is not dead but asleep." They  
laughed at him. However, he put  
them all outside and taking the  
father and mother of the child as  
well as his companions he went  
in to where the child was lying;  
41 then he took the child's hand and  
said to her, "Talitha koum"—  
which may be translated, "Little  
42 girl, I am telling you to rise."  
The girl got up at once and began  
to walk (she was twelve years old);  
and at once they were lost in utter  
43 amazement. But he strictly for-  
bade them to let anyone know  
about it, and told them to give her  
something to eat.

CHAP.

6 LEAVING there he went to his  
native place, followed by his dis-  
ciples. When the sabbath came,  
2 he began to teach in the syna-  
gogue, and the large audience was  
astounded. "Where did he get  
all this?" they said. "What is  
the meaning of this wisdom he  
is endowed with? And these  
miracles, too, that his hands per-  
3 form! Is this not the joiner, the  
son of Mary and the brother of  
James and Joses and Judas and  
Simon? Are not his sisters settled  
here among us?" So they were  
4 repelled by him. Then Jesus said  
to them, "A prophet never goes  
without honour except in his native  
place and among his kinsfolk and  
5 in his home." There he could not  
do any miracle, beyond laying his  
hands on a few sick people and  
6 curing them. He was astonished  
at their lack of faith.

Then he made a tour round the  
7 villages, teaching. And summon-

ing the twelve he proceeded to  
send them out two by two; he  
gave them power over the unclean  
spirits, and ordered them to take 8  
nothing but a stick for the journey,  
no bread, no wallet, no coppers in  
their girdle; they were to wear 9  
sandals, but not to put on two  
shirts, he said. Also, he told 10  
them, "Wherever you enter a  
house, stay there till you leave  
the place. And if any place will 11  
not receive you and the people will  
not listen to you, shake off the  
very dust under your feet when you  
leave as a warning to them." 12  
So they went out and preached 12  
repentance; also they cast out 13  
a number of daemons and cured  
a number of sick people by anoint-  
ing them with oil.

Now this came to the hearing of 14  
king Herod, for the name of Jesus  
had become well known; people  
said,\* "John the Baptizer has risen  
from the dead, that is why miracu-  
lous powers are working through  
him;" others said, "It is Elijah," 15  
others again, "It is a prophet, like  
one of the old prophets." But 16  
when Herod heard of it he said,  
"John has risen, the John I be-  
headed." For this Herod had sent 17  
and arrested John and bound him  
in prison on account of his marriage  
to Herodias the wife of his brother  
Philip; John had told Herod, 18  
"You have no right to your  
brother's wife." Herodias had a 19  
grudge against him; she wanted  
him killed but she could not manage  
it, for Herod stood in awe of John, 20  
knowing he was a just and holy  
man; so he protected John—he  
was greatly exercised when he  
listened to him, still he was glad

\* Reading *ἐλεγον* with B D and the  
Old Latin.



## S. MARK VI

21 to listen to him. Then came a holiday, when Herod held a feast on his birthday for his chief officials and generals and the notables of Galilee. The daughter of Herodias went in and danced to them, and Herod and his guests were so delighted that the king said to the girl, "Ask anything you like and I will give you it." He swore to her, "I will give you whatever you want, were it the half of my realm." So she went out and said to her mother, "What am I to ask?" "John the Baptizer's head," she answered. Then she hurried in at once and asked the king, saying, "I want you to give me this very moment John the Baptist's head on a dish." The king was very vexed, but for the sake of his oaths and his guests he did not like to dis-appoint her; so the king at once sent one of the guard with orders to bring his head. The man went and beheaded him in the prison, brought his head on a dish, and gave it to the girl; and the girl gave it to her mother. When his disciples heard of it they went and fetched his body and laid it in a tomb.

30 Now the apostles gathered to meet Jesus and reported to him all they had done and taught. And he said to them, "Come away to some lonely spot and get a little rest" (for there were many people coming and going, and they could get no time even to eat). So they went away privately in the boat to a lonely spot. However a number of people who saw them start and recognized them, got to the place before them by hurrying there on foot from all the towns.

34 So when Jesus disembarked he saw

a large crowd, and out of pity for them, as they were like sheep without a shepherd, he proceeded to teach them at length. Then, as the day was far gone, his disciples came up to him, saying, "It is a desert place and the day is now far gone; send them off to the farms and villages round about to buy some food for themselves." He replied, "Give them some food, yourselves." They said, "Are we to go and buy ten pounds' worth of food and give them that to eat?" He said, "How many loaves have you got? Go and see." When they found out they told him, "Five, and two fish." Then he gave orders that they were to make all the people lie down in parties on the green grass; so they arranged themselves in groups of a hundred and of fifty. And he took the five loaves and the two fish, and looking up to heaven he blessed them, broke the loaves in pieces which he handed to the disciples to set before them, and divided the two fish among them all. They all ate and had enough; besides, the fragments of bread and of fish which were picked up filled twelve baskets. (The number of men who ate the loaves was five thousand.)

Then he made the disciples once embark in the boat and cross before him towards Bethsaida, while he dismissed the crowd; and after saying goodbye to them he went up the hill to pray. Now when evening came the boat was [far out] in the middle of the sea, and he was on the land alone; but when he saw them buffeted as they rowed (for the wind was against them) he went to them about the fourth watch of the night walking on the



## S. MARK VII

49 sea. He meant to pass them, but when they saw him walking on the sea they thought it was a ghost  
50 and shrieked aloud—for they all saw him and were terrified. Then he spoke to them at once; “Courage,” he said, “it is I, have  
51 no fear.” And he got into the boat beside them, and the wind dropped. They were utterly as-  
52 tounded, for they had not understood the lesson of the loaves; their minds were dull.

53 On crossing over they came to land at Gennesaret and moored to  
54 the shore. And when they had disembarked, the people at once  
55 recognized Jesus; they hurried round all the district and proceeded to carry the sick on their pallets wherever they heard that he  
56 was; whatever village or town or hamlet he went to, they would lay their invalids in the marketplace, begging him to let them touch even the tassel of his robe—and all who touched him recovered.

CHAP.

7 Now the Pharisees gathered to meet him, with some scribes who had come from Jerusalem.

2 They noticed that some of his disciples ate their food with ‘common’ (that is, unwashed)

3 hands. (The Pharisees and all the Jews decline to eat till they wash their hands up to the wrist, in obedience to the tradition of the  
4 elders; they decline to eat what comes from the market till they have washed it; and they have a number of other traditions to keep about washing cups and jugs and  
5 basins [and beds].) Then the Pharisees and scribes put this question to him, “Why do your disciples not follow the tradition of the elders? Why do they take

their food with ‘common’ hands?” He said to them, “Isaiah made a  
6 grand prophecy about you hypocrites—as it is written,

*This people honours me with their lips,*

*but their heart is far away from me :*

*vain is their worship of me, 7  
for the doctrines they teach are but human precepts.*

You drop what God commands  
and hold to human tradition.\*

Yes, forsooth,” he added, “you set aside what God commands, so as to maintain your own tradition.

Thus, Moses said, *Honour your 10  
father and mother*, and, *He who curses his father or mother is to suffer death*. But you say that  
11 if a man tells his father or mother,

‘This money might have been at your service, but it is Korban’ (that is, dedicated to God), he is  
12 exempt, so you hold, from doing anything for his father or mother.

That is repealing the word of God  
13 in the interests of the tradition which you keep up. And you do many things like that.” Then he  
14 called the crowd to him again and said to them, “Listen to me, all of you, and understand this :—

nothing outside a man can defile  
15 him by entering him;

it is what comes from him that defiles him.

If anyone has ears to hear, let  
16 him listen to this.”

Now when he went indoors away  
17 from the crowd, his disciples asked him the meaning of this parabolic saying. He said to them, “So you  
18 do not understand, either? Do you not see how nothing outside a man can defile him by entering him?

\* Omitting βαπτισμους ξεστών και ποτηρίων και άλλα παρόμοια τοιαῦτα πολλά ποιείτε.

## S. MARK VIII

19 It does not enter his heart but  
his belly and passes from that into  
the drain" (thus he pronounced  
20 all food clean). "No," he said,  
"it is what comes from a man, that  
21 is what defiles him. From within,  
from the heart of man, the designs  
22 of evil come: sexual vice, stealing,  
murder, adultery, lust, malice,  
deceit, sensuality, envying, slander,  
23 arrogance, recklessness, all these  
evils issue from within and they  
defile a man."

24 Leaving there, he went away to  
the territory of Tyre and Sidon.  
He went into a house and wished  
no one to know of it, but he could  
25 not escape notice; a woman heard  
of him, whose daughter had an  
unclean spirit, and she came in and  
26 fell at his feet (the woman was a  
pagan, of Syro-phœnician birth)  
begging him to cast the daemon out  
27 of her daughter. He said to her,  
"Let the children be satisfied first  
of all; it is not fair to take the  
children's bread and throw it to  
28 the dogs." She answered him,  
"No, sir, but under the table the  
dogs do pick up the children's  
29 crumbs." He said to her, "Well,  
go your way; the daemon has  
left your daughter, since you have  
30 said that." So she went home  
and found the child lying in  
bed and the daemon gone from  
her.

31 He left the territory of Tyre  
again and passed through Sidon  
to the sea of Galilee, crossing the  
32 territory of Decapolis. And a deaf  
man who stammered was brought  
to him, with the request that he  
33 should lay his hand on him. So  
taking him aside from the crowd  
by himself, he put his fingers into  
the man's ears, touched his tongue  
34 with saliva, and looking up to

heaven with a sigh he said to him,  
"Ephphatha" (which means,  
Open). Then his ears were [at 35  
once] opened and his tongue freed  
from its fetter—he began to speak  
correctly. Jesus forbade them to 36  
tell anyone about it, but the more  
he forbade them the more eagerly  
they made it public; they were 37  
astounded in the extreme, saying,  
"How splendidly he has done every-  
thing! He actually makes the  
deaf hear and the dumb speak!"

CHAP.

IN those days, when a large 8  
crowd had again gathered and  
when they had nothing to eat, he  
called the disciples and said to  
them, "I am sorry for the crowd; 2  
they have been three days with  
me now, and they have nothing  
to eat. If I send them home 3  
without food they will faint on the  
road. Besides, some of them have  
come a long way." His disciples 4  
replied, "Where can one get loaves  
to satisfy them in a desert spot  
like this?" He asked them, "How 5  
many loaves have you got?"  
They said, "Seven." So he or- 6  
dered the crowd to recline on the  
ground, and taking the seven  
loaves he gave thanks, broke them,  
and gave them to his disciples to  
serve out. They served them out  
to the crowd, and as they also had 7  
a few small fish, he blessed them  
too and told the disciples to serve  
them out as well. So the people 8  
ate and were satisfied, and they  
picked up seven baskets of fragments  
which were left over. (There were 9  
about four thousand of them.)  
Then he sent them away, embarked 10  
at once in the boat with his  
disciples, and went to the district  
of Dalmanutha.



## S. MARK VIII

11 Now the Pharisees came out and  
started to argue with him, asking  
him for a Sign from heaven, by  
12 way of tempting him. But he  
sighed in spirit and said,

“Why does this generation de-  
mand a Sign?”

I tell you truly, no Sign shall  
be given this generation.”

13 Then he left them, embarked again,  
and went away to the opposite  
side.

14 They had forgotten to bring any  
bread, and had only one loaf with  
15 them in the boat. So he cautioned  
them, “See and beware of the  
leaven of the Pharisees and the  
16 leaven of Herod.” “Leaven?”  
they argued to themselves, “we  
17 have no bread at all.” He noted  
this and said to them, “Why do  
you argue you have no bread? Do  
you not see, do you not understand,  
even yet? Are you still dull of  
heart?”

18 You have eyes, do you not  
see?  
you have ears, do you not  
hear?

19 Do you not remember how many  
baskets full of fragments you picked  
up when I broke the five loaves  
for the five thousand?” They  
20 said, “Twelve.” “And how many  
basketfuls of fragments did you  
pick up when I broke the seven  
loaves for the four thousand?”  
21 They said, “Seven.” “Do you  
not understand now?” he said.

22 Then they reached Bethsaida.  
A blind man was brought to him  
with the request that he would  
23 touch him. So he took the blind  
man by the hand and led him out-  
side the village; then, after spitting  
on his eyes, he laid his hands on  
him and asked him, “Do you see  
24 anything?” He began to see and

said, “I can make out people, for  
I see them as large as trees, mov-  
ing.” At this he laid his hands on 25  
his eyes once more, and the man  
stared in front of him; he was  
quite restored and saw everything  
distinctly. And Jesus sent him 26  
home, saying, “Do not go even  
into the village.”

Then Jesus and his disciples set 27  
off for the villages of Caesarea  
Philippi; and on the road he  
inquired of his disciples, “Who do  
people say I am?” “John the 28  
Baptist,” they told him, “though  
some say Elijah and others say  
you are one of the prophets.”  
So he inquired of them, “And 29  
who do you say I am?” Peter  
replied, “You are the Christ.”  
Then he forbade them to tell any- 30  
one about him. And he proceeded 31  
to teach them that the Son of  
man had to endure great suffering,  
to be rejected by the elders and  
the high priests and the scribes, to  
be killed and after three days to  
rise again; he spoke of this quite 32  
freely. Peter took him and began  
to reprove him for it, but he turned 33  
on him and noticing his disciples  
reproved Peter, telling him, “Get  
behind me, you Satan! Your out-  
look is not God’s but man’s.”  
Then he called the crowd to him 34  
with his disciples and said to them,  
“If anyone wishes to follow me,  
let him deny himself, take up his  
cross, and so follow me;

for whoever wants to save his 35  
life will lose it,  
and whoever loses his life for  
my sake and the gospel’s  
will save it.

What profit is it for a man to gain 36  
the whole world and to forfeit his  
soul? What could a man offer as 37  
an equivalent for his soul?



## S. MARK IX

38 Whoever is ashamed of me and my words in this disloyal and sinful generation, the Son of man will be ashamed of him when he comes in the glory of his Father with the  
 9 holy angels. I tell you truly," he said to them, "there are some of those standing here who will not taste death till they see the coming of God's Reign with power."  
 2 Six days afterwards Jesus took Peter, James and John, and led them up a high hill by themselves alone; in their presence he was  
 3 transfigured, and his clothes glistened white, vivid white, such as no fuller on earth could bleach them.  
 4 And Elijah along with Moses appeared to them, and conversed  
 5 with Jesus. So Peter addressed Jesus, saying, "Rabbi, it is a good thing we are here; let us put up three tents, one for you, one for  
 6 Moses, and one for Elijah" (for he did not know what to say, they  
 7 were so terrified). Then a cloud came overshadowing them, and from the cloud a voice said, "This is my Son, the Beloved, listen to  
 8 him." And suddenly looking round they saw no one there except  
 9 Jesus all alone beside them. As they went down the hill, he forbade them to tell anyone what they had seen, till such time as the Son of  
 10 man rose from the dead. This order they obeyed, debating with themselves what 'rising from the  
 11 dead' meant. So they put this question to him, "Why do the [Pharisees and] scribes say that Elijah has to come first?" He  
 12 said to them, "Elijah does come first, to restore all things; but what is written about the Son of man as well? This, that he is to endure great suffering and be rejected.

As for Elijah, I tell you he has 13 come already, and they have done to him whatever they pleased—as it is written of him." When 14 they reached the disciples they saw a large crowd round them, and some scribes arguing with them. On seeing him the whole crowd 15 was thunderstruck and ran to greet him. Jesus asked them, "What 16 are you discussing with them?" A man from the crowd answered 17 him, "Teacher, I brought my son to you; he has a dumb spirit, and whenever it seizes him it throws 18 him down, and he foams at the mouth and grinds his teeth. He is wasting away with it; so I told your disciples to cast it out, but they could not." He answered 19 them, "O faithless generation, how long must I still be with you? how long have I to bear with you? Bring him to me." So they brought 20 the boy to him, and when the spirit saw Jesus it at once convulsed the boy; he fell on the ground and rolled about foaming at the mouth. Jesus asked his father, "How long 21 has he been like this?" "From 22 childhood," he said; "it has thrown him into fire and water many a time, to destroy him. If you can do anything, do help us, do have pity on us." Jesus said to him, 23 "'If you can'! Anything can be done for one who believes." At 24 once the father of the boy cried out, "I do believe; help my unbelief." Now as Jesus saw that a 25 crowd was rapidly gathering, he checked the unclean spirit. "Deaf and dumb spirit," he said, "leave him, I command you, and never enter him again." And it did 26 come out, after shrieking aloud and convulsing him violently. The child turned like a corpse, so that

## S. MARK IX

most people said, "he is dead";  
 27 but, taking his hand, Jesus raised  
 28 him and he got up. When he  
 went indoors his disciples asked  
 him in private, "Why could we  
 29 not cast it out?" He said to  
 them, "Nothing can make this  
 kind come out but prayer and  
 fasting."

30 On leaving there they passed  
 through Galilee. He did not want  
 anyone to know of their journey,  
 31 for he was teaching his disciples,  
 telling them that the Son of man  
 would be betrayed into the hands  
 of men, that they would kill him,  
 and that when he was killed he  
 would rise again after three days.  
 32 But they did not understand what  
 he said, and they were afraid to  
 ask him what he meant.

33 Then they reached Capharnahum.  
 And when he was indoors he  
 asked them, "What were you  
 arguing about on the road?"  
 34 They said nothing, for on the road  
 they had been disputing about  
 which of them was the greatest.  
 35 So he sat down and called the  
 twelve. "If anyone wants to be  
 first," he said to them, "he must  
 be last of all and the servant  
 36 of all." Then he took a little  
 child, set it among them, and  
 putting his arms round it said to  
 them,

37 "Whoever receives one of these  
 little ones in my name  
 receives me,  
 and whoever receives me receives  
 not me but him who sent  
 me."

38 John said to him, "Teacher, we  
 saw a man casting out daemons in  
 your name; but he does not follow  
 us, and so we stopped him." Jesus  
 39 said, "Do not stop him; no one  
 who performs any miracle in my

name will be ready to speak evil  
 of me. He who is not against us 40  
 is for us.

Whoever gives you a cup of 41  
 water because you belong to Christ,  
 I tell you truly, he shall not miss  
 his reward.

And whoever is a hindrance to 42  
 one of these little ones who believe,  
 it were better for him to have a  
 great millstone hung round his  
 neck and be thrown into the  
 sea.

If your hand is a hindrance to 43  
 you, cut it off :

better be maimed and get into  
 Life,

than keep your two hands  
 and go to Gehenna, to the  
 fire that is never quenched.

If your foot is a hindrance to you, 45  
 cut it off :

better get into Life a cripple,  
 than keep your two feet and  
 be thrown into Gehenna.

If your eye is a hindrance to you, 47  
 tear it out :

better get into God's Realm  
 with one eye,  
 than keep your two eyes  
 and be thrown into  
 Gehenna,

where *their worm never dies* 48  
*and the fire is never put*  
*out.*

Everyone has to be consecrated\* 49  
 by the fire of discipline.

Salt is excellent : 50  
 but if salt is tasteless, how are  
 you to restore its flavour ?

\* The Greek word ἀλίσθησαι literally  
 means 'salted,' the metaphor being  
 taken from the custom of using salt in  
 sacrifices (cp. e.g. Levit. ii. 13; Josephus,  
*Antiquities*, iii. 9. 1). "There is fire to  
 be encountered afterwards if not now;  
 how much better to face it now and by  
 self-sacrifice insure against the future"  
 (Professor Menzies).



Let there be 'salt between you';  
be at peace with one another."

CHAP.

10 THEN he left and went to the territory of Judaea over the Jordan. Crowds gathered to him again, and again he taught them as usual.  
2 Now some Pharisees came up and asked him if a man was allowed to divorce his wife. This was to tempt him. So he replied, "What did Moses lay down for you?"  
4 They said, "Moses permitted a man to divorce her by writing out a 5 separation notice." Jesus said to them, "He wrote you that command on account of the hardness 6 of your hearts. But from the beginning, when God created the world,

*Male and female, He created them :*

7 *hence a man shall leave his father and mother,*

8 *and the pair shall be one flesh.*

So they are no longer two, but one 9 flesh. What God has joined, then, 10 man must not separate." Indoors, the disciples again asked him about 11 this, and he said to them, "Whoever divorces his wife and marries another woman is an adulterer to 12 the former, and she is an adulteress if she divorces her husband and marries another man."

13 Now people brought children for him to touch them, and the 14 disciples checked them; but Jesus was angry when he saw this, and he said to them, "Let the children come to me, do not stop them: the Realm of God belongs to such as 15 these. I tell you truly, whoever will not submit to the Reign of God like a child will never get into it 16 at all." Then he put his arms round them, laid his hands on them and blessed them.

17 As he went out on the road a man

ran up and knelt down before him.

"Good teacher," he asked, "what must I do to inherit life eternal?"

Jesus said to him, "Why call me 18 'good'? No one is good, no one but God. You know the com- 19 mands: *do not kill, do not commit adultery, do not steal, do not bear false witness, do not defraud, honour your father and mother.*" "Teach- 20 er," he said, "I have observed all these commands from my youth."

Jesus looked at him and loved 21 him. "There is one thing you want," he said; "go and sell all you have; give the money to the poor and you will have treasure in heaven; then come, take up the cross, and follow me." But his 22 face fell at that, and he went sadly away, for he had great possessions. Jesus looked round 23 and said to his disciples, "How difficult it is for those who have money to get into the Realm of God!" The disciples were 24 amazed at what he said; so he repeated, "My sons, how difficult it is [for those who rely on money] to get into the Realm of God! It 25 is easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich man to get into the Realm of God." They 26 were more astounded than ever; they said to themselves, "Then who ever can be saved?" Jesus looked 27 at them and said, "For men it is impossible, but not for God: anything is possible for God." Peter 28 began, "Well, we have left our all and followed you." Jesus said, 29 "I tell you truly, no one has left home or brothers or sisters or mother or father or children or lands for my sake and for the sake of the gospel, who does not get a 30 hundred times as much—in this present world homes, brothers,



## S. MARK XI

sisters, mothers, children and lands, together with persecutions, and in the world to come life eternal.

- 31 Many who are first will be last, and many who are last will be first."
- 32 They were on the way up to Jerusalem, Jesus walking in front of them; the disciples were in dismay and the company who followed were afraid. So once again he took the twelve aside and proceeded to tell them what was going to happen to himself. "We are going up to Jerusalem," he said, "and the Son of man will be betrayed to the high priests and scribes; they will sentence him to death and hand him over to the
- 34 Gentiles, who will mock him, spit on him, scourge him, and kill him; then after three days he will rise again."
- 35 James and John, the sons of Zebedaeus, came up to him saying, "Teacher, we want you to do whatever we ask you." So he said, "What do you want me to do for
- 37 you?" They said to him, "Give us seats, one at your right hand and one at your left hand, in your glory." Jesus said, "You do not know what you are asking. Can you drink the cup I have to drink, or undergo the baptism I have to
- 39 undergo?" They said to him, "We can." Jesus said, "You shall drink the cup I have to drink and undergo the baptism I have
- 40 to undergo; but it is not for me to grant seats at my right or my left hand—these belong to the men for whom they have been destined."
- 41 Now when the ten heard of this, they burst into anger at James and
- 42 John; so Jesus called them and said, "You know the so-called rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them,

and their great men overbear them :

not so with you. 43

Whoever wants to be great among you must be your servant, and whoever of you wants to be 44 first must be your slave; for the Son of man himself has 45 not come to be served but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many."

Then they reached Jericho; and 46 as he was leaving Jericho with his disciples and a considerable crowd, the son of Timaeus, Bartimaeus, the blind beggar who sat beside the road, heard it was Jesus of Nazaret. 47 So he started to shout, "Son of David ! Jesus ! have pity on me." A number of the people checked him 48 and told him to be quiet, but he shouted all the more, "Son of David, have pity on me ! " Jesus 49 stopped and said, "Call him." Then they called the blind man and told him, "Courage ! Get up, he is calling you." Throwing off his 50 cloak he jumped up and went to Jesus. Jesus spoke to him and 51 said, "What do you want me to do for you?" The blind man said, "Rabboni, I want to regain my sight." Then Jesus said, "Go, 52 your faith has made you well;" and he regained his sight at once and followed Jesus along the road.

CHAP.

Now when they came near Jeru- 11 salem, near Bethphage and Bethany, at the Hill of Olives, he despatched two of his disciples, saying 2 to them, "Go to the village in front of you. As soon as you enter it you will find a colt tethered, on which no one has ever sat; untether it and bring it here. If any- 3

## S. MARK XI

one asks you, 'Why are you doing that?' say, 'The Lord needs it, and he will send it back immediately.'" Off they went and found a colt tethered outside a door in the street. They untethered it; but some of the bystanders said to them, "What do you mean by untethering that colt?" So they answered as Jesus had told them, and the men allowed them to go. Then they brought the colt to Jesus, and when they had put their clothes on it Jesus seated himself. Many also spread their clothes on the road, while others strewed leaves cut from the fields; and both those in front and those who followed shouted,

*"Hosanna!*

*Blessed be he who comes in the Lord's name!*

Blessed be the Reign to come, our father David's reign.

*Hosanna in high heaven!"*

Then he entered Jerusalem, entered the temple, and looked round at everything; but as it was late he went away with the twelve to Bethany.

Next day, when they had left Bethany, he felt hungry, and noticing a fig tree in leaf some distance away he went to see if he could find anything on it; but when he reached it he found nothing but leaves, for it was not the time for figs. Then he said to it, "May no one ever eat fruit from you after this!" The disciples heard him say it.

Then they came to Jerusalem, and entering the temple he proceeded to drive out those who were buying and selling inside the temple; he upset the tables of the money-changers and the stalls of those who sold doves, and would

not allow anyone to carry a vessel through the temple; also he taught them. "Is it not written," he asked, "*My house shall be called a house of prayer for all nations? You have made it a den of robbers.*" This came to the ears of the scribes and high priests, and they tried to get him put to death, for they were afraid of him. But the multitude were all astounded at his teaching. And when evening came he went outside the city.

Now as they passed in the morning they noticed the fig tree had withered to the root. Then Peter remembered. "Rabbi," he said, "there is the fig tree you cursed, all withered!" Jesus answered them, "Have faith in God! I tell you truly, whoever says to this hill, 'Take and throw yourself into the sea,' and has not a doubt in his mind but believes that what he says will happen, he will have it done. So I tell you, whatever you pray for and ask, believe you have got it and you shall have it. Also, whenever you stand up to pray, if you have anything against anybody, forgive him, so that your Father in heaven may forgive you your trespasses."

Once more they came to Jerusalem. And as he was walking within the temple the high priests and scribes and elders came and asked him, "What authority have you for acting in this way? Who gave you authority to act in this way?" Jesus said to them, "I am going to ask you a question. Answer this, and I will tell you what authority I have for acting as I do. What about the baptism of John? Was it from heaven or from men?" Now they argued to themselves, "[What are



32 we to say?] If we say, 'From heaven,' he will ask, 'Then why did you not believe him.' No, let us say, 'From men'—but they were afraid of the multitude, for the people all held John had been really  
33 a prophet. So they replied to Jesus, "We do not know." Jesus said to them, "No more will I tell you what authority I have for acting as I do."

CHAP.

12 THEN he proceeded to address them in parables. "A man *planted a vineyard, fenced it round, dug a trough for the winepress, and built a tower*; then he leased it to vine-dressers and went abroad. When the season came round he sent a servant to the vinedressers to collect from the vinedressers some of the  
3 produce of the vineyard, but they took and flogged him and sent him  
4 off with nothing. Once more he sent them another servant; him they knocked on the head and in-  
5 sulted. He sent another, but they killed him. And so they treated many others; some they flogged  
6 and some they killed. He had still one left, a beloved son; he sent him to them last, saying, 'They  
7 will respect my son.' But these vinedressers said to themselves, 'Here is the heir; come on, let us  
8 kill him, and the inheritance will be our own.' So they took and killed him, and threw him outside  
9 the vineyard. Now what will the owner of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the vine-dressers, and he will give the vine-  
10 yard to others. Have you not even read this scripture?—

*The stone that the builders rejected is the chief stone now of the corner :*

*this is the doing of the Lord, and a wonder to our eyes."* 11  
Then they tried to get hold of him, 12 but they were afraid of the multitude. They knew he had meant the parable for them.

So they left him and went away. But they sent some of the Pharisees 13 and Herodians to him for the purpose of catching him with a question. They came up and said to 14 him, "Teacher, we know you are sincere and fearless; you do not court human favour, you teach the Way of God honestly. Is it right to pay taxes to Caesar or not? Are we to pay, or are we not to pay?" But he saw their trick and said to 15 them, "Why tempt me? Bring me a shilling. Let me see it." So they brought one. He said, 16 "Whose likeness, whose inscription is this?" "Caesar's," they said. Jesus said to them, "Give Caesar 17 what belongs to Caesar, give God what belongs to God." He astonished them.

Sadducees, men who hold there 18 is no resurrection, also came up and put a question to him. "Teacher," 19 they said, "Moses has written this law for us, that *if a man's brother dies leaving a wife but no child, his brother is to take the woman and raise offspring for his brother*. Now there 20 were seven brothers. The first married a wife and died leaving no offspring: the second took her 21 and died without leaving any offspring: so did the third: none of 22 the seven left any offspring. Last of all the woman died too. At the 23 resurrection, when they rise, whose wife will she be? She was wife to the seven of them." Jesus said to 24 them, "Is this not where you go wrong?—you understand neither the scriptures nor the power of God.



## S. MARK XIII

25 When people rise from the dead they neither marry nor are married, they are like the angels in heaven.  
 26 As for the dead being raised, have you not read in the book of Moses, at the passage on the Bush, how God said to him, *I am the God of Abraham and the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob?* He is not the God of dead people but of living. You are far wrong."

28 Then a scribe came up, who had listened to the discussion. Knowing Jesus had given them an apt answer, he put this question to him, "What is the chief of all the commands?"  
 29 Jesus replied, "The chief one is: *Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord, and you must love the Lord your God with your whole heart, with your whole soul, with your whole mind, and with your whole strength.* The second is this: *You must love your neighbour as yourself.* There is no other command greater than these." The scribe said to him, "Right, teacher! You have truly said, He is One, and there is none else but Him. Also, to love him with the whole heart, with the whole understanding, and with the whole strength, and to love one's neighbour as oneself—that is far more than all holocausts and sacrifices."  
 34 Jesus noted his intelligent answer and said to him, "You are not far off the Realm of God." After that no one ventured to put any more questions to him.

35 And as Jesus taught in the temple he asked, "How can the scribes say that the Christ is David's son?"  
 36 David himself said in the holy Spirit,

*The Lord said to my Lord, 'Sit at my right hand,  
 till I make your enemies a footstool for your feet.'*

David here calls him *Lord*. Then 37 how can he be his son?"

Now the mass of the people listened with delight to him. And in 38 the course of his teaching he said, "Beware of the scribes! They like to walk about in long robes, to get saluted in the marketplaces, to secure the front seats in the syna- 39 gogues and the best places at banquets; they prey upon the 40 property of widows and offer long unreal prayers. All the heavier will their sentence be!"

Sitting down opposite the treas- 41 ury, he watched the people putting their money into the treasury. A number of the rich were putting in large sums, but a poor widow came 42 up and put in two little coins amounting to a halfpenny. And 43 he called his disciples and said to them, "I tell you truly, this poor widow has put in more than all who have put their money into the treasury; for they have all put in 44 a contribution out of their surplus, but she has given out of her neediness all she possessed, her whole living."

CHAP.

As he went out of the temple one 13 of his disciples said to him, "Look, teacher, what a size these stones and buildings are!" Jesus said to 2 him, "You see these great buildings? Not a stone shall be left on another, without being torn down."

And as he sat on the Hill of Olives 3 opposite the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him in private, "Tell us, when is this 4 to happen? What will be the sign for all this to be accomplished?" So Jesus began: "Take care that 5 no one misleads you:—many will 6 come in my name saying, 'I am he,'

## S. MARK XIII

7 and mislead many. And when you hear of wars and rumours of war, do not be alarmed; *these have to come*, but it is not the end yet. For *nation will rise against nation, and realm against realm*; there will be earthquakes here and there, and famines too. All that is but the beginning of the trouble. Look to yourselves. Men will hand you over to Sanhedrins and you will be flogged in synagogues and brought before governors and kings for my sake, to testify to them.

10 (Ere the end, the gospel must be preached to all nations.) Now when they carry you off to trial, do not worry beforehand about what you are to say; say whatever comes to your lips at the moment, for he who speaks is not you but the holy

12 Spirit. Brother will betray brother to death, the father will betray his child, *children will rise against their parents* and kill them, and you will be hated by all men on account of my name; but he will be saved who holds out to the very end.

14 But whenever you see *the appalling Horror* standing where he has no right to stand (let the reader note this), then let those who are

15 in Judaea fly to the hills; a man on the housetop must not go down into the house or go inside to fetch

16 anything out of his house, and a man in the field must not turn

17 back to get his coat. Woe to women with child and to women who give suck in those days!

18 Pray it may not be winter when

19 it comes, for those days will be days of *misery, the like of which has never been from the beginning of God's creation until now*—no and

20 never shall be. Had not the Lord cut short those days, not a soul

would be saved alive; but he has cut them short for the sake of the elect whom he has chosen.

If anyone tells you at that time, 21 'Look, here is the Christ,' or, 'Look, there he is,' do not believe it; for 22 false Christs and *false prophets will rise and perform signs and wonders* to mislead the elect if they can. Now take care! I am telling you 23 of it all beforehand.

But when that misery is past, 24 in those days,

*the sun will be darkened*

*and the moon will not yield her light,*

*the stars will drop from heaven, 25 and the orbs of the heavens will be shaken.*

Then they will see *the Son of man* 26 *coming in the clouds* with great power and glory. Then he will 27 despatch his angels and muster the elect from the four winds, from the verge of earth to the verge of heaven.

Let the fig tree teach you a 28 parable. As soon as its branches turn soft and put out leaves, you know summer is at hand; so, when- 29 ever you see this happen, you may be sure He is at hand, at the very door.

I tell you truly, the present 30 generation will not pass away till all this happens. Heaven and earth 31 will pass away, but my words never.

Now no one knows anything 32 about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, not even the Son, but only the Father. Take 33 care, keep awake and pray; you never know the time. It is like a 34 man leaving his house to go abroad; he puts his servants in charge, each with his work to do, and he orders the porter to keep watch. Watch 35



## S. MARK XIV

then, for you never know when the Lord of the House will come, in the late evening or at midnight or at cock-crow or in the morning.

36 Watch, in case he comes suddenly and finds you asleep. Watch: I  
37 say it to you, and I say it to all."

CHAP.

14 THE passover and the festival of unleavened bread fell two days later; so the high priests and scribes were trying how to get hold of him by craft and have him put 2 to death. "Only," they said, "it must not be during the festival; that would mean a popular riot."

3 Now when he was at Bethany in the house of Simon the leper, lying at table, a woman came up with an alabaster flask of pure nard perfume, which had cost a great sum; the flask she broke and poured the perfume over his head. This angered 4 some of those present. "What was the use of wasting perfume like 5 this? This perfume might have been sold for over three hundred shillings, and the poor might have got that." So they upbraided her.

6 But Jesus said, "Let her alone. Why are you annoying her? She has done a beautiful thing to me. 7 The poor you always have beside you, and you can be kind to them whenever you want; but you will not always have me. She has done all she could—she has anticipated the perfuming of my body for 9 burial. I tell you truly, wherever the gospel is preached all over the world, men will speak of what she has done in memory of her."

10 Then Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went to the high priests to 11 betray him to them. They were delighted to hear it, and promised

to pay him for it. Meantime he sought a good opportunity for betraying him.

On the first day of unleavened 12 bread (the day when the paschal lamb was sacrificed) his disciples said to him, "Where do you want us to go and prepare for you to eat the passover?" So he despatched 13 two of his disciples, telling them, "Go into the city and you will meet a man carrying a water-jar; follow him, and whatever house he 14 goes into, tell the owner that the Teacher says, 'Where is my room, that I may eat the passover there with my disciples?' He will show 15 you a large room upstairs, with couches spread, all ready; prepare the passover for us there." The 16 disciples went away into the city and found it was as he had told them. So they prepared the passover, and when evening fell he 17 arrived along with the twelve. As 18 they were at table eating, Jesus said, "Truly I tell you, one of you is going to betray me, one who is eating with me." They got dis- 19 tressed at this, and said to him one after another, "Surely it is not me?" "Surely it is not me?" "One of the twelve," he told 20 them, "one who is dipping into the same dish as I am. The Son of 21 man goes the road that the scripture has described for him, but woe to the man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! Better that man had never been born!" And as they 22 were eating he took a loaf and after the blessing he broke and gave it to them, saying, "Take this, it means my body." He also took a cup and 23 after thanking God he gave it to them, and they all drank of it; he said to them, "This means my 24 covenant-blood which is shed for



## S. MARK XIV

25 many; truly I tell you, I will never  
drink the produce of the vine again  
till the day I drink it new within  
the Realm of God."

26 After the hymn of praise they  
27 went out to the Hill of Olives. Jesus  
said to them, "You will all be dis-  
concerted, for it is written: *I will*  
*strike at the shepherd and the sheep*

28 *will be scattered.* But after my  
rising I will precede you to Galilee."

29 Peter said to him, "Though all are  
30 disconcerted, I will not be." Jesus  
said to him, "I tell you truly,  
to-day you will disown me three  
times, this very night, before the  
31 cock crows twice." But he per-  
sisted, "Though I have to die with  
you, I will never disown you."  
And they all said the same.

32 Then they came to a place  
called Gethsemane, and he told  
his disciples, "Sit here till I pray."

33 But he took Peter and James and  
John along with him; and as he  
began to feel appalled and agitated,  
34 he said to them, "*My heart is sad,*  
*sad even to death; stay here and*  
*watch.*" Then he went forward a  
35 little and fell to the earth, praying  
that the hour might pass away

36 from him, if possible. "Abba,  
Father," he said, "Thou canst do  
anything. Take this cup away  
from me. Yet, not what I will but  
what thou wilt." Then he came  
37 and found them asleep; so he said  
to Peter, "Are you sleeping, Simon?  
Could you not watch for a single

38 hour? Watch and pray, all of you,  
so that you may not slip into  
temptation. The spirit is eager

39 but the flesh is weak." Again he  
went away and prayed in the same  
40 words as before; then he returned  
and found them once more asleep,  
for their eyes were heavy. They  
did not know what to say to him.

Then he came for the third time and 41  
said to them, "Still asleep? still  
resting? No more of that! The  
hour has come, here is the Son of  
man betrayed into the hands of  
sinners. Come, get up, here is my 42  
betrayer close at hand." At that 43  
very moment, while he was still  
speaking, Judas [Iscariot] one of  
the twelve came up accompanied  
by a mob with swords and clubs  
who had come from the high priests  
and scribes and elders. Now his 44  
betrayer had given them a signal;  
he said, "Whoever I kiss, that is  
the man. Seize him and get him  
safely away." So when he arrived 45  
he at once went up to him and said,  
"Rabbi [rabbi]," and kissed him.  
Then they laid hands on him and 46  
seized him, but one of the by- 47  
standers drew his sword and struck  
the servant of the high priest, cutting  
off his ear. Jesus turned on them, 48  
saying, "Have you sallied out to  
arrest me like a robber, with swords  
and clubs? Day after day I was 49  
beside you in the temple teaching,  
and you never seized me. How-  
ever, it is to let the scriptures be  
fulfilled."

Then they left him and fled, all 50  
of them; one young man did follow 51  
him, with only a linen sheet thrown  
round his body, but when the 52  
[young] men seized him he fled  
away naked, leaving the sheet be-  
hind him.

They took Jesus away to the 53  
high priest, and all the high priests  
and scribes and elders met there  
with him. Peter followed him at a 54  
distance till he got inside the court-  
yard of the high priest, where he  
sat down with the attendants to  
warm himself at the fire.

Now the high priests and the 55  
whole of the Sanhedrin tried to

secure evidence against Jesus, in order to have him put to death; but  
 56 they could find none, for while many bore false witness against him their  
 57 evidence did not agree. Some got up and bore false witness against  
 58 him, saying, "We heard him say, 'I will destroy this temple made by hands, and in three days I will build another temple not made by  
 59 hands.' But even so the evidence did not agree. So the high priest rose in their midst and asked Jesus, "Have you no reply to make? What about this evidence against you?"  
 61 He said nothing and made no answer. Again the high priest put a question to him. "Are you the Christ?" he said, "the Son of the  
 62 Blessed?" Jesus said, "I am. And, what is more, you will all see *the Son of man sitting at the right hand of the Power and coming with  
 63 the clouds of heaven.*" Then the high priest tore his clothes and cried, "What more evidence do we  
 64 want? You have heard his blasphemy for yourselves. What is your mind?" They condemned him, all of them, to the doom of  
 65 death; and some of them started to spit on him and to blindfold him and buffet him, asking him, "Prophecy." The attendants treated him to cuffs and slaps.  
 66 Now as Peter was downstairs in the courtyard, a maidservant of the high priest came along, and when  
 67 she noticed Peter warming himself she looked at him and said, "You were with Jesus of Nazaret too."  
 68 But he denied it. "I do not know," he said, "I have no idea what you mean." Then he went outside into the passage. The cock crowed.  
 69 Again the maidservant who had noticed him began to tell the by-

standers, "That fellow is one of them." But he denied it again. 70 After a little the bystanders once more said to Peter, "To be sure, you are one of them. Why, you are a Galilean!"\* But he broke 71 out cursing and swearing, "I do not know the man you mean." At 72 that moment the cock crowed for the second time. Then Peter remembered how Jesus had told him, "Before the cock crows twice you will disown me thrice;" and he burst into tears.

Immediately morning came, the 15 high priests held a consultation† with the elders and scribes and all the Sanhedrin, and after binding Jesus they led him off and handed him over to Pilate. Pilate asked 2 him, "Are you the king of the Jews?" He replied, "Certainly." Then the high priest brought many 3 accusations against him, and once 4 more Pilate asked him, "Have you no reply to make? Look at all their charges against you." But, 5 to the astonishment of Pilate, Jesus answered no more. Now at festival time he used to release for them 6 some prisoner whom they begged from him. (There was a man called 7 Bar-Abbas in prison, among the rioters who had committed murder during the insurrection.) So the 8 crowd pressed up and started to ask him for his usual boon. Pilate 9 replied, "Would you like me to release the king of the Jews for you?" (For he knew the high 10 priests had handed him over out of envy.) But the high priests stirred 11 up the crowd to get him to release Bar-Abbas for them instead. Pilate 12 asked them again, "And what am I

\* Omitting [καὶ ἡ λαλίᾳ σου δομοῖται].

† Reading ποιήσαντες instead of ἐτοιμάσαντες.



to do with your so-called king of the  
 13 Jews ? " Whereupon they shouted  
 14 again, " Crucify him." " Why,"  
 said Pilate, " what has he done  
 wrong ? " But they shouted more  
 fiercely than ever, " Crucify him ! "  
 15 So, as Pilate wanted to satisfy the  
 crowd, he released Bar-Abbas for  
 them ; Jesus he handed over to be  
 crucified, after he had scourged him.  
 16 The soldiers took him inside the  
 courtyard (that is, the praetorium)  
 and got all the regiment together ;  
 17 then they dressed him in purple,  
 put on his head a crown of thorns  
 18 which they had plaited, and began  
 to salute him with, " Hail, O king  
 19 of the Jews ! " They struck him on  
 the head with a stick and spat upon  
 him and bent their knees to him in  
 20 homage. Then, after making fun  
 of him, they stripped off the purple,  
 put on his own clothes, and took  
 21 him away to crucify him. They  
 forced Simon a Cyrenian who was  
 passing on his way from the country  
 (the father of Alexander and Rufus)  
 22 to carry his cross, and they led him  
 to the place called Golgotha (which  
 23 means the place of a skull). They  
 offered him wine flavoured with  
 myrrh, but he would not take it.  
 24 Then they crucified him and *dis-*  
*tributed his clothes among them-*  
*selves, drawing lots for them to de-*  
 25 *cide each man's share.* It was nine  
 in the morning when they cruci-  
 26 fied him. The inscription bearing  
 his charge was :

## THE KING OF THE JEWS.

27 They also crucified two robbers  
 along with him, one at his right and  
 29 one at his left.\* Those who passed  
 by scoffed at him, nodding at him

\* Von Soden retains ver. 28 (cp. Luke  
 xxii, 37) : " So the scripture was fulfilled  
 which says, *He was classed among criminals.*"

in derision and calling, " Ha ! You  
 were to destroy the temple and  
 build it in three days ! Come down 30  
 from the cross and save yourself ! "  
 So, too, the high priests made fun of 31  
 him to themselves with the scribes ;  
 " he saved others," they said, " but  
 he cannot save himself ! Let ' the 32  
 Christ,' ' the king of Israel ' come  
 down now from the cross ! Let us  
 see that and we will believe ! "  
 Those who were crucified with him  
 also denounced him.

When twelve o'clock came, dark- 33  
 ness covered the whole land till  
 three o'clock, and at three o'clock 34  
 Jesus gave a loud cry, "*Elôî, Elôî,*  
*lema sabachthaneî*" (which means,  
 My God, my God, why hast thou for-  
 saken me ?) On hearing this some 35  
 of the bystanders said, " Look, he  
 is calling for Elijah." One man ran 36  
 off, soaked a sponge in vinegar, and  
 put it on the end of a stick to give  
 him a drink, saying, " Come on,  
 let us see if Elijah does come to  
 take him down ! " But Jesus gave 37  
 a loud cry and expired. And the 38  
 curtain of the temple was torn in  
 two, from top to bottom. Now 39  
 when the army-captain who stood  
 facing him saw that he expired in  
 this way, he said, " This man was  
 certainly a son of God." There 40  
 were some women also watching at a  
 distance, among them Mary of Mag-  
 dala, Mary the mother of James the  
 younger and of Joses, and Salome,  
 women who had followed him when 41  
 he was in Galilee and waited on  
 him, besides a number of other  
 women who had accompanied him  
 to Jerusalem.

By this time it was evening, and 42  
 as it was the day of Preparation  
 (that is, the day before the sabbath)  
 Joseph of Arimathaea, a councillor 43  
 of good position who himself was



## S. MARK XVI

on the outlook for the Reign of God, ventured to go to Pilate and  
 44 ask for the body of Jesus. Pilate was surprised that he was dead already; he summoned the captain and asked if he had been dead  
 45 some time, and on ascertaining this from the captain he bestowed  
 46 the corpse on Joseph. He, after buying a linen sheet, took him down and swathed him in the linen, laying him in a tomb which had been cut out of the rock and rolling a boulder up against the  
 47 opening of the tomb. Now Mary of Magdala and Mary the mother of Josès noted where he was laid.

CHAP.

16 AND when the sabbath had passed Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought some spices in order to go  
 2 and anoint him; and very early on the first day of the week they went  
 3 to the tomb, after sunrise. They said to themselves, "Who will roll away the boulder for us at the opening of the tomb?" (for it was a  
 4 very large boulder).\* But when they looked they saw the boulder  
 5 had been rolled to one side, and on entering the tomb they saw a youth sitting on the right dressed in a white robe. They were bewildered,  
 6 but he said to them, "Do not be bewildered. You are looking for Jesus of Nazaret, who was crucified? He has risen, he is not here. That is the place where he was laid.  
 7 Go you and tell his disciples and Peter, 'He precedes you to Galilee; you shall see him there, as he told  
 8 you.'" And they fled out of the tomb, for they were seized with terror and beside themselves. They

\* Transposing the second clause of ver. 4 to the end of ver. 3.

said nothing to anyone, for they were afraid of —.†

(a)

Now after he rose early on the 9 first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary of Magdala out of whom he had cast seven daemons. She went and reported it to those 10 who had been with him, as they mourned and wept; but although 11 they heard he was alive and had been seen by her, they would not believe it. After this he appeared in 12 another form to two of them as they were walking on their way to the country. They too went and re- 13 ported it to the rest, but they would not believe them either. After- 14 wards he appeared at table to the eleven themselves and reproached them for their unbelief and dulness of mind, because they had not believed those who saw him risen from the dead. [But they excused themselves, saying, "This age of lawlessness and unbelief lies under the sway of Satan, who will not allow what lies under the unclean spirits ‡ to understand the truth and power of God; therefore," they said to Christ, "reveal your righteousness now." Christ answered them, "The limit of years for Satan's power has now expired, but other terrors are at hand. I was delivered to death on behalf of sinners, § that they might return to the truth and sin no more,

† The following appendix represents a couple of second century attempts to complete the gospel. The passage within brackets in the first of these epilogues originally belonged to it, but was excised for some reason at an early date. Jerome quoted part of it, but the full text has only been discovered quite recently in codex W, the Freer uncial of the gospels.

‡ Or, the unclean things that lie under the control of spirits.

§ The Greek is obscure at this point.

## S. MARK XVI

that they might inherit that glory of righteousness which is spiritual  
15 and imperishable in heaven." And he said to them, "Go to all the world and preach the gospel to every creature :

16 he who believes and is baptized shall be saved,  
but he who will not believe shall be condemned.

17 And for those who believe, these miracles will follow :

they will cast out daemons in my name,  
they will talk in foreign tongues,  
18 they will handle serpents,  
and if they drink any deadly poison, it will not hurt them ;

they will lay hands on the sick and make them well."

Then after speaking to them the 19 Lord Jesus was taken up to heaven and *sat down at the right hand of God*, while they went out and preached 20 everywhere, the Lord working with them and confirming the word by the miracles that endorsed it.

(b)

But they gave Peter and his companions a brief account of all that had been enjoined. And after that, Jesus himself sent out by means of them from east to west the sacred and imperishable message of eternal salvation.

## THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO

### S. LUKE

CHAP.

1 INASMUCH as a number of writers have essayed to draw up a narrative of the established facts in our religion exactly as these have been handed down to us by the original eyewitnesses who were in the service of the Gospel Message, and inasmuch as I have gone carefully over them all myself from the very beginning, I have decided, O Theophilus, to write them out in order for your excellency, to let you know the solid truth of what you have been taught.

5 In the days of Herod king of Judaea there was a priest called Zechariah, who belonged to the division of Abijah; he had a wife who belonged to the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth. 6 They were both just in the sight of God, blameless in their obedience to all the commands and regulations of God; but they had no child, for Elizabeth was barren. Both of them were advanced in years. 8 Now while he was officiating before God in the due course of his division, it fell to him by lot, as was the custom of the priesthood, to enter the sanctuary of the Lord and burn incense, the mass of the people all remaining in prayer outside at the hour of incense. And an angel of the Lord appeared to him, standing on the right side of the altar of incense. When Zech-

ariah saw him he was troubled, and fear fell on him; but the angel 13 said to him, "Fear not, Zechariah, your prayer has been heard; your wife Elizabeth will bear a son to you, and you must call his name John.

It will be joy and gladness for 14 you,

and many will rejoice over his birth:

for he shall be great in the sight 15 of the Lord,

*he will drink neither wine nor strong drink,*

he will be filled with the holy Spirit from his very birth;

he will turn many of the sons 16 of Israel to the Lord their God,

he will go in front of Him with 17 the spirit and power of *Elijah*

*to turn the hearts of fathers to their children,*

turning the disobedient to the wisdom of the just,

to make a people ready and prepared for the Lord."

Zechariah said to the angel, "But 18 how am I to be sure of this? I am an old man myself, and my wife is advanced in years." The 19 angel replied, "I am Gabriel, I stand before God; I have been sent to speak to you and to tell you this good news. But you will be 20 silent and unable to speak till the day this happens, because you have



- not believed what I told you; it will be accomplished, for all that, in due time."
- 21 Now the people were waiting for Zechariah and wondering that he stayed so long inside the sanctuary.
- 22 When he did come out he could not speak to them, so they realized that he had seen a vision in the sanctuary; he made signs to them
- 23 and remained dumb. Then, after his term of service had elapsed, he went home.
- 24 After those days his wife Elizabeth conceived; and for five months she concealed herself.
- 25 "The Lord has done this for me," she said, "he has now deigned to remove my reproach among men."
- 26 In the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent by God to a town
- 27 in Galilee called Nazaret, to a maiden who was betrothed to a man called Joseph, belonging to the house of David. The maiden's
- 28 name was Mary. The angel went in and said to her, "Hail, O favoured one! the Lord be with you!"
- 29 At this she was startled; she thought to herself, whatever can
- 30 this greeting mean? But the angel said to her, "Fear not, Mary, you
- 31 have found favour with God. You are to conceive and bear a son, and you must call his name Jesus.
- 32 He will be great, he will be called the Son of the Most High, and the Lord God will give him *the throne of David* his father;
- 33 *he will reign* over the house of Jacob *for ever*, and to his reign there will be no end."
- 34 "How can this be?" said Mary to the angel, "I have no husband."
- 35 The angel answered her, "The holy

Spirit will come upon you, the power of the Most High will overshadow you; hence what is born *will be called holy*, Son of God. Look, there is your kinswoman 36 Elizabeth! Even she has conceived a son in her old age, and she who was called barren is now in her sixth month; for *with God nothing 37 is ever impossible*." Mary said, 38 "I am here to serve the Lord. Let it be as you have said." Then the angel went away.

In those days Mary started with 39 haste for the hill-country, for a town of Judah; she entered the 40 house of Zechariah and saluted Elizabeth, and when Elizabeth 41 heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leapt in her womb. Then Elizabeth was filled with the holy Spirit; she called out with a loud 42 cry,

"Blessed among women are you,  
and blessed is the fruit of your  
womb!

What have I done to have the 43 mother of my Lord come to me? Why, as soon as the sound of your 44 salutation reached my ears, the babe leapt for joy within my womb. And blessed is she who 45 believed that the Lord's words to her would be fulfilled." Then 46 Mary said

"*My soul magnifies the Lord,*  
*my spirit has joy in God my 47*  
*Saviour:*

for *he has considered the humili- 48*  
*ation of his servant.*

From this time forth all genera-  
tions will call me blessed,  
for He who is Mighty has done 49  
great things for me.

*His name is holy,*  
*his mercy is on generation after 50*  
*generation,*  
*for those who reverence him.*

## S. LUKE II

51 He has done a deed of might  
*with his arm,*  
*he has scattered the proud with*  
*their purposes,*  
 52 *princes he has dethroned and the*  
*poor he has uplifted,*  
 53 *he has satisfied the hungry with*  
*good things and sent the rich*  
*away empty.*  
 54 *He has succoured his servant*  
*Israel,*  
*mindful of his mercy—*  
 55 *as he promised our fathers,*  
*to have mercy on Abraham and*  
*his offspring for ever.”*  
 56 Mary stayed with her about three  
 months and then returned home.  
 57 Now the time for Elizabeth's  
 delivery had elapsed, and she gave  
 58 birth to a son. When her neigh-  
 bours and kinsfolk heard of the  
 Lord's great mercy to her they re-  
 59 joiced with her, and on the eighth  
 day came to circumcise the child.  
 They were going to call it by the  
 60 name of its father Zechariah, but  
 the mother told them, “No, the  
 61 child is to be called John.” They  
 said to her, “None of your family is  
 62 called by that name.” Then they  
 made signs to the father, to find out  
 what he wanted the child to be  
 63 called, and he asked for a writing-  
 tablet and wrote down, “His name  
 is John,” to the astonishment of all.  
 64 Instantly his mouth was opened, his  
 tongue loosed, and he spoke out  
 65 blessing God. Then fear fell on  
 all their neighbours, and all these  
 events were talked of through the  
 whole of the hill-country of Judaea.  
 66 All who heard of it bore it in mind;  
 they said, “Whatever will this  
 child become?” For the hand of  
 the Lord was indeed with him.  
 67 And Zechariah his father was  
 filled with the holy Spirit; he  
 prophesied in these words,

“*Blessed be the Lord the God of 68*  
*Israel,*  
*for he has cared for his people*  
*and wrought them redemp-*  
*tion;*  
*he has raised up a strong saviour 69*  
*for us*  
*in the house of his servant*  
*David—*  
*as he promised of old by the lips 70*  
*of his prophets—*  
*to save us from our foes and from 71*  
*the hand of all who hate us,*  
*to deal mercifully with our fathers 72*  
*and to be mindful of his holy*  
*covenant,*  
*of the oath he swore to Abraham 73*  
*our father,*  
*that freed from fear and from 74*  
*the hand of our foes*  
*we should worship him in holi- 75*  
*ness and uprightness*  
*all our days within his presence.*  
*And you, my child, shall be called 76*  
*a prophet of the Most High;*  
*for you shall go in front of the*  
*Lord to make his ways ready,*  
*to bring his people the knowledge 77*  
*of salvation*  
*through the remission of their*  
*sins—*  
*by the tender mercy of our God, 78*  
*who will make the Dawn visit*  
*us from on high,*  
*to shine on those who sit in dark- 79*  
*ness and in the shadow of*  
*death,*  
*to guide our steps into the way*  
*of peace.”*  
 And the child grew, he became 80  
 strong in the Spirit and remained  
 in the desert till the day when he  
 made his appearance before Israel.

CHAP.

Now in those days an edict was 2  
 issued by Caesar Augustus for a  
 census of the whole world. (This 2



was the first census, and it took place when Quirinius was governor of Syria.) So everyone went to be registered, each at his own town, and as Joseph belonged to the house and family of David he went up from Galilee to Judaea, from the town of Nazaret to David's town called Bethlehem, to be registered along with Mary his wife. She was pregnant, and while they were there the days elapsed for her delivery; she gave birth to her firstborn son, and as there was no room for them inside the khan she wrapped him up and laid him in a stall for cattle. There were some shepherds in the district who were out in the fields keeping guard over their flocks by night; and an angel of the Lord flashed upon them, the glory of the Lord shone all round them. They were terribly afraid, but the angel said to them, "Have no fear. This is good news I am bringing you, news of a great joy that is meant for all the People. To-day you have a saviour born in the town of David, the Lord messiah. And here is a proof for you: you will find a baby wrapped up and lying in a stall for cattle." Then a host of heaven's army suddenly appeared beside the angel extolling God and saying,

14 "Glory to God in high heaven,  
and peace on earth for men whom  
he favours!"

Now when the angels had left them and gone away to heaven, the shepherds said to one another, "Let us be off to Bethlehem to see this thing that the Lord has told us of." So they made haste and discovered Mary and Joseph and the baby lying in the stall for cattle. When they saw this they told people about the word which had

been spoken to them about the child; all who heard it were astonished at the story of the shepherds, and as for Mary, she treasured it all up and mused upon it. Then the shepherds went away back, glorifying and extolling God for all they had heard and seen as they had been told they would.

When the eight days had passed for his circumcision, he was named Jesus—the name given by the angel before he had been conceived in the womb.

When the days for their purification in terms of the Mosaic law had elapsed, they brought him up to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord (as it is written in the law of the Lord: *every male that opens the womb must be considered consecrated to the Lord*) and also to offer the sacrifice prescribed in the law of the Lord, *a pair of turtledoves or two young pigeons*. Now there was a man in Jerusalem called Symeon, an upright and devout man, who was on the outlook for the Consolation of Israel. The holy Spirit was upon him; indeed it had been revealed to him by the holy Spirit that he was not to see death before he had seen the Lord messiah. By an inspiration of the Spirit he came to the temple, and when the parents of the child Jesus carried him in to perform the customary regulations of the law for him, then Symeon took him in his arms, blessed God, and said,

"Now, Master, thou canst let thy servant go,  
and go in peace, as thou didst promise;  
for mine eyes have seen thy saving power  
which thou hast prepared before  
the face of all the peoples,



32 *to be a light of revelation for the*  
*Gentiles*  
*and a glory to thy people Israel."*

33 His father and mother were astonished at these words about him,

34 but Symeon blessed them, and to his mother Mary he said, "This child is destined for the downfall as well as for the rise of many a one in Israel; destined to be a Sign for man's attack—to bring out the

35 secret aims of many a heart. And your own soul will be pierced by a spear."

36 There was also a prophetess, Hannah the daughter of Phanuel, who belonged to the tribe of Asher; she was advanced in years, having lived seven years with her husband

37 after her girlhood and having been a widow for eighty-four years. She was never away from the temple; night and day she worshipped,

38 fasting and praying. Now at that very hour she came up, and she offered praise to God and spoke of him to all who were on the outlook for the redemption of Jerusalem.

39 When they had finished all the regulations of the law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee, to their

40 own town of Nazaret. And the child grew and became strong; he was filled with wisdom, and the

41 favour of God was on him. Every year his parents used to travel to Jerusalem at the passover festival;

42 and when he was twelve years old they went up as usual to the festival. After spending the full number of days they came back, but

43 the boy Jesus stayed behind in Jerusalem. His parents did not

44 know of this; they supposed he was in the caravan and travelled on for a day, searching for him among their kinsfolk and acquaint-

ances. Then, as they failed to find 45 him, they came back to Jerusalem in search of him. Three days later 46 they found him in the temple, seated among the teachers, listening to them and asking them questions, till all his hearers were 47 amazed at the intelligence of his own answers. When his parents 48 saw him they were astounded, and his mother said to him, "My son, why have you behaved like this to us? Here have your father and I been looking for you anxiously!"

"Why did you look for me?" he 49 said, "Did you not know I had to be at my Father's house?" But 50 they did not understand what he said. Then he went down along 51 with them to Nazaret, and did as they told him. His mother treasured up everything in her heart. And Jesus *increased* in wisdom and 52 in stature, and *in favour with God and man.*

CHAP.

Now in the fifteenth year of the 3 reign of Tiberius Caesar, when Pontius Pilate was governor of Judaea, Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, Philip his brother tetrarch of the country of Ituraea and Trachonitis, and Lysias tetrarch of Abilene, during the high priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas the word of God came to John the son of Zechariah in the desert; and he went into all the Jordan-district 3 preaching a baptism of repentance for the remission of sins—as it is 4 written in the book of the sayings of the prophet Isaiah,

*The voice of one who cries in the desert,*

*'Make the way ready for the Lord, level the paths for him.'*

## S. LUKE III

- 5 *Every valley shall be filled up,  
every hill and mound laid low,  
the crooked made straight,  
the rough roads smooth ;*
- 6 *so shall all flesh see the saving  
power of God.\**
- 7 To the crowds who came out to get baptized by him John said, "You brood of vipers, who told you to flee from the coming Wrath?"
- 8 Now, produce fruits that answer to your repentance, instead of beginning to say to yourselves, 'We have a father in Abraham.' I tell you, God can raise up children for Abraham from these stones!
- 9 The axe is lying all ready at the root of the trees; any tree that is not producing good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire."
- 10 The crowds asked him, "Then
- 11 what are we to do?" He replied, "Let everyone who possesses two shirts share with him who has none, and let him who has food do likewise." Taxgatherers also came to get baptized, and they said to him, "Teacher, what are we to do?"
- 13 He said to them, "Never exact
- 14 more than your fixed rate." Soldiers also asked him, "And what are we to do?" He said to them, "Never extort money, never lay a false charge, but be content with your pay."
- 15 Now as people's expectations were roused and as everybody thought to himself about John,
- 16 "Can he be the Christ," John said to them all,  
"I baptize you with water,  
but after me one who is mightier will come,  
and I am not fit to untie the string of his sandals;  
he will baptize you with the holy Spirit and fire.

His winnowing-fan is in his hand 17  
to purge his threshing-floor,  
to gather the wheat into his granary  
and burn the straw with fire unquenchable."

Thus with many another appeal he 18  
spoke his message to the people. But Herod the tetrarch, who had 19  
been reproved by him for Herodias his brother's wife as well as for all the wickedness that he, Herod, had committed, crowned all by 20  
shutting John up in prison.

Now when all the people had 21  
been baptized and when Jesus had been baptized and was praying, heaven opened and the holy Spirit 22  
descended in bodily form like a dove upon him; and a voice came from heaven,

"Thou art my son, the Beloved,  
to-day have I become thy father."\*

At the outset Jesus was about 23  
thirty years of age; he was the son, as people supposed, of Joseph, the son of Heli, the son of Matthat, the 24  
son of Levi, the son of Melchi, the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph, the son of Mattathias, the son of 25  
Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the son of Naggai, the son 26  
of Maath, the son of Mattathias, the son of Semein, the son of Josech, the son of Joda, the son of 27  
Joanan, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, the son of Neri, the son of Melchi, 28  
the son of Addi, the son of Kosam, the son of Elmadam, the son of Er, the son of Jesus, the son of 29  
Eliezer, the son of Jorim, the son of Matthat, the son of Symeon, the 30

\* Reading ἐγὼ σήμερον γεγέννηκά σε, with D, the Old Latin, Justin, Clement, Tyconius, etc. In the other MSS it has been altered, for harmonistic reasons.



son of Judas, the son of Joseph,  
 31 kim, the son of Jonam, the son of Elia-  
 Menna, the son of Mattatha, the  
 son of Nathan, the son of David,  
 32 the son of Jessai, the son of Jobed,  
 the son of Boaz, the son of Sala,  
 33 the son of Nahshon, the son of  
 Aminadab, the son of Admin, the  
 son of Arni, the son of Hezron, the  
 34 son of Perez, the son of Judah, the  
 son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the  
 son of Abraham, the son of Terah,  
 35 the son of Nachor, the son of Serug,  
 the son of Reu, the son of Peleg, the  
 36 son of Eber, the son of Sala, the  
 son of Kainan, the son of Arphaxad,  
 the son of Shem, the son of Noah,  
 37 the son of Lamech, the son of  
 Methuselah, the son of Enoch, the  
 son of Jared, the son of Maleleel,  
 38 the son of Kainan, the son of Enos,  
 the son of Seth, the son of Adam,  
 the son of God.

CHAP.

4 FROM the Jordan Jesus came back  
 full of the holy Spirit, and for forty  
 days he was led by the Spirit in  
 2 the desert, while the devil tempted  
 him. During these days he ate  
 nothing, and when they were over  
 3 he felt hungry. The devil said to  
 him, "If you are God's son, tell  
 4 this stone to become a loaf." Jesus  
 replied to him, "It is written, *Man*  
 5 *is not to live on bread alone.*" Then  
 he lifted Jesus up and showed him  
 all the realms of the universe in a  
 6 single instant; and the devil said  
 to him, "I will give you all their  
 power and grandeur, for it has  
 been made over to me and I can  
 7 give it to anyone I choose. If you  
 will worship before me, then it shall  
 8 all be yours." Jesus answered  
 him, "It is written, *You must*  
*worship the Lord your God, and serve*

*him alone.*" Then he brought him 9  
 to Jerusalem and placing him on  
 the pinnacle of the temple said to  
 him, "If you are God's son, throw  
 yourself down from this; for it is 10  
 written,

*He will give his angels charge of*  
*you,*

and 11

*They will bear you on their hands,*  
*lest you strike your foot against a*  
*stone."*

Jesus answered him, "It has been 12  
 said, *You shall not tempt the Lord*  
*your God.*" And after exhaust- 13  
 ing every kind of temptation the  
 devil left him till a fit opportunity  
 arrived.

Then Jesus came back in the 14  
 power of the Spirit to Galilee, and  
 the news of him spread over all the  
 surrounding country. He taught 15  
 in their synagogues and was glor-  
 ified by all. Then he came to 16  
 Nazaret, where he had been brought  
 up, and on the sabbath he entered  
 the synagogue as was his custom.  
 He stood up to read the lesson and 17  
 was handed the book of the prophet  
 Isaiah; on opening the book he  
 came upon the place where it was  
 written,

*The Spirit of the Lord is upon* 18  
*me :*

*for he has consecrated me to preach*  
*the gospel to the poor,*  
*he has sent me to proclaim release*  
*for captives*

*and recovery of sight for the*  
*blind,*

*to set free the oppressed,*

*to proclaim the Lord's year of* 19  
*favour.*

Then, folding up the book, he 20  
 handed it back to the attendant and  
 sat down. The eyes of all in the  
 synagogue were fixed on him, and 21  
 he proceeded to tell them that



22 "To-day, this scripture is fulfilled in your hearing." All spoke well of him and marvelled at the gracious words that came from his lips; they said, "Is this not Joseph's son?"  
 23 So he said to them, "No doubt you will repeat to me this proverb, 'Doctor, cure yourself!' 'Do here in your own country all we have heard you did in Capharnahum.'"  
 24 He added, "I tell you truly, no prophet is ever welcome in his  
 25 native place. I tell you for a fact, In Israel there were many widows during the days of Elijah, when the sky was closed for three years and six months, when a great famine came over all the land:  
 26 yet Elijah was not sent to any of these,  
     but only to a widow woman at Zarephath in Sidon.  
 27 And in Israel there were many lepers in the time of the prophet Elisha,  
     yet none of these was cleansed,  
     but only Naaman the Syrian."  
 28 When they heard this, all in the synagogue were filled with rage;  
 29 they rose up, put him out of the town, and brought him to the brow of the hill on which their town was built, in order to hurl him down.  
 30 But he made his way through them and went off.  
 31 Then he went down to Capharnahum, a town of Galilee, and on the sabbath he taught the people;  
 32 they were astounded at his teaching, for his word came with  
 33 authority. Now in the synagogue there was a man possessed by the spirit of an unclean daemon, who  
 34 shrieked aloud, "Ha! Jesus of Nazaret, what business have you with us? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are, you

are God's holy One!" But Jesus 35 checked it, saying, "Be quiet, come out of him." And after throwing him down before them the daemon did come out of him without doing him any harm. Then amazement 36 came over them all; they talked it over among themselves, saying, "What does this mean? He orders the unclean spirits with authority and power, and they come out!" And a report of him 37 spread over all the surrounding country.

When he got up to leave the 38 synagogue he went to the house of Simon. Simon's mother-in-law was laid up with a severe attack of fever, so they asked him about her; he stood over her and checked the 39 fever, and it left her. Then she instantly got up and ministered to them. At sunset all who had 40 any people ill with any sort of disease brought them to him; he laid his hands on everyone and healed them. From many people 41 daemons were also driven out, clamouring aloud, "You are God's son!" But he checked them and refused to let them say anything, as they knew he was the Christ. When day broke he went away out 42 to a lonely spot, but the crowds made inquiries about him, came to where he was, and tried to keep him from leaving them. He an- 43 swered them, "I must preach the glad news of the Reign of God to the other towns as well, for that is what I was sent to do." So he 44 went preaching through the synagogues of Judaea.

Now as the crowd were pressing 5 on him to listen to the word of God, he saw, as he stood beside the lake 2

of Gennesaret, two boats on the shore of the lake; the fishermen had disembarked and were washing their nets. So he entered one of the boats, which belonged to Simon, and asked him to push out a little from the land. Then he sat down and taught the people from the boat. When he stopped speaking, he said to Simon, "Push out to the deep water and lower your nets for a take." Simon replied, "Master, we worked all night and got nothing! However, I will lower the nets at your command." And when they did so, they enclosed a huge shoal of fish, so that their nets began to break. Then they made signals to their mates in the other boat to come and assist them. They came and filled both the boats, till they began to sink. But when Simon Peter saw it he fell at the knees of Jesus, crying, "Lord, leave me; I am a sinful man." For amazement had seized him and all his companions at the take of fish they had caught; as was the case with James and John, the sons of Zebedaeus, who were partners of Simon. Then said Jesus to Simon, "Have no fear; from now your catch will be men." Then they brought the boats to land, and leaving all they followed him.

When he was in one of their towns there was a man full of leprosy who, on seeing Jesus, fell on his face and besought him, "If you only choose, sir, you can cleanse me." So he stretched his hand out and touched him, with the words, "I do choose, be cleansed." And the leprosy at once left him. Jesus ordered him not to say a word to anybody, but to "Go off and show yourself to the priest, and offer whatever

Moses prescribed for your cleansing, to notify men." But the news of him spread abroad more and more; large crowds gathered to hear him and to be healed of their complaints, while he kept in lonely places and prayed.

One day he was teaching, and near him sat Pharisees and doctors of the Law who had come from every village of Galilee and Judaea as well as from Jerusalem. Now the power of the Lord was present for the work of healing. Some men came up carrying a man who was paralysed; they tried to carry him inside and lay him in front of Jesus, but when they could not find any means of getting him in, on account of the crowd, they climbed to the top of the house and let him down through the tiles, mattress and all, among the people in front of Jesus. When he saw their faith he said, "Man, your sins are forgiven you." Then the scribes and Pharisees began to argue, "Who is this blasphemer? Who can forgive sins, who but God alone?" Conscious that they were arguing to themselves, Jesus addressed them, saying, "Why argue in your hearts? Which is the easier thing, to say, 'Your sins are forgiven,' or to say, 'Rise and walk'? But to let you see the Son of man has power on earth to forgive sins"—he said to the paralysed man, "Rise, I tell you, lift your mattress and go home." Instantly he got up before them, lifted what he had been lying on, and went home glorifying God. And all were seized with astonishment; they glorified God and were filled with awe, saying, "We have seen incredible things to-day."

On going outside after this he



noticed a taxgatherer called Levi sitting at the tax-office and said to him, "Follow me"; he rose, left everything and followed him. Levi held a great banquet for him in his house; there was a large company present of taxgatherers and others who were guests along with them. But the Pharisees and their scribes complained to his disciples, "Why do you eat and drink with taxgatherers and sinners?"

Jesus replied to them, "Healthy people have no need of a doctor, but those who are ill : I have not come to call just men but sinners to repentance."

They said to him, "The disciples of John fast frequently and offer prayers, as do the disciples of the Pharisees; but your adherents eat and drink." Jesus said to them,

"Can you make friends at a wedding fast while the bridegroom is beside them? A time will come when the bridegroom is taken from them, and then they will fast at that time."

He also told them a parable :

"No one tears a piece from a new cloak and sews it on an old cloak ;

otherwise he will tear the new cloak,

and the new piece will not match with the old.

No one pours fresh wine into old wineskins ;

otherwise the fresh wine will burst the wineskins,

the wine will be spilt and the wineskins ruined.

No, fresh wine must be poured into new wineskins.

Besides, no one wants new wine [immediately] after drinking old ;

'The old,' he says, 'is better.'"

ONE sabbath it happened that as he was crossing the cornfields his disciples pulled some ears of corn and ate them, rubbing them in their hands. Some of the Pharisees said, "Why are you doing what is not allowed on the sabbath?" But Jesus answered them, "And have you never read what David did when he and his men were hungry? He went into the house of God, took *the loaves of the Presence* and ate them, giving them to his men as well—bread that no one is allowed to eat except the priests." And he said to them, "The Son of man is Lord even over the sabbath."

Another sabbath he happened to go into the synagogue and teach. Now a man was there who had his right hand withered, and the scribes and Pharisees watched to see if he would heal on the sabbath, so as to discover some charge against him. He knew what was in their minds; so he told the man with the withered hand, "Rise and stand forward." He rose and stood before them. Then Jesus said to them, "I ask you, is it right on the sabbath to help or to hurt, to save life or to kill?" And glancing round at them all in anger he said to the man, "Stretch out your hand." He did so, and his hand was quite restored. This filled them with fury, and they discussed what they could do to Jesus.

It was in these days that he went off to the hillside to pray. He spent the whole night in prayer to God, and when day broke he summoned his disciples, choosing twelve of them, to whom he gave the name of 'apostles': Simon (to whom he gave the name of Peter),



## S. LUKE VI

Andrew his brother, James, John,  
 15 Philip, Bartholomew, Matthew,  
 Thomas, James the son of Al-  
 phaeus, Simon (who was called  
 16 'the Zealot'), Judas the son of  
 James, and Judas Iscariot (who  
 17 turned traitor). With them he  
 came down the hill and stood on  
 a level spot. There was a great  
 company of his disciples with him,  
 and a large multitude of people  
 from all Judaea, from Jerusalem,  
 and from the coast of Tyre and  
 Sidon, who had come to hear him  
 and to get cured of their diseases.  
 18 Those who were annoyed with  
 unclean spirits also were healed.  
 19 Indeed the whole of the crowd  
 made efforts to touch him, for  
 power issued from him and cured  
 20 everybody. Then, raising his eyes  
 he looked at his disciples and  
 said :

“Blessed are you poor !  
 the Realm of God is yours.

21 Blessed are you who hunger to-  
 day !  
     you shall be satisfied.  
 Blessed are you who weep to-  
 day !  
     you shall laugh.

22 Blessed are you when men will  
 hate you,  
 when they will excommunicate  
 you and denounce you  
 and defame you as wicked  
 on account of the Son of  
 man ;

23 rejoice on that day and leap  
 for joy !  
 rich is your reward in  
 heaven—  
 for their fathers did the  
 very same to the proph-  
 ets.

24 But woe to you rich folk !  
 you get all the comforts you  
 will ever get.

Woe to you who have your fill 25  
 to-day !

    you will be hungry.

Woe to you who laugh to-day !  
     you will wail and weep.

Woe to you when all men speak 26  
     well of you !

    that is just what their fathers  
     did to the false prophets.

I tell you, my hearers, 27  
     love your enemies, do good to  
     those who hate you :

    bless those who curse you, 28  
     pray for those who abuse  
     you.

If a man strikes you on the 29  
     one cheek,

    offer him the other as well :  
 if anyone takes your coat,  
     do not deny him your shirt  
     as well ;

give to anyone who asks you, 30  
     and do not ask your goods  
     back from anyone who has  
     taken them.

As you would like men to do 31  
     to you,  
     so do to them.

If you love only those who 32  
     love you, what credit is  
     that to you ?

Why, even sinful men love  
     those who love them.

If you help only those who 33  
     help you, what merit is  
     that to you ?

Why, even sinful men do that.

If you only lend to those from 34  
     whom you hope to get  
     something, what credit is  
     that to you ?

Even sinful men lend to one  
     another, so as to get a fair  
     return.

No, you must love your ene- 35  
     mies and help them,  
 you must lend to them without  
     expecting any return ;

- then you will have a rich reward,  
 you will be sons of the Most High—  
 for he is kind even to the ungrateful and the evil.
- 36 Be merciful,  
 as your Father is merciful.
- 37 Also, judge not, and you will not be judged yourselves : condemn not, and you will not be condemned : pardon, and you will be pardoned yourselves :
- 38 give, and you will have ample measure given you— they will pour into your lap measure pressed down, shaken together, and running over ;  
 for the measure you deal out to others will be dealt back to yourselves.”
- 39 He also told them a parabolic word :  
 “ Can one blind man lead another ?  
 will they not both fall into a pit ?
- 40 A scholar is not above his teacher :  
 but if he is perfectly trained he will be like his teacher.
- 41 Why do you note the splinter in your brother's eye and fail to see the plank in your own eye ?
- 42 How dare you say to your brother, ‘ Brother, let me take out the splinter that is in your eye,’ and you never notice the plank in your own eye ? You hypocrite ! take the plank out of your own eye first, and then you will see properly to take out the splinter in your brother's eye.
- 43 No sound tree bears rotten fruit, nor again does a rotten tree bear sound fruit :

each tree is known by its 44 fruit.

Figs are not gathered from thorns, and grapes are not plucked from a bramble-bush.

The good man produces good 45 from the good stored in his heart,  
 and the evil man evil from his evil :

for a man's mouth utters what his heart is full of.

Why call me, ‘ Lord, Lord ! ’ 46 and obey me not ? Everyone who 47 comes to me and listens to my words and acts upon them, I will show you whom he is like. He is 48 like a man engaged in building a house, who dug deep down and laid his foundation on the rock ; when a flood came, the river dashed against that house but could not shake it, for it had been well built. He who has listened and has not 49 obeyed is like a man who built a house on the earth with no foundation ; the river dashed against it and it collapsed at once, and the ruin of that house was great.”

CHAP.

WHEN he had finished what he 7 had to say in the hearing of the people, he went into Capharnahum.

Now there was an army-captain 2 who had a servant ill whom he valued very highly. This man was at the point of death ; so, when the captain heard about Jesus, he sent some Jewish elders to him, asking him to come and make his servant well. When they reached Jesus 4 they asked him earnestly to do this. “ He deserves to have this favour from you,” they said, “ for 5 he is a lover of our nation ; it was he who built our synagogue.” So 6

Jesus went with them. But he was not far from the house when the captain sent some friends to tell him, "Do not trouble yourself, sir, I am not fit to have you under  
 7 my roof, and so I did not consider myself fit even to come to you. Just say the word, and let my  
 8 servant be cured. For though I am a man under authority myself, I have soldiers under me; I tell one man to go, and he goes, I tell another to come, and he comes, I tell my servant, 'Do this,' and  
 9 he does it." When Jesus heard this he marvelled at him, and turning to the crowd that followed he said, "I tell you, I have never met faith like this anywhere even  
 10 in Israel." Then the messengers went back to the house and found the sick servant was quite well.  
 11 It was shortly afterwards that he made his way to a town called Nain, accompanied by his disciples  
 12 and a large crowd. Just as he was near the gate of the town, there was a dead man being carried out; he was the only son of his mother, and she was a widow. A large crowd from the town were with  
 13 her. And when the Lord saw her, he felt pity for her and said to her,  
 14 "Do not weep." Then he went forward and touched the bier; the bearers stopped, and he said, "Young man, I bid you rise."  
 15 Then the corpse sat up and began to speak; and Jesus gave him  
 16 back to his mother. All were seized with awe and glorified God. "A great prophet has appeared among us," they said, "God has  
 17 visited his people." And this story of Jesus spread through the whole of Judaea and all the surrounding country.  
 18 John's disciples reported all this

to him. So John summoned two 19 of his disciples and sent them to ask the Lord, "Are you the Coming One? Or are we to look out for someone else?" When 20 the men reached Jesus they said, "John the Baptist has sent us to you to ask if you are the Coming One or if we are to look out for someone else?" Jesus at that moment was 21 healing many people of diseases and complaints and evil spirits; he also bestowed sight on many blind folk. So he replied, "Go and 22 report to John what you have seen and heard; that *the blind see*, the lame walk, lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, and *to the poor the gospel is preached*. And blessed is he who is repelled 23 by nothing in me!" When John's 24 messengers had gone, he proceeded to speak to the crowds about John : "What did you go out to the desert to see?

A reed swayed by the wind?

Come, what did you go out to 25 see?

A man arrayed in soft robes?

Those who are gorgeously dressed and luxurious live in royal palaces.

Come, what did you go out to 26 see? A prophet?

Yes, I tell you, and far more than a prophet.

This is he of whom it is written, 27 *Here I send my messenger before your face,*

*to prepare the way for you.*

I tell you, among the sons of 28 women there is none greater than John, and yet the least in the Realm of God is greater than he is." (On hearing this all the people and the taxgatherers acknowledged the justice of God, as they had been baptized with the baptism of John ;



30 but the Pharisees and jurists, who had refused his baptism, frustrated God's purpose for themselves.)

31 "To what then shall I compare the men of this generation?

What are they like?

32 Like children sitting in the marketplace and calling to one another,

'We piped to you and you would not dance, we lamented and you would not weep.'

33 For John the Baptist has come, eating no bread and drinking no wine, and you say, 'He has a devil';

34 the Son of man has come eating and drinking, and you say, 'Here is a glutton and a drunkard, a friend of taxgatherers and sinners!'

35 Nevertheless, Wisdom is vindicated by all her children."

36 One of the Pharisees asked him to dinner, and entering the house of the Pharisee he reclined at table.

37 Now there was a woman in the town who was a sinner, and when she found out that Jesus was at table in the house of the Pharisee she brought an alabaster flask of perfume and stood behind him at his feet in tears; her tears began to wet his feet, so she wiped them with the hair of her head, pressed kisses on them, and anointed them

39 with the perfume. When his host the Pharisee noticed this, he said to himself, "If he was a prophet he would know what sort of a woman this is who is touching him; 40 for she is a sinner." Then Jesus addressed him. "Simon," he said, "I have something to say to you."

"Speak, teacher," he said. "There 41 was a moneylender who had two debtors; one owed him fifty pounds, the other five. As they 42 were unable to pay, he freely forgave them both. Tell me, now, which of them will love him most?" 43

"I suppose," said Simon, "the man who had most forgiven." "Quite right," he said. Then turning to 44 the woman he said to Simon, "You see this woman? When I came into your house,

you never gave me water for my feet,

while she has wet my feet with her tears and wiped them with her hair;

you never gave me a kiss, 45

while ever since she came in she has kept pressing kisses on my feet;

you never anointed my head with 46 oil,

while she has anointed my feet with perfume.

Therefore I tell you, many as her 47 sins are, they are forgiven, for her love is great; whereas he to whom little is forgiven has but little love." And he said to her, 48 "Your sins are forgiven." His 49 fellow guests began to say to themselves, "Who is this, to forgive even sins?" But he said to the 50 woman, "Your faith has saved you; go in peace."

CHAP.

8  
SHORTLY afterwards he went 8 travelling from one town and village to another preaching and telling the good news of the Reign of God; he was accompanied by the twelve and by some women who had been 2 healed of evil spirits and illnesses, Mary called Magdalene (out of whom seven daemons had been

## S. LUKE VIII

- 3 driven), Joanna the wife of Chuza  
the chancellor of Herod, Susanna,  
and a number of others, who  
ministered to him out of their  
4 means. As a large crowd was  
gathering and as people were re-  
sorting to him from town after  
town, he addressed them in a  
5 parable. "A sower went out to  
sow his seed. And as he sowed,  
some seed fell on the road and  
was trampled down,  
and the wild birds ate it  
up;  
6 some other seed dropped on the  
rock,  
but it withered away when it  
sprang up because it had no  
moisture;  
7 some other seed fell among  
thorns,  
and the thorns sprang up along  
with it and choked it;  
8 some other seed fell on sound  
soil,  
and springing up bore a crop,  
a hundredfold."

When he said this he called out,  
"He who has an ear, let him listen  
9 to this." The disciples questioned  
him about the meaning of the  
10 parable; so he said, "It is granted  
you to understand the open secrets  
of the Reign of God, but the others  
get it in parables, so that  
*for all their seeing they may not  
see,  
and for all their hearing they may  
not understand.*

- 11 This is what the parable means.  
12 The seed is the word of God. Those  
'on the road' are people who hear;  
but then the devil comes and  
carries off the word from their  
heart, that they may not believe  
13 and be saved. Those 'on the  
rock' are people who on hearing  
the word welcome it with enthu-

siasm, but they have no root; they  
believe for a while and fall away in  
the hour of trial. As for the seed 14  
that fell among thorns, that means  
people who hear but who go and get  
choked with worries and money and  
the pleasures of life, so that they  
never ripen. As for the seed in 15  
the good soil, that means those  
who hear and hold fast the word in  
a good and sound heart and so bear  
fruit stedfastly.

No one lights a lamp and hides 16  
it under a vessel or puts it  
below the bed :

he puts it on a stand so that  
those who come in can see  
the light.

For nothing is hidden that shall 17  
not be disclosed,  
nothing concealed that shall  
not be known and revealed.

So take care how you listen; 18  
for he who has, to him shall  
more be given,  
while as for him who has not,  
from him shall be taken even  
what he thinks he has."

His mother and brothers reached 19  
him but they were unable to join  
him for the crowd. Word was 20  
brought to him that "your mother  
and brothers are standing outside;  
they wish to see you," But he 21  
answered, "My mother and brothers  
are those who listen to the word of  
God and obey it."

It happened on one of these days 22  
that he embarked in a boat alone  
with his disciples and said to them,  
"Let us cross to the other side of  
the lake." So they set sail. Dur- 23  
ing the voyage he fell asleep. But  
when a gale of wind came down  
on the lake and they were being  
swamped and in peril, they went 24  
and woke him up. "Master,  
master," they cried, "we are



drowning!" So he woke up and checked the wind and the surf; they ceased and there was a calm.

25 Then he said to them, "Where is your faith?" They marvelled in awe, saying to one another, "Whatever can he be? He gives orders to the very winds and water, and

26 they obey him!" They put in at the country of the Gergesenes, on

27 the shore facing Galilee. As he stepped out on land he was met by a man from the town who had daemons in him; for a long while he had worn no clothing, and he stayed not in a house but among

28 the tombs. On catching sight of Jesus he shrieked aloud and prayed him with a loud cry, "Jesus, son of God most High, what business have you with me? Do not torture me,

29 I beg of you." (For he had charged the unclean spirit to come out of the man. Many a time when it had seized hold of him, he had been fastened secure in fetters and chains, but he would snap his bonds and be driven by the daemon into

30 the desert.) So Jesus asked him, "What is your name?" "Legion," he said, for a number of daemons

31 had entered him. And they begged him not to order them off to the

32 abyss. Now a considerable drove of swine was grazing there on the hillside, so the daemons begged him for leave to enter them. He gave

33 them leave, and the daemons came out of the man and went into the swine; the drove rushed down the steep slope into the lake and were

34 suffocated. When the herdsmen saw what had occurred they fled and reported it to the town and the

35 hamlets. The people came out to see what had occurred and when they reached Jesus they discovered the man whom the daemons had

left, seated at the feet of Jesus, clothed and sane. That frightened them. They got a report from 36 those who had seen how the lunatic was cured, and then all the inhabitants of the surrounding country of the Gergesenes asked him to leave them, they were so seized with terror. He embarked in the boat and went back. The man whom 38 the daemons had left begged that he might accompany him. Jesus, however, sent him away, saying, "Go home and describe all that 39 God has done for you." So he went off to proclaim through the whole town all that Jesus had done for him.

On his return Jesus was welcomed 40 by the crowd; they were all looking out for him. A man called Jairus 41 came, who was a president of the synagogue, and falling at the feet of Jesus entreated him to come to his house, for he had an only 42 daughter about twelve years old and she was dying. As Jesus went the crowds kept crushing him, and 43 a woman who had had a hemorrhage for twelve years \* which no one could cure, came up behind him and 44 touched the tassel of his robe. Her hemorrhage instantly ceased. Jesus 45 said, "Who touched me?" As everyone denied it, Peter and his companions said, "Master, the crowds are all round you pressing hard!" Jesus said, "Somebody did 46 touch me, for I felt power had passed from me." So when the woman saw 47 she had not escaped notice she came trembling, and falling down before him she told before all the people why she had touched him and how she had been instantly cured. "Daughter," he said to her, "your 48

\* Omitting *ἡ αἰτία* *προσπαλάσασα* *ἐλθὼν* *τὸν θῖλον* with BD arm. Syr.<sup>sin.</sup> sah.



## S. LUKE IX

faith has made you well; depart  
 49 in peace." He was still speaking  
 when someone came from the house  
 of the synagogue-president to say,  
 "Your daughter is dead. Do not  
 trouble the teacher any further."  
 50 But when Jesus heard it he said to  
 him, "Have no fear, only believe  
 51 and she shall get well." When he  
 reached the house he would not  
 allow anyone to come in with him  
 except Peter and James and John,  
 and the child's father and mother.  
 52 Everyone was weeping and bewail-  
 ing her, but he said, "Stop weep-  
 ing; she is not dead but asleep."  
 53 They laughed at him, knowing that  
 54 she was dead. But he took her  
 hand and called to her, "Rise, little  
 55 girl." And her spirit returned, she  
 got up instantly, and he ordered  
 them to give her something to eat.  
 56 Her parents were amazed, but he  
 charged them not to tell anyone  
 what had happened.

CHAP.

9 CALLING the twelve apostles to-  
 gether he gave them power and  
 authority over all daemons as well  
 2 as to heal diseases. He sent them  
 out to preach the Reign of God and  
 3 to cure the sick. And he told them,  
 "Take nothing for the journey,  
 neither stick nor wallet nor bread  
 nor silver, and do not carry two  
 4 shirts. Whatever house you go in-  
 to, stay there and leave from there.  
 5 Whoever will not receive you, leave  
 that town and shake off the very  
 dust from your feet as a testimony  
 6 against them." So they went out  
 from village to village preaching the  
 gospel and healing everywhere.  
 7 When Herod the tetrarch heard  
 all that was going on, he was quite  
 at a loss; for some said that John  
 8 had risen from the dead, some that

Elijah had appeared, and others  
 that one of the ancient prophets  
 had arisen. Herod said, "John I 9  
 beheaded. But who is this, of  
 whom I hear such tales?" And  
 he made efforts to see him.

Then the apostles came back and 10  
 described all they had done to Jesus.  
 He took them and retired in private  
 to a town called Bethsaida, but the 11  
 crowds learned this and followed  
 him. He welcomed them, spoke  
 to them of the Reign of God, and  
 cured those who needed to be  
 healed. Now as the day began 12  
 to decline the twelve came up to  
 him and said, "Send the crowd  
 off to lodge in the villages and  
 farms around and get provisions  
 there, for here we are in a desert  
 place." He said to them, "Give 13  
 them some food yourselves."  
 They said, "We have only got five  
 loaves and two fish. Unless—  
 are we to go and buy food for the  
 whole of this people?" (There 14  
 were about five thousand men of  
 them.) He said to his disciples,  
 "Make them lie down in rows of  
 about fifty." They did so, and made 15  
 them all lie down. Then taking the 16  
 five loaves and the two fish and  
 looking up to heaven he blessed  
 them, broke them in pieces and  
 handed them to the disciples to set  
 before the crowd. And they all 17  
 ate and had enough. What they  
 had left over was picked up, twelve  
 baskets full of fragments.

Now it happened that while he 18  
 was praying by himself his disciples  
 were beside him. So he inquired of  
 them, "Who do the crowds say I  
 am?" They replied, "John the 19  
 Baptist, though some say Elijah  
 and some say that one of the  
 ancient prophets has arisen." He 20  
 said to them, "And who do you

say I am?" Peter replied, "The  
 21 Christ of God." Then he forbade  
 them strictly to tell this to any-  
 22 one. The Son of man, he said, has  
 to endure great suffering, to be  
 rejected by the elders and high  
 priests and scribes, to be killed,  
 and on the third day to be raised.

23 He said to all, "If anyone wishes  
 to come after me, let him deny him-  
 self, take up his cross day after  
 day, and so follow me;

24 for whoever wants to save his life  
 will lose it,  
 and whoever loses his life for my  
 sake, he will save it.

25 What profit will it be for a man to  
 gain the whole world and lose or  
 26 forfeit himself? For whoever is  
 ashamed of me and my words, of  
 him will the Son of man be ashamed  
 when he comes in his glory and in  
 the glory of the Father and of the  
 27 holy angels. I tell you plainly,  
 there are some of those standing  
 here who will not taste death till  
 they see the Reign of God."

28 It was about eight days after he  
 said this, when he took Peter, John,  
 and James, and went up the hillside  
 29 to pray. While he was praying the  
 appearance of his face altered and  
 his dress turned dazzling white.

30 There were two men conversing  
 31 with him, Moses and Elijah, who  
 appeared in a vision of glory and  
 said he must go through with his  
 death and departure at Jerusalem.

32 Now Peter and his companions had  
 been overpowered with sleep, but  
 on waking up they saw his glory  
 and the two men who were standing

33 beside him. When they were part-  
 ing from him, Peter said to Jesus,  
 "Master, it is a good thing we are  
 here; let us put up three tents, one  
 for you, one for Moses, and one for  
 Elijah" (not knowing what he was

saying). As he spoke, a cloud came 34  
 and overshadowed them. They  
 were awestruck as they passed into  
 the cloud, but a voice came from 35  
 the cloud, "This is my Son, my  
 Chosen one; listen to him." When 36  
 the voice ceased, they found them-  
 selves alone with Jesus. And in  
 those days they kept silence and  
 told nobody anything of what they  
 had seen.

Next day, when they came down 37  
 the hill, a large crowd met him.  
 "Teacher," shouted a man from 38  
 the crowd, "look at my son, I beg  
 of you, for he is my only boy, and a 39  
 spirit gets hold of him till he sud-  
 denly shrieks; it convulses him till  
 he foams; indeed it will hardly leave  
 off tearing him to pieces. I begged 40  
 your disciples to cast it out, but  
 they could not." Jesus answered, 41  
 "O faithless and perverse genera-  
 tion, how long must I still be with  
 you and bear with you? Fetch  
 your son here." Before the boy 42  
 could reach Jesus, the daemon  
 dashed him down and convulsed  
 him, but Jesus checked the unclean  
 spirit, cured the boy, and handed  
 him back to his father. And all 43  
 were astounded at this grand display  
 of God. But while all marvelled  
 at all he did, he said to his disciples,  
 "Let these words sink into your 44  
 ears: 'the Son of man is to be be-  
 trayed into the hands of men.'" But  
 they did not understand this 45  
 saying—indeed it was kept a secret  
 from them, to prevent them from  
 fathoming it—and they were afraid  
 to ask him about this saying.

A dispute arose among them as 46  
 to which of them was the greatest.  
 Jesus knew the dispute that occu- 47  
 pied their minds, so he took hold  
 of a little child and set it by his  
 side; then he said to them, 48



"Whoever receives this little child in my name receives me,  
and whoever receives me receives him who sent me.

For it is the lowliest of you all who is great."

49 John said to him, "Master, we saw a man casting out daemons in your name, but we stopped him because he is not a follower of ours." Jesus said to him, "Do not stop him; \* he who is not against you is for you."

51 As the time for his assumption was now due, he set his face for 52 the journey to Jerusalem. He sent messengers in front of him. They went and entered a Samaritan village to make preparations for 53 him, but the people would not receive him because his face was turned in the direction of Jerusalem. So when the disciples James and John saw this, they said, "Lord, will you have us bid 54 *fire come down from heaven and* 55 *consume them?*" But he turned 56 and checked them. Then they 57 journeyed to another village. And as they journeyed along the road a man said to him, "I will follow 58 you anywhere." Jesus said to him,

"The foxes have their holes,  
the wild birds have their nests,  
but the Son of man has nowhere to lay his head."

59 He said to another man, "Follow me"; but he said, "Let me go and 60 bury my father first of all." Jesus said to him, "Leave the dead to bury their own dead; you go and spread the news of the Reign of

God." Another man also said to 61 him, "I will follow you, Lord. But let me first say good-bye to my people at home." Jesus said to 62 him, "No one is any use to the Reign of God who puts his hand to the plough and then looks behind him."

CHAP.

AFTER that the Lord commis- 10 sioned other seventy disciples, sending them in front of him two by two to every town and place that he intended to visit himself. He said to them, "The harvest 2 is rich, but the labourers are few; so pray the Lord of the harvest to send labourers to gather his harvest. Go your way; I am 3 sending you out like lambs among wolves. Carry no purse, no wallet, 4 no sandals. Do not stop to salute anybody on the road. Whatever 5 house you enter, first say, 'Peace be to this household!' Then, if 6 there is a soul there breathing peace, your peace will rest on him; otherwise it will come back to you. Stay at the same house, eating 7 and drinking what the people provide (for the workman deserves his wages); you are not to shift from one house to another. Wherever 8 you are received on entering any town, eat what is provided for you, heal those in the town who are ill, 9 and tell them, 'The Reign of God is nearly on you.' But wherever 10 you are not received on entering any town, go out into the streets of the town and cry, 'The very dust 11 of your town that clings to us we wipe off from our feet as a protest. But mark this, the Reign of God is near!' I tell you, on the great 12 Day it will be more bearable for Sodom than for that town. Woe 13 to you, Khorazin! woe to you,

\* Omitting [οὐ γὰρ ἐστὶν καθ' ὑμῶν].



Bethsaida! Had the miracles performed in you been performed in Tyre and Sidon, they would long ago have been sitting penitent in sackcloth and ashes. But it will be more bearable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment than for you. And you, O Capharnahum! *Exalted to heaven? No, you will sink to Hades!*

16 He who listens to you listens to me,  
 he who rejects you rejects me,  
 and he who rejects me rejects him who sent me."

17 The seventy came back with joy. "Lord," they said, "the very daemons obey us in your name." He said to them, "Yes, I watched Satan fall from heaven like a flash of lightning. I have indeed given you the power of treading on serpents and scorpions and of trampling down all the power of the Enemy; nothing shall injure you. Only,

do not rejoice because the spirits obey you:  
 rejoice because your names are enrolled in heaven."

21 He thrilled with joy at that hour in the holy Spirit, saying, "I praise thee, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, for concealing this from the wise and learned and revealing it to the simple-minded; yes, Father, I praise thee that such was thy chosen purpose." Then turning to the disciples he said,

22 "All has been handed over to me by my Father:  
 and no one knows who the Son is except the Father,  
 or who the Father is except the Son,  
 and he to whom the Son chooses to reveal him."

Then turning to the disciples he said privately,  
 "Blessed are the eyes that see 23 what you see!

For I tell you many prophets 24 and kings have desired to see what you see,  
 but they have not seen it;  
 and to hear what you hear,  
 but they have not heard it."

Now a jurist got up to tempt 25 him. "Teacher," he said, "what am I to do to inherit life eternal?" He said to him, "What is written 26 in the law? What do you read there?" He replied, "*You must 27 love the Lord your God with your whole heart, with your whole soul, with your whole strength, and with your whole mind. Also your neighbour as yourself.*" "A right answer!" said Jesus; "*do that and you will live.*" Anxious to make 29 an excuse for himself, however, he said to Jesus, "But who is my neighbour?" Jesus rejoined, "A 30 man going down from Jerusalem to Jericho fell among robbers who stripped and belaboured him and then went off leaving him half-dead. Now it so chanced that 31 a priest was going down the same road, but on seeing him he went past on the opposite side. So did 32 a Levite who came to the spot; he looked at him but passed on the opposite side. However a 33 Samaritan traveller came to where he was and felt pity when he saw him; he went to him, bound his 34 wounds up, pouring oil and wine into them, mounted him on his own steed, took him to an inn, and attended to him. Next morn- 35 ing he took out a couple of shillings and gave them to the innkeeper, saying, 'Attend to him, and if you

are put to any extra expense I  
will refund you on my way back.’  
36 Which of these three men, in your  
opinion, proved a neighbour to  
37 the man who fell among the rob-  
bers? ” He said, “The man who  
took pity on him.” Jesus said to  
him, “Then go and do the same.”  
38 In the course of their journey  
he entered a certain village, and a  
woman called Martha welcomed  
39 him to her house. She had a sister  
called Mary, who seated herself at  
the feet of the Lord to listen to his  
40 talk. Now Martha was so busy  
attending to them that she grew  
worried; she came up and said,  
“Lord, is it all one to you that  
my sister has left me to do all the  
work alone? Come, tell her to  
41 lend me a hand.” The Lord an-  
swered her, “Martha, Martha,\*  
42 Mary has chosen the best dish,  
and she is not to be dragged away  
from it.”

CHAP.

11 HE was praying at a certain  
place, and when he stopped one  
of his disciples said to him, “Lord,  
teach us to pray, as John taught  
2 his disciples.” He said to them,  
“When you pray, say, Father,  
thy name be revered,  
thy Reign begin;  
3 give us our bread for the mor-  
row day by day,  
4 and forgive us our sins  
for we do forgive everyone  
who has offended us;  
and lead us not into tempta-  
tion.”

\* Omitting, with D, Syr.Sin. and the  
majority of the old Latin manuscripts  
μεριμᾶς . . . χρεῖα (D adding θορυβᾶ(ν)).  
I translate μεριᾶ by ‘dish,’ to bring  
out the point and play of the saying.  
Jesus means that Mary has chosen well in  
selecting the nourishment of his teaching.

And he said to them, “Suppose 5  
one of you has a friend, and you  
go to him at midnight and say to  
him, ‘Friend, let me have three  
loaves; for a friend of mine travel- 6  
ling has come to my house and I  
have nothing to set before him.’  
And suppose he answers from the 7  
inside, ‘Don’t bother me; the  
door is locked by this time, and  
my children are in bed with me.  
I can’t get up and give you any-  
thing.’ I tell you, though he will 8  
not get up and give you anything  
because you are a friend of his,  
he will at least rise and give you  
whatever you want, because you  
persist. So I tell you, 9  
ask and the gift will be yours,  
seek and you will find,  
knock and the door will  
open to you;  
for everyone who asks receives, 10  
the seeker finds,  
the door is opened to anyone  
who knocks.  
What father among you, if asked 11  
by his son for a loaf, will  
hand him a stone?  
Or, if asked for a fish, will hand  
him a serpent instead of  
a fish?  
Or, if asked for an egg, will he 12  
hand him a scorpion?  
Well, if for all your evil you 13  
know to give your children  
what is good,  
how much more will your  
Father give the holy  
Spirit from heaven to  
those who ask him? ”

He was casting out a dumb 14  
daemon, and when the daemon  
had gone out the dumb man spoke.  
The crowds marvelled, but some of 15  
them said, “It is by Beelzebul  
the prince of daemons that he  
casts out daemons.” Others by 16

way of tempting him demanded  
 he should give them a Sign from  
 17 heaven. He knew what they were  
 thinking about, so he said to them,  
 "Any realm divided against it-  
   self comes to ruin,  
   house after house falls down;  
 18 and if Satan is divided against  
   himself,  
   how can his realm stand?  
   You say I am casting out  
   daemons by Beelzebub?  
 19 If I cast out daemons by Beel-  
   zebub,  
   by whom do your sons cast  
   them out?  
   Thus they will be your judges.  
 20 But if it is by the finger of God  
   that I cast daemons out,  
   then the Reign of God has  
   reached you already.  
 21 When the strong man in armour  
   guards his homestead, his property  
 22 is undisturbed; but when a  
   stronger man attacks and conquers  
   him, he seizes the panoply on which  
   he relied and divides up the spoil.  
 23 He who is not with me is against  
   me,  
   and he who does not gather  
   with me scatters.\*  
 24 When an unclean spirit leaves a  
   man, it roams through dry places  
   in search of refreshment. As it  
   finds none, then it says, 'I will go  
 25 back to the house I left,' and when  
   it comes it finds the house clean  
 26 and in order. Then it goes off to  
   fetch seven other spirits worse than  
   itself; they go in and dwell there,  
   and the last state of that man is  
   worse than the first."  
 27 While he was saying this, a  
   woman shouted to him out of the  
   crowd, "Blessed is the womb that

bore you, and the breasts you  
 sucked!" But he said, "Blessed 28  
 rather are those who hear and who  
 observe the word of God!"

As the crowds were thronging 29  
 to him, he proceeded to say,  
 "This is an evil generation: it  
   demands a Sign,  
   but no Sign will be given to  
   it except the Sign of  
   Jonah;  
 for as Jonah was a Sign to the 30  
   Ninivites,  
   so shall the Son of man be  
   to this generation.  
 The queen of the South will 31  
   rise at the judgment  
   with the men of this  
   generation and condemn  
   them;  
   for she came from the ends  
   of the earth to listen to  
   the wisdom of Solomon,  
   and here is One greater  
   than Solomon.  
 The men of Ninive will rise at 32  
   the judgment with this  
   generation and condemn  
   it;  
   for when Jonah preached  
   they did repent,  
   and here is One greater  
   than Jonah.  
 No one lights a lamp to put it 33  
   in a cellar or under a  
   bowl,  
   but on a stand, so that those  
   who come in can see the  
   light.  
 Your eye is the lamp of the 34  
   body:  
   when your eye is sound,  
   then the whole of your body  
   has light,  
   but if your eye is diseased,  
   then your body is darkened.  
 (Look! perhaps your very 35  
   light is dark.)

\* Omitting *με*, which von Soden  
 inserts within brackets from NL 33 and a  
 few other authorities.



## S. LUKE XII

36 So if your whole body has light, without any corner of it in darkness, it will be lit up entirely, as when a lamp lights you with its rays."

37 When he finished speaking, a Pharisee asked him to take a meal in his house; so he went in and lay down at table. The Pharisee was astonished to see that he had not washed before the meal, but the Lord said to him,

"You Pharisees do clean the outside of the cup and the plate,

but your inner life is filled with rapacity and malice. Foolish men! did not He who made the outside make the inside of things too?

41 Better cleanse\* what is within; then nothing will be unclear for you.

42 But woe to you Pharisees! you tithe mint and rue and every vegetable, but justice and the love of God you disregard; these latter you ought to have practised—without omitting the former.

43 Woe to you Pharisees! you love the front bench in the synagogues and salutations in the marketplaces.

44 Woe to you! you are like unsuspected tombs; men walk over them unaware."

One of the jurists said to him, 45 "Teacher, when you say this you are insulting us as well." He 46 said,

"And woe to you jurists! you load men with irksome burdens, and you will not put a single finger to their burdens.

Woe to you! you build tombs 47 for the prophets whom your own fathers killed: thus you testify and con- 48 sent to what your fathers did,

for they killed and you build. This is why the Wisdom of God 49 said, 'I will send them prophets and apostles, some they will kill and some they will persecute'; it was that the blood of all the 50 prophets shed from the foundation of the world might be charged upon this generation, from the 51 blood of Abel down to the blood of Zechariah who was slain between the altar and the House of God—yes, I tell you, it will all be charged upon this generation.

Woe to you jurists! you 52 have taken the key that unlocks the door of knowledge;

you have not entered yourselves, and you have stopped those who were entering."

After he had gone away, the scribes 53 and Pharisees commenced to follow him up closely and cross-question him on many points, lying in am- 54 bush to catch a word from his lips.

MEANWHILE as the crowd was 12 gathering in its thousands till they trod on one another, he proceeded to say to his disciples first of all,

CHAP.

\* The ordinary text *δοτε ἐλεημοσύνην* ("give alms") represents the Aramaic *zakki*. But the Aramaic *dakki* ("purify" or "cleanse") suits the context better, and Wellhausen plausibly suggests that Luke has confused "these two verbs which differ very little in sound and originally are identical."

## S. LUKE XII

- "Be on your guard against the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.
- 2 Nothing is hidden that shall not be revealed,  
or concealed that shall not be made known.
- 3 So all you utter in the dark will be heard in the light,  
and what you whisper in chambers will be proclaimed on the housetops.
- 4 I tell you, my friends,  
have no fear of those who kill the body but after that can do no more;
- 5 I will show you whom to fear—  
fear Him who after he has killed has power to cast you into Gehenna.  
Yes, I tell you, fear Him.
- 6 Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings?  
Yet not one of them is forgotten by God.
- 7 But the very hairs on your head are all numbered;  
fear not, you are worth far more \* than sparrows.
- 8 I tell you, whoever acknowledges me before men,  
the Son of man will acknowledge him before the angels of God;
- 9 and he who disowns me before men  
will be disowned before the angels of God.
- 10 Everyone also who says a word against the Son of man will be forgiven for it,  
but he who blasphemes against the holy Spirit will never be forgiven.
- 11 When they bring you before synagogues and the magistrates and authorities, do not trouble your-

\* See above, on p. 13.

selves about how to defend yourselves or what to say, for the holy 12 Spirit will teach you at that hour what you should say."

A man out of the crowd said to 13 him, "Teacher, tell my brother to give me my share of our inheritance"; but he said to him, 14 "Man, who made me a judge or arbitrator over your affairs?" Then he said to them, "See and 15 keep clear of covetousness in every shape and form, for a man's life is not part of his possessions because he has ample wealth." And he 16 told them a parable. "A rich man's estate bore heavy crops. So he debated, 'What am I to do? 17 I have no room to store my crops.' And he said, 'This is what I will do. 18 I will pull down my granaries and build larger ones, where I can store all my produce and my goods. And I will say to my soul, "Soul, 19 you have ample stores laid up for many a year; take your ease, eat, drink and be merry."' But God 20 said to him, 'Foolish man, this very night your soul is wanted; and who will get all you have prepared?' So fares the man who 21 lays up treasure for himself instead of gaining the riches of God." To 22 his disciples he said, "Therefore I tell you,

do not trouble about what you are to eat in life,

nor about what you are to put on your body;

life is something more than 23 food,

and the body is something more than clothes.

Look at the crows! they neither 24 sow nor reap,

no storehouse or granary have they,

and yet God feeds them.

- How much more are you worth  
than birds?
- 25 Which of you can add an ell to  
his height by troubling about  
it?
- 26 and if you cannot manage even  
this, why trouble over other  
things?
- 27 Look how the lilies neither spin  
nor weave;  
and yet, I tell you, even Solo-  
mon in all his grandeur was  
never robed like one of  
them.
- 28 Now if God so clothes grass which  
blossoms to-day in the field and is  
thrown to-morrow into the furnace,  
will he not much more clothe you?  
O men, how little you trust him!
- 29 So do not seek food and drink and  
30 be worried; pagans make food and  
drink their aim in life, but your  
Father knows quite well you need  
31 that; only seek his Realm, and  
it will be yours over and above.
- 32 Fear not, you little flock, for your  
Father is delighted to give you the  
Realm.
- 33 Sell what you possess and give it  
away in alms,  
make purses for yourselves  
that never wear out:  
get treasure in heaven that  
never fails,  
that no thief can get at, no  
moth destroy.
- 34 For where your treasure lies,  
your heart will lie there too.
- 35 Keep your loins girt and your  
36 lamps lit, and be like men who  
are expecting their lord and master  
on his return from a marriage-  
banquet, so as to open the door  
for him at once when he comes  
37 and knocks. Blessed are those  
servants whom the lord and master  
finds awake when he comes! I tell  
you truly, he will gird himself,

make them recline at table, and  
come forward to wait on them.  
Whether he comes in the second or 38  
the third watch of the night and  
finds them thus alert, blessed are  
they! Be sure that if the house- 39  
holder had known at what hour  
the thief was coming,\* he would  
not have allowed his house to be  
broken into. So be ready your- 40  
selves, for the Son of man is coming  
at an hour you do not expect.”  
Peter said, “Lord, are you telling 41  
this parable for us, or is it for all  
and sundry?” The Lord said, 42  
“Well, where is the trusty,  
thoughtful steward whom the lord  
and master will set over his estab-  
lishment to give out supplies at  
the proper time? Blessed is that 43  
servant if his lord and master finds  
him so doing when he arrives! I 44  
tell you plainly, he will set him over  
all his property. But if that serv- 45  
ant says to himself, ‘My lord and  
master is long of arriving,’ and if  
he starts to beat the menservants  
and maidservants, to eat and drink  
and get drunk, that servant’s lord 46  
and master will arrive on a day  
when he does not expect him and  
at an hour which he does not know;  
he will cut him in two and assign  
him the fate of unbelievers.

The servant who knew his lord 47  
and master’s orders and did  
not prepare † for them,  
will receive many lashes;  
whereas he who was ignorant 48  
and did what deserves a  
beating,  
will receive few lashes.

\* Omitting [ἐγγρηγόρησεν ἄν, καί], a  
harmonistic gloss from Matthew xxiv. 43.

† Omitting ἢ ποιήσας with L, the majority  
of the old Latin manuscripts, the Syriac  
and Armenian versions, etc. The ordinary  
text is complete.



## S. LUKE XIII

- He who has much given him  
will have much required from  
him,  
and he who has much entrusted  
to him  
will have all the more de-  
manded of him.
- 49 I have come to throw fire on  
earth.  
Would it were kindled already !
- 50 I have a baptism to undergo.  
How I am distressed till it is all  
over !
- 51 You think I am here to make  
peace on earth ?  
No, I tell you, it is dissen-  
sion.
- 52 After this there will be five at  
issue in one house,  
three divided against two and  
two against three,
- 53 father against son and *son against  
father,*  
mother against daughter and  
*daughter against mother,*  
mother-in-law against daughter-  
in-law and *daughter-in-law  
against mother-in-law."*
- 54 And to the crowds he said,  
"When you see a cloud rise in  
the west,  
you say, 'There is a shower  
coming,'  
and so it is :
- 55 when you feel the south wind  
blow,  
you say, 'There will be  
heat,'  
and so it is.
- 56 You hypocrites, you know how  
to decipher the look of  
earth and sky ;  
how is it you cannot de-  
cipher the meaning of  
this era ?
- 57 And why do you not yourselves  
58 settle what is right ? Thus, when  
you go before the magistrate with

your opponent, do your utmost to  
get quit of him on the way there,  
in case he hales you before the  
judge ; then the judge will hand  
you over to the jailer and the jailer  
will throw you in prison. I tell 59  
you, you will never get out till you  
pay the last farthing of your debt."

CHAP.

It was at this time that some 13  
people came to tell him about the  
Galileans whose blood Pilate had  
mingled with their sacrifices. But 2  
he replied to them,

"Do you think, because they  
suffered this, that these  
Galileans were worse  
sinners than the rest of  
the Galileans ?

I tell you, no ; 3  
unless you repent you will  
all perish as they did.

Or those eighteen men killed 4  
by the fall of the tower  
at Siloam ?—

do you think they were worse  
offenders than the rest  
of the residents in Jeru-  
salem ?

I tell you, no ; 5  
unless you repent you will  
all perish as they did."

And he told this parable. "A man 6  
had a fig tree planted in his vine-  
yard ; he came in search of fruit on  
it but he found none. So he said to 7  
the vinedresser, 'Here have I come  
for three years in search of fruit on  
this fig tree without finding any ;  
cut it down, why should it take up 8  
space ?' But the man replied, 'Leave it for this year, sir, till I  
dig round about it and put in 9  
manure. Then it may bear fruit  
next year. If not, you can have  
it cut down.'"

When he was teaching in one of 10

the synagogues on the sabbath,  
 11 there was a woman who for eighteen years had suffered weakness from an evil spirit; indeed she was bent double and quite unable to raise  
 12 herself. Jesus noticed her and called to her, "Woman, you are  
 13 released from your weakness." He laid his hands on her, and instantly she became erect and glorified God.  
 14 But the president of the synagogue was annoyed at Jesus healing on the sabbath, and he said to the crowd, "There are six days for work to be done; come during them to get healed, instead of on  
 15 the sabbath." The Lord replied to him, "You hypocrites, does not each of you untether his ox or ass from the stall on the sabbath and  
 16 lead it away to drink? And this woman, a daughter of Abraham, bound by Satan for all these eighteen years, was she not to be freed from her bondage on the  
 17 sabbath?" As he said this, all his opponents were put to shame, but all the crowd rejoiced over  
 18 all his splendid doings. So he said,  
 "What is the Reign of God like?  
 to what shall I compare it?  
 19 It is like a grain of mustard-seed which a man took and put into his orchard, where it grew up and became a tree, and *the wild birds*  
 20 *roosted in its branches.*" He added, "To what shall I compare the  
 21 Reign of God? It is like dough which a woman took and buried in three pecks of flour, till all of it was leavened."  
 22 On he went, teaching from one town and village to another, as he  
 23 made his way to Jerusalem. A man said to him, "Is it only a few, sir, who are saved?" So he said  
 24 to them, "Strive to get in through

the narrow door, for I tell you many will try to get in and not be able, once the master of the House 25 has got up and closed the door. You may stand outside and knock at the door, crying, 'Lord, open for us,' but he will answer you, 'I do not know where you come from.' You will then proceed to say, 'But 26 we ate and drank in your presence, and you taught in our streets!' 'I 27 tell you,' he will say, 'I do not know where you come from; *be-gone every one of you, you evildoers.*' There you will wail and gnash 28 your teeth, to see Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and all the prophets inside the Realm of God and yourselves put out. Yes, and people will 29 come *from east and west* and north and south to their places at the feast within the Realm of God.

Some are last who will be first, 30 and some are first who will be last."

Just then some Pharisees came 31 up to tell him, "Get away from here, for Herod intends to kill you." "Go and tell that fox," he 32 replied, "I cast out daemons and perform cures to-day and to-morrow, and on the third day I complete my task! But I must 33 journey on, to-day, to-morrow, and the next day; it would never do for a prophet to perish except in Jerusalem! O Jerusalem, Jeru- 34 salem, slaying the prophets and stoning those who have been sent to you! How often I would fain have gathered your children as a fowl gathers her brood under her wings! But you would not have it! See, 35 *your House is left to yourselves.* I tell you, you will never see me till the day comes when you say, *Blessed be he who comes in the Lord's name.*"



14 Now when he entered the house  
of a ruler who belonged to the  
Pharisees to take a meal, they  
2 watched him closely. In front of  
him there was a man who had  
3 dropsy; so Jesus asked the jurists  
and Pharisees, "Is it right to heal  
4 on the sabbath or not?" They  
held their peace. Then Jesus took  
hold of the man and cured him and  
5 sent him off. "Which of you,"  
he said to them, "when an ass or  
an ox has fallen into a well, will  
not pull him out at once upon the  
6 sabbath day?" This they could  
7 not dispute. He also told a parable  
to the guests, when he observed how  
they picked out the best places.  
8 "When anyone invites you to a  
marriage-banquet," he said, "never  
lie down in the best place, in case  
a more distinguished guest than  
9 yourself has been invited; then  
the host will tell you, 'Make room  
for him,' and you will proceed in  
shame to take the lowest place.  
10 No, when you are invited, go and  
recline in the lowest place, so that  
when your host comes in he will  
tell you, 'Move higher up, my  
friend.' Then you will be honoured  
before your fellow guests.  
11 For everyone who uplifts him-  
self will be humbled,  
and he who humbles himself  
will be uplifted."  
12 He also said to his host, "When  
you give a dinner or supper, do not  
ask your friends or your brothers or  
your relatives or your rich neigh-  
bours, in case they invite you back  
13 again and you get repaid. No,  
when you give a banquet, invite the  
poor, the maimed, the lame, and  
14 the blind. Then you will be  
blessed; for as they have no means  
of repaying you, you will be re-  
paid at the resurrection of the

just." Hearing this, one of his 15  
fellow guests said to him, "Blessed  
is he who feasts in the Realm of  
God!" Jesus said to him, "There 16  
was a man who was giving a large  
supper, to which he had invited a  
number of guests. At the hour 17  
for supper he sent his servant to  
tell the guests, 'Come, things are  
all ready.' But they all alike pro- 18  
ceeded to decline. The first said  
to him, 'I have bought a farm and  
I am obliged to go and look at it.  
Pray consider me excused.' The 19  
second said, 'I have bought five  
pair of oxen and I am going to try  
them. Pray consider me excused.'  
Another said, 'I have married a 20  
wife; that is why I cannot come.'  
The servant went and reported this 21  
to his master. Then the master of  
the house was enraged, and said to  
his servant, 'Quick, go out to the  
streets and lanes of the town and  
bring in the poor, the maimed, the  
blind, and the lame.' When the 22  
servant announced, 'Your order  
has been carried out, sir, but there  
is still room,' the master said to the 23  
servant, 'Go out to the roads and  
hedges and make people come  
in, to fill up my house. For 24  
I tell you that not one of those  
who were invited shall taste my  
supper.'"

There were large crowds travel- 25  
ling with him; so he turned and  
said to them,

"If anyone comes to me and 26  
does not hate his father and mother  
and wife and children and brothers  
and sisters, aye and his own life,

he cannot be a disciple of  
mine;

whoever does not carry his own 27  
cross and come after me,

he cannot be a disciple of  
mine.



28 For which of you wants to build  
a tower and does not first sit down  
to calculate the expense, to see if  
he has enough money to complete  
29 it?—in case, after he has laid the  
foundation and then is unable to  
finish the building, all the spec-  
tators start to make fun of him,  
30 saying, 'This fellow started to build  
31 but he could not finish it.' Or  
what king sets out to fight against  
another king without first sitting  
down to deliberate whether with  
ten thousand men he can encounter  
the king who is attacking him with  
32 twenty thousand? If he cannot,  
when the other is still at a distance  
he will send an embassy to do  
homage to him.  
33 So with everyone of you who will  
not part with all his goods—  
he cannot be a disciple of  
mine.  
34 Salt is excellent indeed: but if  
salt becomes insipid, what will  
35 restore its flavour? It is no use  
for either soil or dunghill, it is flung  
out. He who has an ear let him  
listen to this."

CHAP.

15 Now the taxgatherers and sinners  
were all approaching him to listen  
2 to him, but the Pharisees and the  
scribes complained, "He welcomes  
sinners and eats along with them!"  
3 So he told them this parable:  
4 "Which of you with a hundred  
sheep, if he loses one, does not  
leave the ninety-nine in the desert  
and go after the lost one till he  
5 finds it? When he finds it he  
puts it on his shoulders with joy,  
6 and when he gets home he gathers  
his friends and neighbours: 'Re-  
joice with me,' he says to them,  
'for I have found the sheep I  
7 lost.' So, I tell you, there will be

joy in heaven over a single sinner  
who repents, more than over ninety-  
nine good people who do not need  
to repent. Or again, suppose a 8  
woman has ten shillings. If she  
loses one of them, does she not  
light a lamp and scour the house  
and search carefully till she finds  
it? And when she finds it she 9  
gathers her women-friends and  
neighbours, saying, 'Rejoice with  
me, for I have found the shilling  
I lost.' So, I tell you, there is 10  
joy in the presence of the angels  
of God over a single sinner who  
repents."

He also said: "There was a 11  
man who had two sons, and the 12  
younger said to his father, 'Father,  
give me the share of the property  
that falls to me.' So he divided  
his means among them. Not 13  
many days later, the younger son  
sold off everything and went abroad  
to a distant land, where he squan-  
dered his means in loose living.  
After he had spent his all, a severe 14  
famine set in throughout that land,  
and he began to feel in want; so 15  
he went and attached himself to a  
citizen of that land, who sent him  
to his fields to feed swine. And 16  
he was fain to fill his belly with  
the pods the swine were eating;  
no one gave him anything. But 17  
when he came to his senses he  
said, 'How many hired men of  
my father have more than enough  
to eat, and here am I perishing of  
hunger! I will be up and off to 18  
my father, and I will say to him,  
"Father, I have sinned against  
heaven and before you; I don't 19  
deserve to be called your son any  
more; only make me like one of  
your hired men."' So he got up 20  
and went off to his father. But  
when he was still far away his

father saw him and felt pity for him and ran to fall upon his neck and  
 21 kiss him. The son said to him, 'Father, I have sinned against heaven and before you; I don't deserve to be called your son any  
 22 more.' But the father said to his servants, 'Quick, bring the best robe and put it on him, give him a ring for his hand and sandals for  
 23 his feet, and bring the fatted calf, kill it, and let us eat and be merry;  
 24 for my son here was dead and he has come to life, he was lost and he is found.' So they began to make  
 25 merry. Now his elder son was out in the field, and as he came near the house he heard music and dancing;  
 26 so, summoning one of the servants, 27 he asked what this meant. The servant told him, 'Your brother has arrived, and your father has killed the fatted calf because he has got him back safe and sound.'  
 28 This angered him, and he would not go in. His father came out and  
 29 tried to appease him, but he replied, 'Look at all the years I have been serving you! I have never neglected any of your orders, and yet you have never given me so much as a kid, to let me make  
 30 merry with my friends. But as soon as this son of yours arrives, after having wasted your means with harlots, you kill the fatted  
 31 calf for him!' The father said to him, 'My son, you and I are always  
 32 together, all I have is yours. We could not but make merry and rejoice, for your brother here was dead and has come to life again, he was lost but he has been found.'"

a factor, and this factor, he found, was accused of misapplying his property. So he summoned him 2 and said, 'What is this I hear about you? Hand in your accounts; you cannot be factor any longer.' The factor said to himself, 3 'What am I to do now that my master is taking the factorship away from me? I am too weak to dig, I am ashamed to beg. Ah, 4 I know what I will do, so that people will welcome me to their houses when I am deposed from the factorship.' So he summoned 5 every single one of his master's debtors. He asked the first, 'How much are you owing to my master?' 'A hundred barrels of oil,' he said. 6 The factor told him, 'Here is your bill; sit down at once and enter fifty barrels.' Then he asked 7 another, 'And how much do you owe?' 'A hundred quarters of wheat,' he said. 'Here is your bill,' said the factor, 'just enter eighty.' Well, the master praised 8 the dishonest factor for looking ahead; for the children of this world look further ahead in dealing with their own generation than the children of Light. And I tell 9 you, use mammon, dishonest as it is, to make friends for yourselves, so that when you die\* they may welcome you to the eternal abodes.

He who is faithful with a trifle 10 is also faithful with a large trust,

and he who is dishonest with a trifle is also dishonest with a large trust.

So if you are not faithful with 11 dishonest mammon,

\* Reading ἐκλείπητε or ἐκλείπητε with *Na*, the bulk of the Latin manuscripts, the Harklean Syriac, etc.



how can you ever be trusted  
with true Riches?

12 And if you are not faithful with  
what belongs to another,  
how can you ever be given  
what is your own?

13 No servant can serve two  
masters:

either he will hate the one and  
love the other,

or else he will stand by the one  
and despise the other—

you cannot serve both God and  
Mammon."

14 Now the Pharisees who were  
fond of money heard all this, and

15 they sneered at him. So he told  
them, "You are the people who  
get men to think you are good,  
but God knows what your hearts  
are! What is lofty in the view of  
man is loathsome in the eyes of  
God.

16 The Law and the prophets lasted  
till John; since then the good news  
of the Realm of God is preached,

17 and anyone presses in. Yet it is  
easier for heaven and earth to pass  
away than for an iota of the Law  
to lapse.

18 Anyone who divorces his wife  
and marries another woman  
commits adultery,

and he who marries a divorced  
woman commits adultery.

19 There was a rich man, clad in  
purple and fine linen, who lived

20 sumptuously every day. Outside  
his door lay a poor man called  
Lazarus; he was a mass of ulcers,

21 and fain to eat up the crumbs that  
fell from the rich man's table.  
(The very dogs used to come and

22 lick his ulcers.) Now it happened  
that the poor man died, and he was  
carried by the angels to Abraham's  
bosom. The rich man died too,

23 and was buried. And as he was

being tortured in Hades he raised  
his eyes and saw Abraham far away  
with Lazarus in his bosom; so he 24  
called out, 'Father Abraham, take  
pity on me, send Lazarus to dip his  
fingertip in water and cool my  
tongue, for I am in anguish in these  
flames.' But Abraham said, 'Re- 25  
member, my son, you got all the  
bliss when you were alive, just as  
Lazarus got the ills of life; he is  
in comfort now, and you are in  
anguish. Besides all that, a great 26  
gulf yawns between us and you, to  
keep back those who want to cross  
from us to you and also those who  
want to pass from you to us.' Then 27  
he said, 'Well, father, I beg you to  
send him to my father's house, for 28  
I have five brothers; let him bear  
testimony to them, that they may  
not come to this place of torture as  
well.' 'They have got Moses and 29  
the prophets,' said Abraham, 'they  
can listen to them.' 'No, father 30  
Abraham,' he said, 'but if someone  
only goes to them from the dead,  
they will repent.' He said to him, 31  
'If they will not listen to Moses  
and the prophets, they will not be  
convinced, not even if one rose  
from the dead."

CHAP.

To his disciples he said, "It is 17  
inevitable that hindrances should  
come, but woe to the man by whom  
they come; it would be well for 2  
him to have a millstone hung round  
his neck and be flung into the sea,  
rather than prove a hindrance to  
one of these little ones! Take heed 3  
to yourselves. If your brother sins,  
check him, and if he repents forgive  
him. Even if he sins against you 4  
seven times in one day and turns  
to you seven times saying, 'I re-  
pent,' you must forgive him." The 5



apostles said to the Lord, "Give  
6 us more faith!" The Lord said,  
"If you had faith the size of a  
grain of mustard-seed, you would  
say to this mulberry tree, 'Be up-  
rooted and planted in the sea,' and  
7 it would obey you. Which of  
you, with a servant out plough-  
ing or shepherding, will say to him  
when he comes in from the field,  
'Come at once and take your place  
8 at table'? Will the man not  
rather say to him, 'Get something  
ready for my supper; gird yourself  
and wait on me till I eat and drink;  
then you can eat and drink your-  
9 self'? Does he thank the servant  
10 for doing his bidding? Well, it is  
the same with you; when you have  
done all you are bidden, say, 'We  
are but servants;\* we have only  
done our duty.'"  
11 Now it happened in the course of  
his journey to Jerusalem that he  
passed between Samaria and Gali-  
12 lee. On entering one village he was  
met by ten lepers who stood at a  
13 distance and lifted up their voice,  
saying, "Jesus, master, have pity  
14 on us." Noticing them he said,  
"Go and *show yourselves to the*  
*priests.*" And as they went away  
15 they were cleansed. Now one of  
them turned back when he saw he  
was cured, glorifying God with a  
16 loud voice; and he fell on his face  
at the feet of Jesus and thanked  
him. The man was a Samaritan.  
17 So Jesus said, "Were all the ten not  
cleansed? Where are the other  
18 nine? Was there no one to return  
and give glory to God except this  
19 foreigner?" And he said to him,

\* Omitting ἀχρεῖς with Syr.<sup>sin</sup>. fol-  
lowed by most recent editors. The  
emphasis falls on the simple fact of being  
slaves, not on any distinction between  
good and bad slaves.

"Get up and go, your faith has  
made you well."

On being asked by the Pharisees 20  
when the Reign of God was com-  
ing, he answered them, "The  
Reign of God is not coming as you  
hope to catch sight of it; no one 21  
will say, 'Here it is' or 'There it  
is,' for the Reign of God is now in  
your midst." To his disciples he 22  
said, "There will come days when  
you will long and long in vain to  
have even one day of the Son of  
man. Men will say, 'See, here he 23  
is!' 'See, there he is!' but  
do not go out or run after  
them,

for like lightning that flashes 24  
from one side of the sky to  
the other,

so will the Son of man be on  
his own day.

But he must first endure great 25  
suffering and be rejected by the  
present generation. And just as it 26  
was in the days of Noah, so will it  
be in the days of the Son of man;  
they were eating, drinking, marry- 27  
ing and being married, till the day  
*Noah entered the ark*—then came  
the deluge and destroyed them all.  
Or just as it was in the days of Lot; 28  
they were eating, drinking, buying,  
selling, planting and building, but on 29  
the day that Lot left Sodom *it rained*  
*fire and brimstone from heaven* and  
destroyed them all. So will it be on 30  
the day the Son of man is revealed.  
On that day, if a man is on the 31  
housetop and his goods inside the  
house, he must not go down to fetch  
them out; nor must a man in the  
field *turn back* (remember Lot's 32  
wife).

Whoever tries to secure his life 33  
will lose it,  
and whoever loses it will preserve  
it.

34 On that night, I tell you,  
there will be two men in the one  
bed,  
the one will be taken and the  
other left;  
35 two women will be grinding to-  
gether,  
the one will be taken and the  
other left.”  
37 They asked him, “Where, Lord?”  
And he said to them,  
“Where the body is lying,  
there the vultures will  
gather.”

CHAP.

18 HE also told them a parable  
about the need of always praying  
2 and never losing heart. “In a  
certain town,” he said, “there was  
a judge who had no reverence for  
God and no respect even for man.  
3 And in that town there was a widow  
who used to go and appeal to him  
for ‘Justice against my opponent!’  
4 For a while he would not, but after-  
wards he said to himself, ‘Though  
I have no reverence for God and no  
5 respect even for man, still, as this  
widow is bothering me, I will see  
justice done to her—not to have  
her for ever coming and pestering  
6 me.’ Listen,” said the Lord, “to  
7 what this unjust judge says! And  
will not God see justice done to his  
elect who cry to him by day and  
night? Will he be tolerant to their  
8 opponents? I tell you, he will  
quickly see justice done to his elect!  
And yet, when the Son of man  
does come, will he find faith on  
earth?”  
9 He also told the following parable  
to certain persons who were sure of  
their own goodness and looked down  
10 upon everybody else. “Two men  
went up to pray in the temple; one  
was a Pharisee and the other was a

taxgatherer. The Pharisee stood 11  
up and prayed by himself as follows;  
‘I thank thee, O God, I am not like  
the rest of men, thieves, rogues,  
and immoral, or even like yon tax-  
gatherer. Twice a week I fast; 12  
on all my income I pay tithes.’  
But the taxgatherer stood far away 13  
and would not lift even his eyes to  
heaven, but beat his breast, saying,  
‘O God, have mercy on me for my  
sins!’ I tell you, he went home 14  
accepted by God rather than the  
other man;

for everyone who uplifts himself  
will be humbled,  
and he who humbles himself  
will be uplifted.”

Now people even brought their 15  
infants for him to touch them;  
when the disciples noticed it they  
checked them, but Jesus called for 16  
the infants. “Let the children  
come to me,” he said, “do not stop  
them: the Realm of God belongs  
to such as these. I tell you truly, 17  
whoever will not submit to the  
Reign of God like a child will never  
get into it at all.”

Then a ruler asked him, “Good 18  
teacher, what am I to do to inherit  
life eternal?” Jesus said to him, 19  
“Why call me ‘good’? No one is  
good, no one but God. You know 20  
the commands: *do not commit  
adultery, do not kill, do not steal, do  
not bear false witness, honour your  
father and mother.*” He said, “I 21  
have observed all these commands  
from my youth.” When Jesus 22  
heard this, he said to him, “You  
lack one thing more; sell all you  
have, distribute the money among  
the poor and you will have treasure  
in heaven; then come and follow  
me.” But when he heard that, he 23  
was vexed, for he was extremely  
rich. So Jesus looked at him and 24



said, "How difficult it is for those who have money to enter the Realm of God! Why, it is easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich man to get into the Realm of God." His hearers said, "Then whoever can be saved?" He said, "What is impossible for men is possible for God." Peter said, "Well, we have left our homes and followed you!" He said to them, "I tell you truly, no one has left home or wife or brothers or parents or children for the sake of the Realm of God, who does not receive ever so much more in this present world, and in the world to come life eternal." Then he took the twelve aside and told them, "We are going up to Jerusalem, and all the predictions of the prophets regarding the Son of man will be fulfilled; he will be betrayed to the Gentiles, mocked, illtreated, and spat on; they will scourge him and kill him, but he will rise again on the third day." However, they did not understand a word of this; indeed the saying was hidden from them, and they did not know what he meant.

As he approached Jericho, it chanced that a blind man was seated beside the road begging. When he heard the crowd passing he inquired what was the matter, and they told him that Jesus the Nazarene was going by. So he shouted, "Jesus, Son of David, have pity on me!" The people in front checked him and told him to be quiet, but he shouted all the more, "Son of David, have pity on me!" So Jesus stopped and ordered them to bring him, and asked him when he approached, "What do you want me to do for you?"

"Lord," he said, "I want to regain my sight." And Jesus said to him, "Regain your sight, your faith has made you well." Instantly he regained his sight and followed him, glorifying God. And all the people gave praise to God when they saw this.

CHAP.

THEN he entered Jericho. And 19  
as he passed through it, there was a 2  
man called Zacchaeus, the head of  
the taxgatherers, a wealthy man,  
who tried to see what Jesus was 3  
like; but he could not, on account of  
the crowd—for he was small of  
stature. So he ran forward and 4  
climbed into a sycomore tree to get  
a sight of him, as he was to pass  
that road. But when Jesus reached 5  
the spot he looked up and said to  
him, "Zacchaeus, come down at  
once, for I must stay at your house  
to-day." He came down at once 6  
and welcomed him gladly. But 7  
when they saw this, everyone began  
to mutter that he had gone to be  
the guest of a sinner. So Zacchaeus 8  
stopped and said to the Lord, "I  
will give the half of all I have, Lord,  
to the poor, and if I have cheated  
anybody I will give him back four  
times as much." And Jesus said 9  
of him, "To-day salvation has come  
to this house, since Zacchaeus here  
is a son of Abraham. For the Son 10  
of man has come to seek and save  
the lost." He went on to tell a 11  
parable in their hearing, as he was  
approaching Jerusalem and as they  
imagined God's Reign would in-  
stantly come into view. "A noble- 12  
man," he said, "went abroad to  
obtain royal power for himself and  
then return. He first called his 13  
ten servants, giving them each a  
five-pound note, and telling them,



‘Trade with this till I come back.’  
 14 Now his people hated him and sent  
 envoys after him to say, ‘We object  
 to him having royal power over us.’  
 15 However he secured the royal power  
 and came home. Then he ordered  
 the servants to be called who had  
 been given the money, that he might  
 find out what business they had  
 16 done. The first came up saying,  
 ‘Your five pounds has made  
 17 other fifty, sir.’ ‘Capital,’ he  
 said, ‘you excellent servant! be-  
 cause you have proved trustworthy  
 in a trifle, you are placed over  
 18 ten towns.’ Then the second came  
 and said, ‘Your five pounds has  
 19 made twenty-five, sir.’ To him  
 he said, ‘And you are set over  
 20 five towns.’ Then the next came  
 and said, ‘Here is your five  
 pounds, sir; I kept it safe in  
 21 a napkin, for I was afraid of  
 you, you are such a hard man—  
 picking up what you never put  
 down, and reaping what you  
 22 never sowed.’ He replied, ‘You  
 rascal of a servant, I will con-  
 vict you by what you have said  
 yourself. You knew, did you,  
 that I was a hard man, picking up  
 what I never put down, and reap-  
 23 ing what I never sowed! Why then  
 did you not put my money into  
 the bank, so that I could have  
 got it with interest when I came  
 24 back?’ Then he said to the by-  
 standers, ‘Take the five pounds  
 from him and give it to the man  
 25 with fifty.’ ‘Sir,’ they said, ‘he  
 26 has fifty already!’ ‘I tell you,  
 to everyone who has shall more  
 be given,  
 but from him who has nothing,  
 even what he has shall be  
 taken.  
 27 And now for these enemies of mine  
 who objected to me reigning over

them—bring them here and slay  
 them in my presence.’”

With these words he went forward 28  
 on his way up to Jerusalem. When 29  
 he was near Bethphage and Bethany  
 at the hill called the Olive-Orchard,  
 he despatched two of his disciples,  
 saying, “Go to the village in front, 30  
 and on entering it you will find a  
 colt tethered on which no one ever  
 has sat; untether it and bring  
 it. If anyone asks you, ‘Why are 31  
 you untethering it?’ this is what  
 you will say, ‘The Lord needs it.’”  
 The messengers went off and found 32  
 the colt exactly as he had told them.  
 As they were untethering it, the 33  
 owners said to them, “Why are  
 you untethering the colt?” And 34  
 they said, “Because the Lord needs  
 it.” So they brought it to Jesus, 35  
 and throwing their clothes on the  
 colt they mounted Jesus upon it.  
 As he went forward they spread 36  
 their clothes under him on the  
 road; and as he was now close to 37  
 the descent from the Hill of Olives,  
 all the multitude of the disciples  
 started joyfully to praise God with  
 a loud voice for all \* they had  
 seen, saying, 38

“Blessed be the king who comes in  
 the Lord’s name!  
 Peace in heaven and glory in the  
 High places!”

Some Pharisees in the crowd said 39  
 to him, “Check your disciples,  
 teacher.” But he replied, “I tell 40  
 you, if they were to keep quiet,  
 the very stones would shout.”  
 And when he saw the city, as he 41  
 approached, he wept over it, saying, 42  
 “Would that you too knew even to-  
 day on what your peace depends!  
 But no, it is hidden from you! A 43

\* Omitting *δυνάμεων* with the old  
 Syriac version, which preserves the ori-  
 ginal text *περὶ πάντων εἶδον λέγοντες*.

time is coming for you when your enemies will throw up ramparts round you and encircle you and  
 44 besiege you on every side and raze you and your children within you to the ground, leaving not one stone upon another within you—and all because you would not understand when God was  
 45 visiting you.” Then he went into the temple and proceeded to drive out those who were selling. “It is written,” he told them, “*my house shall be a house of prayer, but you have made it a den of robbers.*”  
 47 Day after day he taught within the temple. The high priests and scribes tried to have him put to death, and so did the leaders of the  
 48 people, but they could not discover what was to be done, for the whole of the people hung upon his lips.

## CHAP.

20 ONE day, when he was teaching the people in the temple and preaching the gospel, up came the priests and scribes along with the elders.  
 2 “Tell us,” they said, “what authority you have for acting in this way? Who was it that gave  
 3 you this authority?” He answered them, “Well, I will ask you a ques-  
 4 tion. Tell me, did the baptism of John come from heaven or from  
 5 men?” Now they reasoned to themselves, “If we say, ‘From heaven,’ he will ask, ‘Why did you not be-  
 6 lieve him?’ And if we say, ‘From men,’ the whole of the people will stone us, for they are convinced  
 7 John was a prophet.” So they answered that they did not know  
 8 where it came from. Jesus said to them, “No more will I tell you what authority I have for acting as I do.”  
 9 Then he proceeded to tell the

people the following parable. “A man *planted a vineyard*, leased it to vinedressers, and went abroad for some time. When the season 10 came round he sent a servant to the vinedressers to receive part of the produce of the vineyard, but the vinedressers flogged him and sent him off with nothing. He 11 proceeded to send another servant, and they flogged him too, insulted him and sent him off with nothing. Then he sent still a third, but this 12 one they wounded and threw outside. Said the owner of the vine- 13 yard, ‘What shall I do? I will send my beloved son; perhaps they will respect him.’ But when 14 the vinedressers saw him, they argued to themselves, ‘Here is the heir, let us kill him, so that the inheritance may be ours.’ And they 15 threw him outside the vineyard and killed him. Now what will the owner of the vineyard do to them? He will come and kill these 16 vinedressers and give the vineyard to others.” When they heard that, they said, “God forbid!” But 17 he looked at them and said, “Then what does this scripture mean?—

*The stone that the builders rejected is the chief stone now of the corner.*

Everyone who falls on that stone 18 will be shattered, and whoever it falls upon will be crushed.”

At that hour the scribes and high 19 priests tried to lay hands on him, but they were afraid of the people. They knew he had meant this parable for them. So watching 20 their chance they sent spies who pretended to be honest persons, in order to seize on what he said and get him handed over to the authority and jurisdiction of the governor.



21 They put this question to him,  
 "Teacher, we know you are straight  
 in what you say and teach, you do  
 not look to human favour but teach  
 22 the Way of God honestly. Is it  
 right for us to pay tribute to Caesar  
 23 or not?" But he noted their  
 24 knavery and said to them, "Show  
 me a shilling. Whose likeness  
 and inscription does it bear?"  
 25 "Caesar's," they replied. "Well  
 then," he said to them, "give Caesar  
 what belongs to Caesar, give God  
 26 what belongs to God." So they  
 could not seize on what he said  
 before the people, and marvelling  
 at his reply they said nothing.  
 27 Some of the Sadducees came up,  
 who deny any resurrection, and put  
 28 a question to him. "Teacher,"  
 they said, "Moses has written  
 this law for us, that *if a man's*  
*married brother dies and is childless,*  
*his brother is to take the woman*  
*and raise offspring for his brother.*  
 29 Well, there were seven brothers.  
 The first married a wife and died  
 30 childless. The second and the third  
 31 took her, as indeed all the seven did,  
 dying and leaving no children.  
 32 Afterwards the woman died too.  
 33 Now at the resurrection whose wife  
 will she be? She was wife to the  
 34 seven of them." Jesus said to  
 them, "People in this world marry  
 35 and are married, but those who  
 are considered worthy to attain  
 yonder world and the resurrection  
 from the dead neither marry nor  
 36 are married, for they cannot die any  
 more; they are equal to angels  
 and by sharing in the resurrection  
 37 they are sons of God. And that the  
 dead are raised has been indicated  
 by Moses in the passage on the  
 Bush, when he calls *the Lord 'God*  
*of Abraham and God of Isaac and God*  
 38 *of Jacob.'* God is not a God of dead

people but of living, for all live to  
 him." Some of the scribes de- 39  
 clared, "Teacher, that was a fine  
 answer!" They no longer dared 40  
 to put any question to him. But 41  
 he said to them, "How can people  
 say that the Christ is David's son?  
 Why, David himself says in the 42  
 book of psalms,

*The Lord said to my Lord, 'Sit at  
 my right hand,  
 till I make your enemies a foot- 43  
 stool for your feet.'*

David then calls him *Lord*. So 44  
 how can he be his son?" And in 45  
 the hearing of all the people he said  
 to his disciples, "Beware of the 46  
 scribes! They like to walk about  
 in long robes, they are fond of  
 getting saluted in the market-  
 places, of securing the front seats  
 in the synagogues and the best  
 places at banquets; they prey upon 47  
 the property of widows and offer  
 long unreal prayers. All the heavier  
 will their sentence be!"

CHAP.

Looking up he saw the rich 21  
 putting their gifts into the  
 treasury, and noticed a poor 2  
 widow putting two little coins  
 in. He said, "I tell you plainly, 3  
 this poor widow has put in  
 more than them all; for these 4  
 people all contributed out of their  
 surplus, but she has given out of her  
 neediness all her living."

Some were speaking of the temple 5  
 with its ornamentation of splendid  
 stones and votive gifts, but he said,  
 "As for what you see, there are days 6  
 coming when not a stone will be  
 left upon another, without being  
 torn down." So they asked him,  
 "Teacher, and when will this 7  
 happen? What will be the sign  
 for this to take place?" He said, 8



"Take care that you are not misled; for many will come in my name saying, 'I am he' and 'the time is near'—do not go after  
 9 them. And when you hear of wars and disturbances, do not be scared; *these have to come* first, but the end  
 10 is not at once." Then he said to them, *"Nation will rise against nation, and realm against realm,*  
 11 *there will be great earthquakes with famine and pestilence here and there, there will be awful portents*  
 12 *and great signs from heaven.* But before all that, men will lay hands on you and persecute you, handing you over to synagogues and prisons; you will be dragged before kings and governors for the sake of my  
 13 name. That will turn out an opportunity for you to bear witness. So resolve to yourselves that you will not rehearse your defence beforehand, for I will give you words and wisdom that not one of your opponents will be able to meet or refute.  
 14 You will be betrayed by your very parents and brothers and kinsmen and friends, and some of you will  
 15 be put to death. You will be hated by all on account of my name; but not a hair of your head will perish.  
 16 Hold out steadfast and you win your souls.  
 17 But whenever you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies, then be sure her desolation is not far away.  
 18 Then let those who are in Judaea fly to the hills, let those who are in the city escape, and let not those who are in the country come in  
 19 to the city; for these are *the days of the divine Vengeance*, in fulfilment of all that is written in scripture.  
 20 Woe to women with child and to women who give suck in those days, for sore anguish will come upon the land and Wrath on this people;

they will fall by the edge of the 24 sword, they will be carried prisoners to all nations, and *Jerusalem will be under the heel of the Gentiles* till the period of the Gentiles expires. And there will be signs in sun and 25 moon and stars, while on earth the nations will be in dismay with bewilderment *at the roar of sea and waves*, men swooning with panic 26 and foreboding of what is to befall the universe. For *the orbs of the heavens will be shaken*, and then 27 they will see *the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.* But when these things begin 28 to happen, look up and raise your heads, for your release is not far distant." And he told them a par- 29 able. "Look at the fig tree and indeed all the trees; as soon as they 30 put out their leaves, you can see for yourselves that summer is at hand. So, whenever you see all this hap- 31 pen, be sure the Reign of God is at hand.

I tell you truly, the present 32 generation will not pass away till all this happens. Heaven and 33 earth will pass away, but my words never.

Take heed to yourselves in case 34 your hearts get overpowered by dissipation and drunkenness and worldly anxieties, and so that Day catches you suddenly like a 35 trap. For it will come upon all *dwellers on the face of all the earth.* From hour to hour keep 36 awake, praying that you may succeed in escaping all these dangers to come and in standing before the Son of man."

By day he taught in the temple, 37 but at night he went outside the city and passed the night on the hill called the Olive-Orchard. And all 38 the people used to come early in the

morning to listen to him in the temple.

CHAP.

22 Now the feast of unleavened bread which is called the passover was near. The high priests and scribes were trying how to get him put to death (for they were afraid of the people), and Satan entered Judas called Iscariot, a member of the twelve, who went off to discuss with the high priests and commanders how he could betray him to them. They were delighted and agreed to pay him for it. He assented to this and sought a good opportunity for betraying him to them in the absence of the crowd.

7 Then came the day of unleavened bread when the paschal lamb had to be sacrificed. So Jesus despatched Peter and John, saying, "Go and prepare the passover for us that we may eat it." They asked him, "Where do you want us to prepare it?" He said to them, "When you enter the city you will meet a man carrying a water-jar: follow him to the house he enters, and tell the owner of the house, 'The Teacher asks you, Where is the room in which I can eat the passover with my disciples?' Then he will show you a large room upstairs with couches spread; make your preparations there." They went off and found it was as he had told them. So they prepared the passover, and when the hour came he took his place, with the apostles beside him. He said to them, "I have longed eagerly to eat this passover with you before I suffer, for I tell you I will never eat the passover again till the fulfilment of it in the Reign of God." And he took a

cup which was handed to him, gave thanks to God and said, "Take this and distribute it among yourselves, for I tell you I will never drink the produce of the vine again till such time as God's Reign comes." Then he took a loaf and after thanking God he broke it and gave it to them, saying, "This means my body given up for your sake; do this in memory of me." So too he gave them the cup after supper, saying, "This cup means the new covenant ratified by my blood shed for your sake. But the hand of my betrayer is on the table beside me! The Son of man moves to his end indeed as it has been decreed, but woe to the man by whom he is betrayed!" And they began to discuss among themselves which of them could possibly be going to do such a thing. A quarrel also rose among them as to which of them could be considered the greatest. But Jesus said to them,

"The kings of the Gentiles rule over them, and their authorities take the name of 'Benefactor': not so with you. He who is greatest among you must be like the youngest, and he who is chief like a servant. Which is the greatest, guest or servant? Is it not the guest?"

But I am among you as a servant.

It is you who have stood by me through my trials; so, even as my Father has assigned me royal power, I assign you the right of eating and drinking at my table in my Realm and of sitting on thrones to rule the twelve tribes of Israel. Simon, Simon, Satan has claimed the right



32 to sift you all like wheat, but I have  
prayed that your own faith may  
not fail. And you in turn must  
be a strength to your brothers."

33 "Lord," he said, "I am ready to  
go with you to prison and to death."

34 Jesus said, "I tell you, Peter, the  
cock will not crow to-day before  
you have three times denied that

35 you know me." And he said to  
them, "When I sent you out with  
neither purse nor wallet nor san-  
dals, did you want for anything?"

"No," they said, "for nothing."

36 Then he said to them, "But he who  
has a purse must take it now, and  
the same with a wallet; and he  
who has no sword must sell his

37 coat and buy one. For I tell you,  
this word of scripture must be ful-  
filled in me: *he was classed among*  
*criminals*. Yes, there is an end to

38 all that refers to me." "Lord,"  
they said, "here are two swords!"  
"Enough! Enough!" he an-  
swered.

39 Then he went outside and made  
his way to the Hill of Olives, as  
he was accustomed. The disciples  
40 followed him, and when he reached  
the spot he said to them, "Pray  
that you may not slip into tempta-

41 tion." He withdrew about a  
stone's throw and knelt in prayer,  
42 saying, "Father, if it please thee,  
take this cup away from me. But  
43 thy will, not mine, be done." [And  
an angel from heaven appeared to  
44 strengthen him; he fell into an  
agony and prayed with greater  
intensity, his sweat dropping to the  
45 ground like clots of blood.] Then  
rising from prayer he went to the  
disciples, only to find them asleep  
46 from sheer sorrow. He said to  
them, "Why are you sleeping?"

Get up and pray that you may  
47 not slip into temptation." While

he was still speaking, there came a  
mob headed by the man called  
Judas, one of the twelve. He  
approached in order to kiss Jesus,  
but Jesus said to him, "Judas! 48  
would you betray the Son of man  
with a kiss?" Now when the 49  
supporters of Jesus saw what was  
going to happen, they said, "Lord,  
shall we strike with our swords?"

And one of them did strike the 50  
servant of the high priest, cutting  
off his right ear. Jesus said, "Let 51  
me do this at least," and cured him  
by touching his ear. Then he said 52  
to the high priests and commanders  
of the temple and elders who had  
appeared to take him, "Have you  
sallied out to arrest me like a robber,  
with swords and clubs? Day after 53  
day I was beside you in the temple,  
and you never stretched a hand  
against me. But this is your hour,  
and the dark Power has its way."

Then they arrested him and led 54  
him away inside the house of the  
high priest. Peter followed at a  
distance and sat down among some  
people who had lit a fire in the court- 55  
yard and were sitting round it.  
A maidservant who noticed him 56  
sitting by the fire took a long look  
at him and said, "That fellow was  
with him too." But he disowned  
him, saying, "Woman, I know 57  
nothing about him." Shortly 58  
afterwards another man noticed  
him and said, "Why, you are one  
of them!" "Man," said Peter,  
"I am not." About an hour had 59  
passed when another man insisted,  
"That fellow really was with him.  
Why, he is a Galilean!" "Man," 60  
said Peter, "I do not know what  
you mean." Instantly, just as he  
was speaking, the cock crowed;  
the Lord turned round and looked 61  
at Peter, and then Peter remem-



bered what the Lord had told him, that 'Before cock-crow to-day you will disown me three times.'

62 And he went outside and wept bitterly.

63 Meantime the men who had Jesus in custody flogged him and made fun of him; blindfolding him they would ask him, "Prophecy, tell us who struck you?" And many another insult they uttered against him.

66 When day broke, the elders of the people all met along with the high priests and scribes, and had him brought before their Sanhedrin.

67 They said to him, "Tell us if you are the Christ." He said to them, "You will not believe me if I tell

68 you, and you will not answer me

69 when I put a question to you. But after this *the Son of man will be seated at God's right hand of power.*"

70 "Are you the Son of God then?" they all said. "Certainly," he

replied, "I am." So they said,

71 "What more evidence do we need? We have heard it from his own lips."

CHAP.

23 THEN the whole body of them

2 rose and led him to Pilate. They proceeded to accuse him, saying,

"We have discovered this fellow perverting our nation, forbidding tribute being paid to Cæsar, and alleging he is king messiah."

3 Pilate asked him, "Are you the king of the Jews?" He replied,

4 "Certainly." And Pilate said to the high priests and the crowds, "I cannot find anything criminal

5 about him." But they insisted, "He stirs up the people by teaching all over Judæa. He started from

6 Galilee and now he is here." When Pilate heard that, he asked if the

7 man was a Galilean, and ascertain-

ing that he came under the jurisdiction of Herod, he remitted him to Herod, who himself was in Jerusalem during those days. Herod was greatly delighted to see 8 Jesus; he had long wanted to see him, because he had heard about him and also because he hoped to see him perform some miracle. But though he put many questions 9 to him, Jesus gave him no answer. Meanwhile the high priests and 10 scribes stood and accused him with might and main. Then Herod and 11 his troops scoffed at him and made fun of him, and after arraying him in a bright robe he remitted him to Pilate. Herod and Pilate, became 12 friends that day—previously they had been at enmity.

Then summoning the high priests 13 and rulers and the people, Pilate said to them, "You brought me this 14 man as being an inciter to rebellion among the people. I have examined him before you and found nothing criminal about him, for all your accusations against him. No, nor 15 has Herod, for he has remitted him to us. He has done nothing, you see, that calls for death; so I shall 16 release him with a whipping."\* 18 But they shouted one and all, "Away with him! Release Bar-Abbas for us!" (This was a man 19 who had been put into prison on account of a riot which had taken place in the city and also on a charge of murder.) Again Pilate addressed 20 them, for he wanted to release Jesus, but they roared, "To the cross, 21 to the cross with him!" He asked 22 them a third time, "But what crime has he committed? I have found nothing about him that deserves

\* Omitting [ἀνάγκην δὲ εἶχεν ἀπολύειν αὐτοῖς κατὰ ἑορτὴν ἕνα] as an explanatory and harmonistic gloss.

death; so I shall release him with  
 23 a whipping." But they loudly  
 urged their demand that he should  
 be crucified, and their shouts carried  
 24 the day. Pilate gave sentence that  
 their demand was to be carried  
 25 out; he released the man they  
 wanted, the man who had been  
 imprisoned for riot and murder,  
 and Jesus he handed over to their  
 will.

26 As they led him off they caught  
 hold of Simon a Cyrenian on his way  
 from the country and laid the cross  
 27 on him to carry after Jesus. He  
 was followed by a large multitude  
 of the people and also of women  
 who beat their breasts and lamented  
 28 him; but Jesus turned to them  
 and said, "Daughters of Jerusalem,  
 weep not for me but weep for your-  
 29 selves and for your children! For  
 there are days coming when the cry  
 will be,

'Blessed are the barren,  
 the wombs that never have  
 borne  
 and the breasts that never have  
 suckled!'

30 Then will people say *to the moun-  
 tains, 'Fall on us!'* and *to  
 the hills, 'Cover us.'*

31 For if this is what they do when  
 the wood is green,  
 what will they do when the  
 wood is dry?"

32 Two criminals were also led out  
 33 with him to be executed, and when  
 they came to the place called The  
 Skull they crucified him there with  
 the criminals, one at his right and  
 34 one at his left. Jesus said, "Father,  
 forgive them, they do not know  
 what they are doing." Then they  
*distributed his clothes among them-*  
 35 *selves by drawing lots.* The people  
 stood and looked on, and even  
 the rulers sneered at him, saying,

"He saved others, let him save him-  
 self, if he is the Christ of God, the  
 Chosen One!" The soldiers made 36  
 fun of him too by coming up and  
 handing him vinegar, saying, "If 37  
 you are the king of the Jews, save  
 yourself." (For there was an 38  
 inscription over him in Greek and  
 Latin and Hebrew characters,

THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.)

One of the criminals who had been 39  
 hung also abused him, saying, "Are  
 you not the Christ? Save your-  
 self and us as well." But the other 40  
 checked him, saying, "Have you  
 no fear even of God? You are  
 suffering the same punishment as  
 he. And we suffer justly; we are 41  
 getting what we deserve for our  
 deeds. But he has done no harm."  
 And he added, "Jesus, do not for- 42  
 get me when you come to reign."  
 "I tell you truly," said Jesus, "you 43  
 will be in paradise with me this very  
 day."

By this time it was about twelve 44  
 o'clock, and darkness covered the  
 whole land till three o'clock, owing 45  
 to an eclipse of the sun; the cur-  
 tain in the middle of the temple  
 was torn in two. Then with a loud 46  
 cry Jesus said, "Father, *I trust my  
 spirit to thy hands,*" and with these  
 words he expired. When the army- 47  
 captain saw what had happened,  
 he glorified God, saying, "This man  
 was really innocent." And when 48  
 all the crowds who had collected  
 for the sight saw what had hap-  
 pened, they turned away beating  
 their breasts. As for *his acquaint-* 49  
*ances, they were all standing at a dis-*  
*tance* to look on, with the women who  
 had accompanied him from Galilee.

Now there was a man called 50  
 Joseph, a member of council but  
 a good and just man who had not 51



voted for their plan of action; he belonged to Arimathaea, a Jewish town, and he was on the outlook for the Reign of God. This Joseph went to Pilate and asked him for the body of Jesus. He then took it down, wrapped it in linen, and put it in a tomb cut out of the rock, where no one had yet been buried. It was the day of the Preparation and the sabbath was just dawning. So the women who had accompanied him from Galilee and who had followed Joseph, noted the tomb and the position of the body; then they went home and prepared spices and perfumes.

CHAP.

24 ON the sabbath they rested in obedience to God's command, but on the first day of the week at early dawn they took the spices they had prepared and went to the tomb. The boulder they found rolled away from the tomb, but when they went inside they could not find the body of the Lord Jesus. They were puzzling over this, when two men flashed on them in dazzling raiment. They were terrified and bent their faces to the ground, but the men said to them, "Why do you look among the dead for him who is alive? He is not here, he has risen. Remember how he told you when he was still in Galilee that the Son of man had to be betrayed into the hands of sinful men and be crucified and rise on the third day." Then they remembered what he had said, and turning away from the tomb they reported all this to the eleven and all the others. (It was Mary of Magdala, Joanna, and Mary the mother of James who with the rest of the women told this to the 11 apostles.) But this story of the

women seemed in their opinion to be nonsense; they would not believe them. Peter did get up and run to the tomb, but when he looked in he saw nothing except the linen bandages; so he went away home wondering what had happened.

That very day two of them were on their way to a village called Emmaus about seven miles from Jerusalem. They were conversing about all these events, and during their conversation and discussion Jesus himself approached and walked beside them, though they were prevented from recognizing him. He said to them, "What is all this you are debating on your walk?" They stopped, looking downcast, and one of them, called Cleopas, answered him, "Are you a lone stranger in Jerusalem, not to know what has been happening there?" "What is that?" he said to them. They replied, "All about Jesus of Nazaret! To God and all the people he was a prophet strong in action and utterance, but the high priests and our rulers delivered him up to be sentenced to death and crucified him. Our own hope was that he would be the redeemer of Israel; but he is dead, and that is three days ago! Though some women of our number gave us a surprise; they were at the tomb early in the morning and could not find his body, but they came to tell us they had actually seen a vision of angels who declared he was alive. Some of our company did go to the tomb and found things exactly as the women had said, but they did not see him." He said to them, "O foolish men, with hearts so slow to believe, after all the prophets have declared! Had not the Christ



to suffer thus and so enter his  
 27 glory?" Then he began with  
 Moses and all the prophets and  
 interpreted to them the passages  
 referring to himself throughout the  
 28 scriptures. Now they approached  
 the village to which they were going.  
 He pretended to be going further  
 29 on, but they pressed him, saying,  
 "Stay with us, for it is getting  
 towards evening and the day has  
 now declined." So he went in to  
 30 stay with them. And as he lay at  
 table with them he took the loaf,  
 blessed it, broke it and handed it  
 31 to them. Then their eyes were  
 opened and they recognized him,  
 but he vanished from their sight.  
 32 And they said to one another,  
 "Did not our hearts glow within  
 us when he was talking to us on  
 the road, opening up the scriptures  
 33 for us?" So they got up and re-  
 turned that very hour to Jerusalem,  
 where they found the eleven and  
 34 their friends all gathered, who told  
 them that the Lord had really risen  
 and that he had appeared to Simon.  
 35 Then they related their own ex-  
 perience on the road and how they  
 had recognized him when he broke  
 36 the loaf. Just as they were speak-  
 ing He stood among them [and said  
 37 to them, "Peace to you!"] They  
 were scared and terrified, imagining  
 it was a ghost they saw; but he  
 38 said to them, "Why are you upset?  
 Why do doubts invade your mind?

Look at my hands and feet. It 39  
 is I! Feel me and see; a ghost  
 has not flesh and bones as you see  
 I have." [With these words he 40  
 showed them his hands and feet.]  
 Even yet they could not believe it 41  
 for sheer joy; they were lost in  
 wonder. So he said to them, "Have  
 you any food here?" And when 42  
 they handed him a piece of broiled  
 fish, he took and ate it in their 43  
 presence. Then he said to them, 44  
 "When I was still with you, this is  
 what I told you, that whatever is  
 written about me in the law of Moses  
 and the prophets and the psalms  
 must be fulfilled." Then he opened 45  
 their minds to understand the scrip-  
 tures. "Thus," he said, "it is 46  
 written that the Christ has to suffer  
 and rise from the dead on the third  
 day, and that repentance and the 47  
 remission of sins must be preached  
 in his name to all nations, beginning  
 from Jerusalem. To this you must 48  
 bear testimony. And I will send 49  
 down on you what my Father has  
 promised; wait in the city till you  
 are endued with power from on 50  
 high." He led them out as far as  
 Bethany; then, lifting his hands,  
 he blessed them. And as he blessed 51  
 them he parted from them [and was  
 carried up to heaven.] They [wor- 52  
 shipped him and] returned with  
 great joy to Jerusalem, where they  
 spent all their time within the 53  
 temple, blessing God.

## THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO

### S. JOHN

CHAP.

- 1 THE Logos existed in the very beginning,  
the Logos was with God,  
the Logos was divine.
- 2 He was with God in the very beginning :
- 3 through him all existence came into being,  
no existence came into being apart from him.
- 4 In him life lay,  
and this life was the Light for men :
- 5 amid the darkness the Light shone,  
but the darkness did not master it.
- 6 A man appeared, sent by God,
- 7 whose name was John : he came for the purpose of witnessing, to bear testimony to the Light, so that all men might believe by means of
- 8 him. He was not the Light ; it was to bear testimony to the
- 9 Light that he appeared. The real Light, which enlightens every man, was coming then into the world :
- 10 he entered the world—  
the world which existed through him—  
yet the world did not recognize him ;
- 11 he came to what was his own,  
yet his own folk did not welcome him.
- 12 On those who have accepted him, however, he has conferred the right of being children of God, that is, on those who believe in his Name, 13 who owe this birth of theirs to

God, not to human blood, nor to any impulse of the flesh or of man. So the Logos became flesh and 14 tarried among us ; we have seen his glory—glory such as an only son enjoys from his father—seen it to be full of grace and reality. (John testified to him with the cry, 15 ‘ This was he of whom I said, my successor has taken precedence of me, for he preceded me.’) For 16 we have all been receiving grace after grace from his fulness ; while 17 the Law was given through Moses, grace and reality are ours through Jesus Christ. Nobody has ever 18 seen God, but God has been unfolded by the divine One, the only Son,\* who lies upon the Father’s breast.

Now here is John’s testimony. 19 When the Jews of Jerusalem despatched priests and Levites to ask him, “ Who are you ? ” he 20 frankly confessed—he did not deny it, he frankly confessed, “ I am not the Christ.” They asked him, 21 “ Then what are you ? Elijah ? ” He said, “ I am not.” “ Are you the Prophet ? ” “ No,” he answered. “ Then who are you ? ” 22 they said ; “ tell us, so that we can give some answer to those who sent us. What have you to say for yourself ? ” He said, “ I am 23

\* Although *θεός* (‘ the divine one ’) is probably more original than the variant reading *υἱός*, *μονογενής* (see ver. 14) requires some such periphrasis in order to bring out its full meaning here.

*the voice of one who cries in the desert,*

*'level the way for the Lord'—*

24 as the prophet Isaiah said." Now  
it was some of the Pharisees who  
25 had been sent to him; so they  
asked him, saying, "Then why are  
you baptizing people, if you are  
neither the Christ nor Elijah nor  
26 the Prophet?" "I am baptizing  
with water," John replied, "but  
my successor is among you, One  
27 whom you do not recognize, and I  
am not fit to untie the string of  
28 his sandal." This took place at  
Bethany on the opposite side of the  
Jordan, where John was baptizing.  
29 Next day he observed Jesus coming  
towards him and exclaimed,  
"Look, there is the lamb of God,  
who is to remove the sin of the  
30 world! That is he of whom I  
said, 'The man who is to succeed  
me has taken precedence of me, for  
31 he preceded me.' I myself did not  
recognize him; I only came to  
baptize with water, in order that  
he might be disclosed to Israel."  
32 And John bore this testimony also :  
"I saw the Spirit descend like a  
dove from heaven and rest on him.  
33 I myself did not recognize him, but  
He who sent me to baptize with  
water told me, 'He on whom you  
see the Spirit descending and resting,  
that is he who baptizes with the  
34 holy Spirit.' Now I did see it, and  
I testify that he is the Son of God."  
35 Next day again John was standing  
36 with two of his disciples; he  
gazed at Jesus as he walked about,  
and said, "Look, there is the lamb  
37 of God!" The two disciples heard  
what he said and went after Jesus.  
38 Now Jesus turned, and when he  
observed them coming after him, he  
asked them, "What do you want?"  
They replied, "Rabbi" (which

may be translated, 'teacher'),  
"where are you staying?" He  
said to them, "Come and see." 39  
So they went and saw where he  
stayed, and stayed with him the  
rest of that day—it was then about  
four in the afternoon. One of the 40  
two men who heard what John said  
and went after Jesus was Andrew,  
the brother of Peter. In the morn- 41  
ing\* he met his brother Simon and  
told him, "We have found the  
messiah" (which may be translated,  
'Christ'). He took him to Jesus; 42  
Jesus gazed at him and said, "You  
are Simon, the son of John? Your  
name is to be Cephas" (meaning  
'Peter' or 'rock').

Next day Jesus determined to 43  
leave for Galilee; there he met  
Philip and told him, "Follow me."  
Now Philip belonged to Bethsaida, 44  
the same town as Andrew and  
Peter; he met Nathanael and told 45  
him, "We have found him whom  
Moses wrote about in the Law,  
and also the prophets—it is Jesus,  
the son of Joseph, who comes  
from Nazaret." "Nazaret!" said 46  
Nathanael, "can anything good  
come out of Nazaret?" "Come  
and see," said Philip. Jesus saw 47  
Nathanael approaching and said of  
him, "Here is a genuine Israelite!  
There is no guile in him." Nathan- 48  
ael said to him, "How do you  
know me?" Jesus answered,  
"When you were under that fig  
tree, before ever Philip called  
you, I saw you." "Rabbi," said 49  
Nathanael, "you are the Son of  
God, you are the king of Israel!"  
Jesus answered, "You believe be- 50  
cause I told you I had seen you

\* The Greek word (*πρωι*) has been misread in nearly all the MSS. for "first" (*πρωτον*); see the note in Mrs. A. S. Lewis's *Old Syriac Gospels* (1910), pp. xxviii-xxix.



under that fig tree? You shall see  
 51 more than that." He said to him,  
 "Truly, truly I tell you all,\* you  
 shall see heaven open wide and  
*God's angels ascending and descend-*  
*ing upon the Son of man."*

## CHAP.

- 2 Two days later a wedding took  
 place at Cana in Galilee; the mother  
 2 of Jesus was present, and Jesus and  
 his disciples had also been invited  
 3 to the wedding. As the wine ran  
 short, the mother of Jesus said  
 to him, "They have no wine."  
 4 "Woman," said Jesus, "what have  
 you to do with me? My time has  
 5 not come yet." His mother said  
 to the servants, "Do whatever he  
 6 tells you." Now six stone water-  
 jars were standing there, for the  
 Jewish rites of 'purification,' each  
 holding about twenty gallons.  
 7 Jesus said, "Fill up the jars with  
 water." So they filled them to the  
 8 brim. Then he said, "Now draw  
 some out, and take it to the man-  
 9 ager of the feast." They did so;  
 and when the manager of the feast  
 tasted the water which had become  
 wine, not knowing where it had  
 come from (though the servants  
 who had drawn it knew), he called  
 10 the bridegroom and said to him,  
 "Everybody serves the good wine  
 first, and then the poorer wine after  
 people have drunk freely; you have  
 kept the good wine till now."  
 11 Jesus performed this, the first of  
 his Signs, at Cana in Galilee, thereby  
 displaying his glory; and his dis-  
 ciples believed in him.  
 12 After this he travelled down to  
 Capharnahum, with his mother and

brothers and his disciples; they  
 stayed there for a few days.†

After this Jesus and his disciples 22  
 went into the country of Judaea,  
 where he spent some time with  
 them baptizing. John was also 23  
 baptizing at Aenon near Salim, as  
 there was plenty of water there,  
 and people came to him and were  
 baptized (John had not yet been 24  
 thrown into prison). Now a dis- 25  
 pute arose between John's disciples  
 and a Jew over the question of  
 'purification'; and they came and 26  
 told John, "Rabbi, the man who  
 was with you on the opposite side  
 of the Jordan, the man to whom  
 you bore testimony—here he is,  
 baptizing, and everybody goes to  
 him!" John answered, "No one 27  
 can receive anything except as a  
 gift from heaven. You can bear 28  
 me out, that I said, 'I am not  
 the Christ'; what I said was, 'I  
 have been sent in advance of him.'  
 He who has the bride is the bride- 29  
 groom; the bridegroom's friend,  
 who stands by and listens to him,  
 is heartily glad at the sound of the  
 bridegroom's voice. Such is my  
 joy, and it is complete. He must 30  
 wax, I must wane."

Now the Jewish passover was 13  
 near, so Jesus went up to Jeru-  
 salem. There he found, seated in 14  
 side the temple, dealers in cattle,  
 sheep and pigeons, also money-  
 changers. Making a scourge of 15  
 cords, he drove them all, sheep  
 and cattle together, out of the  
 temple, scattered the coins of the  
 brokers and upset their tables, and 16  
 told the pigeon-dealers, "Away  
 with these! My Father's house is  
 not to be turned into a shop!"  
 (His disciples recalled the scripture 17

\* I insert the word 'all', to make it clear  
 that the 'you' of ver. 51 is plural. The  
 promise is more than a personal word to  
 Nathanael. Omit [ἀπ' ἀπρι].

† Transposing iii. 22-30 to its true  
 position between ii. 12 and ii. 13.

saying, *I am consumed with zeal for thy house.*) Then the Jews accosted him with the words, "What sign of authority have you to show us, for acting in this way?" Jesus replied, "Destroy this sanctuary and I will raise it up in three days." "This sanctuary took forty-six years to build," the Jews retorted, "and you are going to raise it up in three days!" He meant the sanctuary of his body, however, and when the disciples recalled what he had said, after he had been raised from the dead, they believed the scripture and the word of Jesus.

When he was in Jerusalem at the festival of the passover, many people believed in his name, as they witnessed the Signs which he performed. Jesus, however, would not trust \* himself to them; he knew all men, and required no evidence from anyone about human nature; well did he know what was in human nature.

CHAP.

Now there was a Pharisee named Nicodemus, who belonged to the Jewish authorities; he came one night to Jesus and said, "Rabbi, we know you have come from God to teach us, for no one could perform these Signs of yours unless God were with him." Jesus replied, "Truly, truly I tell you, no one can see God's Realm unless he is born from above." Nicodemus said to him, "How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter his mother's womb over again and be born?" Jesus replied, "Truly, truly I tell you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot

enter God's Realm. What is born of the flesh is flesh: what is born of the Spirit is Spirit. Do not wonder at me telling you, 'You must all be born from above.' The wind blows where it wills; you can hear its sound, but you never know where it has come from or where it goes: it is the same with everyone who is born of the Spirit." Nicodemus answered, "How can that be?" Jesus replied, "You do not understand this?—you, a teacher in Israel! Truly, truly I tell you, we are speaking of what we do understand, we testify to what we have actually seen—and yet you refuse our testimony. If you will not believe when I speak to you about things on earth, how will you believe if I speak to you about things in heaven? And yet the Son of man, descended from heaven, is the only one who has ever ascended into heaven. Indeed the Son of man must be lifted on high, just as Moses lifted up the serpent in the desert, that everyone who believes in him may have eternal life. For God loved the world so dearly that he gave up his only Son, so that everyone who believes in him may have eternal life, instead of perishing. God did not send his Son into the world to pass sentence on it, but to save the world by him. He who believes in him is not sentenced; he who will not believe is sentenced already, for having refused to believe in the name of the only Son of God. And this is the sentence of condemnation, that the Light has entered the world and yet men have preferred darkness to light. It is because their actions have been evil; for anyone whose practices are corrupt loathes the

\* The Vulgate is able to preserve the assonance of the word 'trust' here and 'believe' in ver. 23: "*multi crediderunt in nomine eius. . . . Iesus non credebatur semet ipsum eis.*"



light and will not come out into it, in case his actions are exposed, 21 whereas anyone whose life is true comes out into the light, to make it plain that his actions have been divinely prompted.

31 He who comes from above is far above all others; he who springs from earth belongs to earth and speaks of earth; he who comes from 32 heaven [is far above all others. He] is testifying to what he has seen and heard, and yet no one accepts 33 his testimony. Whoever does accept it, certifies to the truth of God. 34 For he whom God has sent utters the words of God—God gives him the Spirit in no sparing measure; 35 the Father loves the Son and has given him control over everything. 36 He who believes in the Son has eternal life, but he who disobeys the Son shall not see life—God's anger broods over him."

## CHAP.

4 Now when the Lord learned that the Pharisees had heard of Jesus gaining and baptizing more disciples than John (though Jesus himself did not baptize, it was his 2 disciples), he left Judaea and went 3 back to Galilee. He had to pass 4 through Samaria, and in so doing he arrived at a Samaritan town called Sychar; it lay near the territory which Jacob had given to his 6 son Joseph, and Jacob's spring was there. Jesus, exhausted by the journey, sat down at the spring, just as he was. It was about noon, 7 and a Samaritan woman came to draw water. Jesus said to her, 8 "Give me a drink" (his disciples had gone to the town to buy some 9 food). The Samaritan woman said, "What? You \* are a Jew, and you

\* The Greek word for 'you' (in the singular) occurs oftener in the Fourth gospel than

ask me for a drink—me, a Samaritan!" (Jews do not associate with Samaritans.) Jesus answered, "If 10 you knew what is the free gift of God and who is asking you for a drink, you would have asked him instead, and he would have given you 'living' water." "Sir," said 11 the woman, "you have nothing to draw water with, and it is a deep well; where do you get your 'living' water? Are you a greater 12 man than Jacob, our ancestor? He gave us this well, and he drank from it, with his sons and his cattle." Jesus answered, "Anyone who 13 drinks this water will be thirsty again, but anyone who drinks the 14 water I shall give him will never thirst any more; the water I shall give him will turn into a spring of water welling up to eternal life." "Ah, sir," said the woman, "give 15 me this water, so that I need not thirst or come all this road to draw water." Jesus said to her, "Go 16 and call your husband, then come back here." The woman replied, 17 "I have no husband." Jesus said to her, "You were right in saying, 'I have no husband'; you have had 18 five husbands, and he whom you have now espoused is not your husband. That was a true word." "Sir," said the woman, "I see you 19 are a prophet. Now our ancestors 20 worshipped on this mountain, whereas you Jews declare the proper place for worship is at Jerusalem." "Woman," said Jesus, "believe me, 21 the time is coming when you will be worshipping the Father neither on this mountain nor at Jerusalem.

in all the first three gospels put together. Dr. E. A. Abbott regards this as an indication of the evangelist's tendency 'to lay stress on personality, and to express personality in dialogue.'



22 You are worshipping something  
you do not know; we are wor-  
shipping what we do know—for  
23 salvation comes from the Jews. But  
the time is coming, it has come  
already, when the real worshippers  
will worship the Father in Spirit  
and in reality; for these are the  
worshippers that the Father wants.  
24 God is Spirit, and his worshippers  
must worship him in Spirit and  
25 in reality." The woman said to  
him, "Well, I know messiah (which  
means Christ) is coming. When he  
arrives, he will explain it all to us."  
26 "I am messiah," said Jesus, "I  
who am talking to you."  
27 At this point his disciples came  
up; they were surprised that he  
was talking to a woman, but none  
of them said, "What is it?" or,  
"Why are you talking to her?"  
28 Then the woman left her water-pot,  
and going off to the town told the  
29 people, "Come here, look at a man  
who has told me everything I ever  
did! Can he be the Christ?"  
30 They set out from the town on their  
31 way to him. Meanwhile the dis-  
ciples pressed him, saying, "Rabbi,  
32 eat something." But he said to  
them, "I have food, of which you  
33 know nothing." So the disciples  
asked each other, "Can anyone  
have brought him something to  
34 eat?" Jesus said, "My food is to  
do the will of him who sent me, and  
35 to accomplish his work. You have a  
saying, have you not, 'Four months  
yet, then harvest'? Look round,  
I tell you; see, the fields are white  
36 for harvesting! The reaper is  
already getting his wages and  
harvesting for eternal life, so  
that the sower shares the reaper's  
37 joy. That proverb, 'One sows and  
38 another reaps,' holds true here: I  
sent you to reap a crop for which

you did not toil; other men have  
toiled, and you reap the profit of  
their toil." Now many Samari- 39  
tans belonging to that town believed  
in him on account of the woman's  
testimony, "He told me everything  
I ever did." So when the Samari- 40  
tans arrived, they pressed him to  
stay with them; he did stay there  
two days, and far more of them 41  
believed on account of what he  
said himself. As they told the 42  
woman, "We no longer believe on  
account of what you said; we have  
heard for ourselves, we know that he  
is really the Saviour of the world."

When the two days were over, 43  
he left for Galilee (for Jesus himself 44  
testified that a prophet enjoys no  
honour in his own country); on 45  
reaching Galilee, he was welcomed  
by the Galileans, who had seen all he  
did at the festival in Jerusalem—for  
they too had gone to the festival.

Once more he came to Can in 46  
Galilee, where he had turned the  
water into wine. There was a royal  
official, whose son was lying ill at  
Capernaum; when he heard that 47  
Jesus had arrived in Galilee from  
Judaea, he went to him and begged  
him to come down and cure his son,  
who was at the point of death.  
Jesus said to him, "Unless you see 48  
signs and wonders, you never will  
believe." The official said, "Come 49  
down, sir, before my boy is dead."  
Jesus told him, "Go yourself, your 50  
son is alive." The man believed  
what Jesus told him, and started on  
his journey. And on the road his 51  
servants met him with the news  
that his boy was alive. So he asked 52  
them at what hour he had begun  
to improve; they told him, "Yes-  
terday at one o'clock the fever left  
him." Then the father realized 53  
that it had left him at the very

time when Jesus had said to him, "Your son is alive"; and he became a believer with all his household.  
 54 This was the second Sign which Jesus performed again after leaving Judaea for Galilee.

CHAP.

5 AFTER this there was a festival of the Jews, and Jesus went up 2 to Jerusalem. Now in Jerusalem there is a bath beside the sheep-pool, which is called in Hebrew Beth-zatha; it has five porticoes, 3 where a crowd of invalids used to lie, the blind, the lame, and folk with shrivelled limbs [waiting for 4 the water to bubble. For an angel used to descend from time to time into the bath, and disturb the water; whereupon the first person who stepped in after the water was disturbed was restored to health, no matter what disease he had been 5 afflicted with].\* Now one man was there, whose illness had lasted 6 thirty-eight years. Jesus saw him lying, and knowing he had been ill for a long while he said to him, "Do you want your health re- 7 stored?" The invalid replied, "Sir, I have nobody to put me into the bath, when the water is disturbed; and while I am getting down myself, someone else gets in before 8 me." Jesus said to him, "Get 9 up, lift your mat, and walk." And instantly the man got well, lifted his mat, and started to walk.

Now it was the sabbath on that 10 day. So the Jews said to the man who had been cured, "This is the sabbath, you have no right to be 11 carrying your mat." He replied, "But the man who healed me, he

\* The words in brackets, omitted by von Soden, represent a passage which is absent from many important versions and manuscripts.

told me, 'Lift your mat and walk'." They questioned him, "Who was 12 it that told you, 'Lift it and walk'?" Now the man who had 13 been healed did not know who it was, for (owing to the crowd on the spot) Jesus had slipped away. Later on Jesus met him in the 14 temple, and said to him, "See, you are well and strong; commit no more sins, in case something worse befalls you." Off went the man 15 and told the Jews it was Jesus who had healed him. And this was 16 why the Jews persecuted Jesus, because he did things like this on the sabbath. The reply of Jesus 17 was, "As my Father has continued working to this hour, so I work too." But this only made the Jews more 18 eager to kill him, because he not merely broke the sabbath but actually spoke of God as his own Father, thereby making himself equal to God. So Jesus made 19 this answer to them: "Truly, truly I tell you, the Son can do nothing of his own accord, nothing but what he sees the Father doing; for whatever he does, the Son also does the same. The Father loves 20 the Son and shows him all that he is doing himself. He will show him still greater deeds than these, to make you wonder; for as the 21 Father raises the dead and makes them live, so the Son makes anyone live whom he chooses. Indeed the Father passes judgment 22 on no one; he has committed the judgment which determines life or death entirely to the Son, that all 23 men may honour the Son as they honour the Father. (He who does not honour the Son does not honour the Father who sent him.) Truly, truly I tell you, he who 24 listens to my word and believes



him who sent me has eternal life; he will incur no sentence of judgment, he has already passed  
 25 from death across to life. Truly, truly I tell you, the time is coming, it has come already, when the dead will listen to the voice of the Son of God, and those who  
 26 listen will live; for as the Father has life in himself, so too he has granted the Son to have life in  
 27 himself, and also granted him authority to act as judge, since he  
 28 is Son of man. Do not wonder at this; for there is a time coming when all who are in the tombs will  
 29 listen to his voice and come out, the doers of good to be raised to life, ill-doers to be raised for the sentence of judgment.

30 I can do nothing of my own accord; I pass judgment on men as I am taught by God, and my judgment is just, because my aim is not my own will but the will of  
 31 him who sent me. If I testify to myself, then my evidence is not  
 32 valid; I have Another to bear testimony to me, and I know the evidence he bears for me is valid.  
 33 You sent to John, and he bore  
 34 testimony to the truth (though I accept no testimony from man—I only speak of this testimony, that  
 35 you may be saved); he was a burning and a shining lamp, and you chose to rejoice for a while in his  
 36 light. But I possess a testimony greater than that of John, for the deeds which the Father has granted me to accomplish, the very deeds on which I am engaged, are my testimony that the Father has sent me.  
 37 The Father who sent me has also borne testimony to me himself; but his voice you have never heard,  
 38 his form you have never seen, his word you have not kept with you,

because you do not believe him whom he sent. You search the 39 scriptures, imagining you possess eternal life in their pages—and they do testify to me—but you 40 refuse to come to me for life. I 41 accept no credit from men, but I 42 know there is no love to God in you; here am I, come in the name of my 43 Father, and you will not accept me: let someone else come in his own name, and you will accept him! How can you believe, you who 44 accept credit from one another instead of aiming at the credit which comes from the only God? Do not 45 imagine I am going to accuse you to the Father; Moses is your accuser, Moses who is your hope! For if you believed Moses you 46 would believe me, since it was of me that he wrote. But if you do not 47 believe what he wrote, how will you ever believe what I say?"

The Jews were amazed, saying, 15 "How can this uneducated fellow manage to read?" Jesus told 16 them in reply, "My teaching is not my own but his who sent me; any- 17 one who chooses to do his will, shall understand whether my teaching comes from God or whether I am talking on my own authority. He 18 who talks on his own authority aims at his own credit, but he who aims at the credit of the person who sent him, he is sincere, and there is no dishonesty in him. Did 19 not Moses give you the Law?—and yet none of you honestly obeys the Law. Else, why do you want to kill me?" The crowd replied, "You 20 are mad. Who wants to kill you?" Jesus answered them, "I have only 21 performed one deed, and yet you are all amazed at it. Moses gave 22 you the rite of circumcision (not that it came from Moses, it came



from your ancestors), and you will circumcise a man upon the sabbath.  
 23 Well, if a man gets circumcised upon the sabbath, to avoid breaking the Law of Moses, are you enraged at me for curing, not cutting, the entire body of a man upon the  
 24 sabbath? Give over judging by appearances; be just.”\*

CHAP.

6 AFTER this Jesus went off to the opposite side of the sea of Galilee  
 2 (the lake of Tiberias), followed by a large crowd on account of the Signs which they had seen him  
 3 perform on sick folk. Now Jesus went up the hill and sat down  
 4 there with his disciples. (The passover, the Jewish festival, was  
 5 at hand.) On looking up and seeing a large crowd approaching, he said to Philip, “Where are we to buy bread for all these people  
 6 to eat?” (He said this to test Philip, for he knew what he was  
 7 going to do himself.) Philip answered, “Seven pounds’ worth of bread would not be enough for them, for everybody to get even a morsel.”  
 8 One of his disciples, Andrew the brother of Simon Peter, said to him,  
 9 “There is a servant here, with five barley-cakes and a couple of fish; but what is that among so many?”  
 10 Jesus said, “Get the people to lie down.” Now there was plenty of grass at the spot, so the men lay down, numbering about five thou-  
 11 sand. Then Jesus took the loaves, gave thanks to God, and distributed them to those who were reclining; so too with the fish, as much as  
 12 they wanted. And when they were satisfied, he said to the disciples, “Gather up the pieces left over,

so that nothing may be wasted.” They gathered them up, and filled 13 twelve baskets with pieces of the five loaves left over from the meal. Now when the people saw the 14 Sign he had performed, they said, “This really is the Prophet who is to come into the world!” Where- 15 upon Jesus perceived they meant to come and seize him to make a king of him; so he withdrew by himself to the hill again.

When evening came, his disciples 16 went down to the sea, and em- 17 barking in a boat they started across the sea for Capharnahum. By this time it was dark, Jesus had not reached them yet, and the 18 sea was getting up under a strong wind. After rowing about three 19 or four miles they saw Jesus walking on the sea and nearing the boat. They were terrified, but he said to 20 them, “It is I, have no fear”; so 21 they agreed to take him on board, and the boat instantly reached the land they were making for.

Next day the crowd which had 22 been left standing on the other side of the sea bethought them that only one boat had been there, and that Jesus had not gone aboard with his disciples, who had left by themselves. So, as some boats from 23 Tiberias had put in near the spot where they had eaten bread after the Lord’s thanksgiving, and as 24 the crowd saw that neither Jesus nor his disciples were there, they embarked in the boats themselves and made for Capharnahum in search of Jesus. When they found 25 him on the other side of the sea, they said, “Rabbi, when did you get here?” Jesus answered them, 26 “Truly, truly I tell you, it is not because you saw Signs that you are in quest of me, but because

\* Restoring vii. 15-24 to this, its original position in the gospel.

you ate these loaves and had your  
 27 fill. Work for no perishing food,  
 but for that lasting food which  
 means eternal life; the Son of  
 man will give you that, for the  
 Father, God, has certified him.”  
 28 Then they asked him, “What must  
 we do to perform the works of  
 29 God?” Jesus replied to them,  
 “This is the work of God, to believe  
 in him whom God has sent.”  
 30 “Well then,” they said, “what is  
 the Sign you perform, that we may  
 see it and believe you? What work  
 31 have you to show? Our ancestors  
 ate manna in the desert: as it is  
 written, *He gave them bread from*  
 32 *heaven to eat.*” Then said Jesus,  
 “What Moses gave you was not the  
 bread from heaven; it is my Father  
 who gives you the real bread from  
 33 heaven—for the bread of God is  
 what comes down from heaven  
 34 and gives life to the world.” “Ah,  
 sir,” they said to him, “give us  
 35 that bread always.” Jesus said,  
 “I am the bread of life; he who  
 comes to me will never be hungry,  
 and he who believes in me will never  
 36 be thirsty again. But, as I told  
 you, though you have seen me,  
 37 you do not believe. All those will  
 come to me who are the Father’s  
 gift to me, and never will I reject  
 38 one of them; for I have come down  
 from heaven not to carry out my  
 own will but the will of him who  
 39 sent me, and the will of him who  
 sent me is that I lose none of those  
 who are his gift to me, but that I  
 raise them all up on the last day.  
 40 It is the will of my Father that  
 everyone who sees the Son and  
 believes in him should possess  
 eternal life, and that I should raise  
 him up on the last day.”

41 Now the Jews murmured at him  
 for saying, “I am the bread which

has come down from heaven.”  
 They said, “Is this not Jesus the 42  
 son of Joseph? We know his father  
 and mother. How can he claim  
 now, ‘I have come down from  
 heaven’?” Jesus replied to them, 43  
 “Stop murmuring to yourselves.  
 No one is able to come to me 44  
 unless he is drawn by the Father  
 who sent me (and I will raise him up  
 on the last day). In the prophets 45  
 it is written, *and they will be all*  
*instructed by God*; everyone who has  
 listened to the Father and learned  
 from him, comes to me. Not that 46  
 anyone has seen the Father—he  
 only, who is from God, he has  
 seen the Father. Truly, truly I 47  
 tell you, the believer has eternal  
 life. I am the bread of life. 48  
 Your ancestors ate manna in the 49  
 desert, but they died; the bread 50  
 that comes down from heaven is  
 such that one eats of it and never  
 dies. I am the living bread which 51  
 has come down from heaven; if  
 anyone eats of this bread, he will  
 live for ever; and more, the bread  
 I will give is my flesh, given for the  
 life of the world.”

The Jews then wrangled with one 52  
 another, saying, “How can he give  
 us his flesh to eat?” So Jesus said 53  
 to them, “Truly, truly I tell you,  
 unless you eat the flesh of the Son  
 of man and drink his blood, you  
 have no life within you. He who 54  
 feeds on my flesh and drinks  
 my blood possesses eternal life  
 (and I will raise him up on the last  
 day), for my flesh is real food and 55  
 my blood is real drink. He who 56  
 feeds on my flesh and drinks my  
 blood remains within me, as I  
 remain within him. Just as the 57  
 living Father sent me and I live by  
 the Father, so he who feeds on me  
 will also live by me. Such is the 58



bread which has come down from heaven: your ancestors ate their bread and died, but he who feeds on this bread will live for ever."

59 This he said as he taught in the synagogue at Capharnahum.

60 Now many of his disciples, on hearing it, said, "This is hard to take in! Who can listen to talk

61 like this?" Jesus, inwardly conscious that his disciples were murmuring at it, said to them, "So

62 this upsets you? Then what if you were to see the Son of man ascending to where he formerly existed?

63 What gives life is the Spirit: flesh is of no avail at all. The words I have uttered to you are spirit and

64 life. And yet there are some of you who do not believe" (for Jesus

65 knew from the very first who the unbelieving were, and who was to betray him; that was why\* he said

'I tell you that no one is able to come to me unless he is allowed by the Father').

66 After that, many of his disciples drew back and would not associate

67 with him any longer. So Jesus said to the twelve, "You do not

68 want to go, too?" Simon Peter answered him, "Lord, who are we

69 to go to? You have got words of eternal life, and we believe, we are

70 of God." Jesus answered them, "Did I not choose you, the twelve?

And yet one of you is a devil!"

71 (He meant Judas the son of Simon Iscariot; for Judas was to betray him—and he was one of the twelve.)

CHAP.

7 AFTER this Jesus moved about in Galilee; he would not move in

\* Reading *διὰ τοῦτο ἔλεγεν*, with *e* (so Blass and Merx), instead of *ἐλέγεν διὰ τοῦτο*.

Judaea, because the Jews were trying to kill him.

Now the Jewish festival of booths was near, so his brothers said to

him, "Leave this and go across into Judaea, to let your disciples

witness what you can do; for nobody who aims at public recognition ever keeps his actions secret.

Since you can do these deeds, display yourself to the world" (for even his brothers did not

believe in him). Jesus said to them, "My time has not come yet, but your time is always at hand;

the world cannot hate you, but it hates me because I testify that its deeds are evil. Go up to the

festival yourselves; I am not going up to this festival, for my time has not arrived yet." So saying he

stayed on in Galilee. But after his brothers had gone up to the festival, he went up too, not publicly but as

it were privately. At the festival the Jews were in quest of him, saying, "Where is he?" And

the crowd disputed about him hotly; some said, "He is a good man," but others said, "No, he is

misleading the people." For fear of the Jews, however, nobody spoke

of him in public. When the festival was half over, Jesus

went up to the temple and began to teach.† Then said some of the Jerusalemites, "Is this not

the man they want to kill? Yet here he is, opening his lips in public, and they say nothing to

him! Can the authorities have really discovered that he is the Christ? No, we know where

this man comes from; but when the Christ does come, no one will know where he comes from." So Jesus cried aloud, as he was teaching

† See note, p. 121.



in the temple, "You know me? you know where I come from? But I have not come on my own initiative; I am sent, and sent by Him who is real. You do not know Him, but I know Him, because I have come from Him and He sent me." So they tried to arrest him; but no one laid hands on him, because his time had not come yet. Indeed many of the people believed in him, saying, "When the Christ does come, will he perform more Signs than this man?" The Pharisees heard the people discussing Jesus in this way, so the high priests and the Pharisees despatched attendants to arrest him. Then said Jesus, "I will be with you a little longer, then I go to Him who sent me; you will search for me but you will not find me, and where I go, you cannot come." The Jews said to themselves, "Where is he going, that we will not find him? Is he off to the Dispersion among the Greeks, to teach the Greeks?" What does he mean by saying, 'You will search for me but you will not find me, and where I go, you cannot come'?"

Now on the last day, the great day, of the festival, Jesus stood and cried aloud, "If anyone is athirst, let him come to me and drink; he who believes in me—out of his body, as scripture says, streams of living water will flow" (he meant by this the Spirit which those who believed in him were to receive:—as yet there was no Spirit, because Jesus had not been glorified yet). On hearing this some of the people said, "This really is the Prophet"; others said, "He is the Christ"; but others said, "No, surely the Christ does not come from Galilee? Does not scripture say it is from the

offspring of David, from David's village of Bethlehem, that the Christ is to come?" So the people were divided over him; some wanted to arrest him, but no one laid hands on him. Then the attendants went back to the high priests and Pharisees, who asked them, "Why have you not brought him with you?" The attendants replied, "No man ever spoke as he does." The Pharisees retorted, "Are you misled as well? Have any of the authorities or of the Pharisees believed in him? As for this mob, with its ignorance of the Law—it is accursed!" Nicodemus, one of their number (the same who had come to him before), said to them, "But surely our Law does not condemn the accused before hearing what he has to say and ascertaining his offence?" They answered him, "And are you from Galilee, too? Search and you will see that no prophet ever springs from Galilee."

[And every one of them went home, but Jesus went to the Hill of Olives. Early in the morning he returned to the temple, the people all came to him, and he sat down and taught them. The scribes and Pharisees brought a woman who had been caught in the act of committing adultery, and making her stand forward they said to him, "Teacher, this woman was caught in the very act of committing adultery. Now Moses has commanded us in the Law to stone such creatures; but what do you say?" (They said this to test him, in order to get a charge against him.) Jesus stooped down, and began to write with his finger on the ground; but as they persisted with their question, he raised himself and said to them, "Let

the innocent among you throw the  
 8 first stone at her"; then he stooped  
 down again and wrote on the ground.  
 9 And on hearing what he said, they  
 went away one by one, beginning  
 with the older men, till Jesus was  
 left alone with the woman standing  
 10 before him. Looking up, Jesus  
 said to her, "Woman, where are  
 they? Has no one condemned  
 11 you?" She said, "No one, sir."  
 Jesus said, "Neither do I; be off,  
 and never sin again."]\*  
 12 Then Jesus again addressed them,  
 saying, "I am the light of the  
 world: he who follows me will not  
 walk in darkness, he will enjoy the  
 13 light of life." So the Pharisees said  
 to him, "You are testifying to  
 yourself; your evidence is not valid."  
 14 Jesus replied to them, "Though I  
 do testify to myself, my evidence is  
 valid, because I know where I have  
 come from and where I am going  
 to—whereas you do not know  
 where I have come from or where  
 15 I am going to. You judge by the  
 16 outside. I judge no one; and though  
 I do judge, my judgment is true,  
 because I am not by myself—there  
 is myself and the Father who sent  
 17 me. Why, it is written in your  
 own Law that the evidence of two  
 18 persons is valid: I testify to my-  
 self, and the Father who sent me  
 19 also testifies to me." "Where is  
 your Father?" they said. Jesus  
 replied, "You know neither me nor  
 my Father; if you had known me  
 you would have known my Father  
 20 also." These words he spoke in the  
 treasury, as he was teaching in the  
 temple, but no one arrested him,  
 because his time had not come  
 yet.

\* It is uncertain to which, if any, of the canonical gospels this fragment of primitive tradition originally belonged.

Then he said to them again, "I 21  
 go away, and you will search for  
 me, but you will die in your sin;  
 where I go, you cannot come." So the Jews said, "Will he kill 22  
 himself? Is that why he says,  
 'Where I go, you cannot come'?"  
 He said to them, "You are from 23  
 the world below, I am from the  
 world above: you belong to this  
 world, I do not belong to this world.  
 So I told you, you would die in 24  
 your sins; for unless you believe  
 who I am, you will die in your  
 sins." They said, "Who are you?" 25  
 Jesus replied, "Why should I talk  
 to you at all? I have a great deal 26  
 to say about you and many a  
 judgment to pass upon you; but  
 he who sent me is true, and so I tell  
 the world what I have learned from  
 him." They did not understand 27  
 he was speaking to them about the  
 Father; so Jesus said, "When you 28  
 have lifted up the Son of man, you  
 will know then who I am, and that  
 I do nothing of my own accord,  
 but speak as the Father has taught  
 me. He who sent me is at my side; 29  
 he has not left me alone; for I  
 always do what pleases him." As 30  
 he said this, a number believed in  
 him. So Jesus addressed the Jews 31  
 who had believed him, saying, "If  
 you abide by what I say, you are  
 really disciples of mine: you will 32  
 understand the truth, and the truth  
 will set you free." "We are 33  
 Abraham's offspring," they re-  
 tortured, "we have never been slaves  
 to anybody. What do you mean  
 by saying, 'You will be free'?"  
 Jesus replied, "Truly, truly I tell 34  
 you, everyone who commits sin is  
 a slave.† Now the slave does not 35

† Omitting τῆς ἀμαρτίας with D, some evidence from the Latin and Syriac versions, etc. It is a gloss which disturbs the sense of the passage.



remain in the household for all time; the son of the house does.  
 36 So, if the Son sets you free, you  
 37 will be really free. I know you are Abraham's offspring! Yet you want to kill me, since my word makes no headway among you!  
 38 I speak of what I have seen with my Father, and you act as you have  
 39 learned from your father." They answered him, "Abraham is our father." "If you are Abraham's children," said Jesus, "then do as  
 40 Abraham did; but now you want to kill me—to kill a man who has told you the truth, the truth I have learned from God. Abraham  
 41 did not do that. You do the deeds of your father." They said to him, "We are no bastards: we have  
 42 one father, even God." Said Jesus, "If God were your father, you would love me, for I came here from God; I did not come of my own accord, I was sent by him.  
 43 Why do you not understand my speech? Because you are unable  
 44 to listen to what I am saying. You belong to your father the devil, and you want to do what your father desires; he was a slayer of men from the very beginning, and he has no place in the truth because there is no truth in him: when he tells a lie, he is expressing his own nature, for he is a liar and the  
 45 father of lies. It is because I tell the truth, that you do not believe  
 46 me. Which of you can convict me of sin? If I tell the truth, why  
 47 do you not believe me? He who belongs to God listens to the words of God; you do not listen to them, because you do not belong to God."  
 48 The Jews retorted, "Are we not right in saying you are a Samaritan,  
 49 you are mad?" Jesus replied, "I am not mad: I honour my

Father and you dishonour me. However, I do not aim at my own 50 credit; there is One who cares for my credit, and he is judge. Truly, 51 truly I tell you, if anyone holds to what I say, he will never see death." The Jews said to him, "Now we are 52 sure you are mad. Abraham is dead, and so are all the prophets; and you declare, 'If anyone holds to what I say, he will never taste death'! Are you greater than 53 our father Abraham? He is dead, and the prophets are dead. Who do you claim to be?" Jesus 54 replied, "Were I to glorify myself, my glory would be nothing; it is my Father who glorifies me; you say 'He is our God,' but you do 55 not understand him. I know him. Were I to say, 'I do not know him,' I would be a liar like yourselves; but I do know him and I hold to his word. Your father 56 Abraham exulted that he was to see my Day: he did see it and he rejoiced." Then said the Jews to 57 him, "You are not fifty years old, and Abraham has seen you?"\* "Truly, truly I tell you," said Jesus, 58 "I have existed before Abraham was born." At this they picked up 59 stones to throw at him, but Jesus concealed himself and made his way out of the temple.

CHAP.

As he passed along he saw a man 9 who had been blind from his birth; and his disciples asked him, "Rabbi, 2 for whose sin—for his own or for his parents'—was he born blind?" Jesus replied, "Neither for his 3 own sin nor for his parents'—it

\* Reading ἐώρακέν σε with N and the Sinaitic Syriac, etc.—"leçon plus naturelle peut-être que la leçon commune, mais qui a pu choquer, parce qu'elle semble mettre Abraham au-dessus du Christ" (Loisy).



was to let the work of God be  
 4 illustrated in him. While daylight  
 lasts, we must be busy with the  
 work of God : night comes, when  
 5 no one can do any work. When  
 I am in the world, I am light for  
 6 the world." With these words he  
 spat on the ground and made clay  
 with the saliva, which he smeared  
 7 on the man's eyes, saying, "Go and  
 wash them in the pool of Siloam"  
 (Siloam meaning 'sent'). So off  
 he went and washed them, and  
 8 went home seeing. Whereupon  
 the neighbours and those to whom  
 he had been a familiar sight as a  
 beggar, said, "Is this not the man  
 9 who used to sit and beg?" Some  
 said, "It is"; others said, "No,  
 but it is like him." He said, "I  
 10 am the man." So they asked him,  
 "How were your eyes opened?"  
 11 He replied, "The man they call  
 Jesus made some clay and smeared  
 my eyes with it and told me,  
 'Go and wash them in Siloam';  
 so I went and washed them, and I  
 12 got my sight." "Where is he?"  
 they asked; he answered, "I do not  
 13 know." They brought him be-  
 fore the Pharisees, this man who  
 14 had once been blind. Now it was  
 on the sabbath day that Jesus  
 had made clay and opened his eyes.  
 15 So the Pharisees asked him again  
 how he had regained his sight, and  
 he told them, "He smeared some  
 clay on my eyes, and I washed them,  
 16 and now I can see." Then said  
 some of the Pharisees, "This man  
 is not from God, for he does not  
 keep the sabbath"; others said,  
 "How can a sinner perform such  
 Signs?" They were divided on  
 17 this. So they asked the blind man  
 once more, "What have you to say  
 about him, for opening your eyes?"  
 The man replied, "I say he is a

prophet." Now the Jews would 18  
 not believe he had been born blind  
 and had regained his sight, till they  
 summoned the parents of the man  
 who had regained his sight and 19  
 asked them, "Is this your son,  
 the son you declare was born blind?  
 How is it that he can see now?"  
 His parents answered, "This is our 20  
 son, and he was born blind; we  
 know that. But how he can see 21  
 to-day, we do not know, nor do  
 we know who opened his eyes.  
 Ask himself; he is of age, he can  
 speak for himself." (His parents 22  
 said this because they were afraid  
 of the Jews; for the Jews had  
 already agreed that anyone who  
 confessed him to be Christ should  
 be excommunicated. That was 23  
 why the man's parents said, "He  
 is of age, ask himself.") So the 24  
 man born blind was summoned a  
 second time, and told, "Now give  
 God the praise; this man, we know  
 quite well, is only a sinner." To 25  
 which he replied, "I do not know  
 whether he is a sinner; one thing  
 I do know, that once I was blind  
 and now I can see." "What did 26  
 he do to you?" they repeated;  
 "How did he open your eyes?"  
 He retorted, "I have told you that 27  
 already, and you would not listen  
 to me. Why do you want to hear  
 it over again? Do you want to be  
 disciples of his?" Then they 28  
 stormed at him: "You are his  
 disciple, we are disciples of Moses!  
 We know God spoke to Moses, but 29  
 we do not know where this fellow  
 comes from." The man replied to 30  
 them, "Well, this is astonishing!  
 You do not know where he comes  
 from, and yet he has opened my  
 eyes! God, we know, does not 31  
 listen to sinners; he listens to any-  
 one who is devout and who obeys

32 his will. It is unheard of, since  
the world began, that anyone should  
33 open a blind man's eyes. If this  
man were not from God, he could  
34 do nothing." They retorted, "And  
so you would teach us—you, born  
in utter depravity!" Then they  
35 expelled him. Jesus heard that  
they had expelled him, and on  
36 meeting him he said, "You believe  
in the Son of man?"\* "Who is  
that, sir?" said the man, "tell me,  
37 that I may believe in him." "You  
have seen him," Jesus said, "he  
38 is talking to you." He said, "I  
do believe, Lord"—and he wor-  
39 shipped him. Then said Jesus,  
"It is for judgment that I have  
come into this world, to make the  
sightless see, to make the seeing  
40 blind." On hearing this the  
Pharisees who were beside him  
asked, "And are we blind?"  
41 Jesus replied, "If you were blind,  
you would not be guilty; but, as it  
is, you claim to have sight—and  
so your sin remains."†

19 The Jews were again divided over  
20 these words. A number of them  
said, "He is mad. Why listen to  
21 him?" Others said, "These are  
not a madman's words. Can a mad-  
man open the eyes of the blind?"

22 Then came the festival of Dedic-  
ation at Jerusalem; it was winter,  
23 and Jesus used to walk inside the  
temple, in the portico of Solomon.  
24 So the Jews gathered round him  
and asked, "How long are you  
going to keep us in suspense? If  
you are the Christ, tell us plainly."  
25 Jesus replied, "I have told you,  
but you do not believe; the deeds  
I do in the name of my Father

testify to me, but you do not 26  
believe, because you do not belong  
to my sheep. My sheep listen to 27  
my voice, and I know them and 28  
they follow me; and I give them  
eternal life; they will never perish,  
and no one will snatch them out  
of my hand. My Father who ‡ 29  
gave me them is stronger than all,  
and no one can snatch anything out  
of the Father's hand.

Truly, truly I tell you, he who 10  
does not enter the sheepfold by  
the gate but climbs up somewhere  
else, he is a thief and a robber;  
he who enters by the gate is the 2  
shepherd of the sheep. The gate- 3  
keeper opens the gate for him, and  
the sheep listen to his voice; he  
calls his sheep by name and leads 4  
them out. When he has brought 4  
all his sheep outside, he goes in  
front of them, and the sheep follow  
him because they know his voice; 5  
they will not follow a stranger, 5  
they will run from him, because  
they do not know the voice of  
strangers." Jesus told them this 6  
allegory, but they did not under-  
stand what he was saying to them;  
so he said to them again, "Truly, 7  
truly I tell you, I am the shepherd §  
of the sheep; all who ever came 8  
before me have been thieves and  
robbers—but the sheep would not  
listen to them. (I am the Gate; 9  
whoever enters by me will be saved,  
he will go in and out and find  
pasture.) The thief only comes 10  
to steal, to slay, and to destroy:  
I have come that they may have  
life and have it to the full. I am 11

‡ Reading *ὁς . . . μελίσσω* with A 1,  
the Syriac versions, etc.

§ *ὁ ποιμὴν* must be read here instead of  
*ἡ θύρα*, for the sake of the sense, although  
it seems to have been preserved by the  
Sahidic version alone.

\* Reading *ἀνθρώπου* instead of *θεοῦ*.

† Transposing x. 19–29, for the sake of  
sequence, to the close of ch. ix.



the good shepherd; a good shepherd lays down his own life for  
 12 the sheep. The hired man, who is not the shepherd and does not own the sheep, deserts them when he sees the wolf coming; he runs away, leaving the wolf to tear and  
 13 scatter them, just because he is a hired man, who has no interest  
 14 in the sheep. I am the good shepherd, I know my sheep and  
 15 my sheep know me (just as the Father knows me and I know the Father), and I lay down my life  
 16 for the sheep. I have other sheep, too, which do not belong to this fold; I must bring them also, and they will listen to my voice; so it will be one flock, one shepherd.  
 17 This is why my Father loves me, because I lay down my life to take  
 18 it up again. No one takes it from me, I lay it down of my own accord: I have power to lay it down and also power to take it up again; I have my Father's orders for  
 30 this. I and my Father are one—.”  
 31 The Jews again caught up stones  
 32 to stone him. Jesus replied, “I have let you see many a good deed of God; for which of them do you  
 33 mean to stone me?” The Jews retorted, “We mean to stone you, not for a good deed, but for blasphemy, because you, a mere man,  
 34 make yourself God.” Jesus answered, “Is it not written in your  
 35 Law, ‘*I said, you are gods*’? If the Law said they were gods, to whom the word of God came—and scripture cannot be broken—  
 36 do you mean to tell me, whom the Father consecrated and sent into the world, ‘*You are blaspheming,*’ because I said, ‘*I am God’s Son*’?  
 37 If I am not doing the deeds of my  
 38 Father, do not believe me; but if I am, then believe the deeds,

though you will not believe me—that you may learn and understand that the Father is in me and I am in the Father.” Once more 39 they tried to arrest him, but he escaped their hands and went 40 across the Jordan, back to the spot where John had baptized at first. There he stayed; and many came 41 to him, saying, “John did not perform any Sign, but all he ever said about this man was true.” And many believed in him there. 42

CHAP.

Now there was a man ill, 11 Lazarus of Bethany—the village of Mary and her sister Martha. (The Mary whose brother Lazarus was ill was the Mary who anointed the Lord with perfume and wiped his feet with her hair.) Jesus 2 loved Martha and her sister and Lazarus; \* so the sisters sent to him, saying, “Lord, he whom you love is ill.” When Jesus heard it, 4 he said, “This illness is not to end in death; the end of it is the glory of God, that the Son of God may be glorified thereby.” So, when 6 he heard of the illness, he stayed where he was for two days; then, 7 after that, he said to the disciples, “Let us go back to Judaea.” “Rabbi,” said the disciples, “the 8 Jews were trying to stone you only the other day; are you going back there?” Jesus replied, “Are there 9 not twelve hours in the day?

If one walks during the day he does not stumble,

for he sees the light of this world: but if one walks during the night 10 he does stumble, for the light is not in him.”

\* I venture to restore ver. 5 to what appears to have been its original position between vers. 2 and 3.



11 This he said, then added, "Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep; I am going to waken him."  
 12 "Lord," said the disciples, "if he has fallen asleep, he will get better."  
 13 Jesus, however, had been speaking of his death; but as they imagined  
 14 he meant natural sleep, he then told them plainly, "Lazarus is  
 15 dead; and for your sakes I am glad I was not there, that you may believe. Come now, let us go to  
 16 him." Whereupon Thomas (called 'the Twin') said to his fellow-disciples, "Let us go too, let us die along with him!"  
 17 Now when Jesus arrived, he found that Lazarus had been buried  
 20 for four days.\* Then Martha, hearing of the arrival of Jesus, went out to meet him, while Mary  
 21 sat at home. Said Martha to Jesus, "Had you been here, Lord, my brother would not have died.  
 22 But now—well, I know whatever you ask God for, he will grant you."  
 23 Jesus said to her, "Your brother  
 24 will rise again." "I know," said Martha, "he will rise at the resurrection, on the last day." Jesus  
 25 said to her, "I am myself resurrection and life:  
 he who believes in me will live, even if he dies,  
 26 and no one who lives and believes in me will ever die.  
 27 You believe that?" "Yes, Lord," she said, "I do believe you are the Christ, the Son of God, who  
 28 was to come into the world"—and with these words she went off to call her sister Mary, telling her secretly, "The Teacher is here,  
 29 and he is calling for you." So, on hearing this, Mary rose hurriedly

\* Another case of displacement; vers. 18 and 19 seem originally to have lain between vers. 30 and 31.

and went to him. Jesus had not 30 entered the village yet, he was still at the spot where Martha had met him. Now as Bethany is not 18 far from Jerusalem, only about two miles away, a number of Jews had 19 gone to condole with Martha and Mary about their brother; and when 31 the Jews who were condoling with her inside the house noticed her rise hurriedly and go out, they followed her, as they imagined she was going to wail at the tomb. But when 32 Mary came to where Jesus was and saw him, she dropped at his feet, crying, "Had you been here, Lord, my brother would not have died." Now when Jesus saw her wailing 33 and saw the Jews who accompanied her wailing, he chafed in spirit and was disquieted. "Where 34 have you laid him?" he asked. They answered, "Come and see, sir." Jesus burst into tears. 35 Whereupon the Jews said, "See 36 how he loved him!"—though some 37 of them asked, "Could he not have prevented him from dying, when he could open a blind man's eyes?" This made Jesus chafe afresh, so 38 he went to the tomb; it was a cave with a boulder to close it. Jesus 39 said, "Remove the boulder." "Lord," said Martha, the dead man's sister, "he will be stinking by this time; he has been dead four days." "Did I not tell you," 40 said Jesus, "if you will only believe, you shall see the glory of God?" Then they removed the boulder, 41 and Jesus, lifting his eyes to heaven, said, "Father, I thank thee for listening to me. (I knew thou 42 wouldst always listen to me, but I spoke on account of the crowd around, that they might believe thou hast sent me.)" So saying, 43 he exclaimed with a loud cry,

## S. JOHN XII

44 "Lazarus, come out!" Out came the dead man, his feet and hands swathed in bandages, and his face tied up with a towel. Jesus said, "Untie him, and let him move."

45 Now a number of the Jews who had come to visit Mary and who witnessed what he had done, be-  
46 lieved in him. But some of them went off to the Pharisees and told  
47 them what Jesus had done; where- upon the high priests and the Pharisees called a meeting of the Sanhedrin. "Whatever is to be  
48 done?" they said. "The fellow is performing a number of Signs. If  
49 we let him alone, like this, every- body will believe in him, and then the Romans will come and sup-  
50 press our holy Place and our nation." But one of them, Caiaphas, who was high priest that  
51 year, said, "You know nothing about it—you do not understand  
52 it is in your own interests that one man should die for the People, instead of the whole nation being  
53 destroyed." (He did not say this simply of his own accord; he was  
54 high priest that year, and his words were a prophecy that Jesus was to  
55 die for the nation, and not merely for the nation but to gather into one the scattered children of God.)  
56 So from that day their plan was to kill him. Accordingly Jesus no longer appeared in public among the Jews, but withdrew to the country adjoining the desert, to a town called Ephraim; there he stayed with the disciples.

55 Now the passover of the Jews was near, and many people went up from the country to Jerusalem, to purify themselves before the  
56 passover. They looked out for Jesus, and as they stood in the

temple they said to one another, "What do you think? Do you think he will not come up to the festival?" (The high priests and 57 the Pharisees had given orders that they were to be informed, if any- one found out where he was, so that they might arrest him.)

CHAP.

Six days before the festival, 12 Jesus came to Bethany, where Lazarus stayed (whom Jesus had raised from the dead). They gave 2 a supper for him there; Martha waited on him, and Lazarus was among those who reclined at table beside him. Then Mary, taking 3 a pound of expensive perfume, real nard, anointed the feet of Jesus and wiped his feet with her hair, till the house was filled with the scent of the perfume. One of 4 his disciples, Judas Iscariot (who was to betray him), said, "Why was 5 not this perfume sold for ten pounds, and the money given to the poor?" (Not that he cared for 6 the poor; he said this because he was a thief, and because he carried the money-box and pilfered what was put in.) Then said Jesus, 7 "Let her alone, let her keep what she has for the day of my burial. You have always the poor beside 8 you, but you have not always me."

Now the great mass of the Jews 9 learned he was there, and they came not only on account of Jesus but to see Lazarus whom he had raised from the dead. So the 10 high priests planned to kill Lazarus as well, since it was owing to him 11 that a number of the Jews went away and believed in Jesus.

Next day the great mass of 12 people who had come up for the festival heard that Jesus was enter- ing Jerusalem, and taking palm- 13



branches they went out to meet him, shouting,

*"Hosanna!*

*Blessed be he who comes in the*

14 *Lord's name,*  
*the king of Israel!"*

And Jesus came across a young ass and seated himself on it; as it is written,

15 *Fear not, daughter of Sion;*  
*here is your king coming,*  
*seated on an ass's colt.*

16 (His disciples did not understand this at first; but when Jesus was glorified, then they remembered this had been written of him and  
17 had happened to him.) Now the people who were with him when he called Lazarus from the tomb and raised him from the dead,  
18 testified to it; and that was why the crowd went out to meet him, because they heard he had performed this Sign. Then said the Pharisees to one another,  
19 "You see, you can do nothing! Look, the world has gone after him."

20 Now there were some Greeks among those who had come up to  
21 worship at the festival; they came to Philip of Bethsaida in Galilee and appealed to him, saying, "Sir,  
22 we want to see Jesus." Philip went and told Andrew; Andrew and Philip went and told Jesus.  
23 And Jesus answered, "The hour has come for the Son of man to be  
24 glorified. Truly, truly I tell you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the earth and dies, it remains a single grain; but if it dies, it bears  
25 rich fruit. He who loves his life loses it, and he who cares not for his life in this world will preserve it for eternal life.

26 If anyone serves me, let him follow me,

and where I am, there shall my servant be also:

if anyone serves me,  
my Father will honour him.

*My soul is now disquieted.* What 27  
am I to say? 'Father, save me from this hour'? Nay, it is something else that has brought me to this hour: I will say, 'Father, glorify 28  
thy name.' Then came a voice from heaven, "I have glorified it, and I will glorify it again."  
When they heard the sound, the 29  
people standing by said it had thundered; others said, "An angel spoke to him." Jesus answered, 30  
"This voice did not come for my sake but for yours. Now is this 31  
world to be judged; now the Prince of this world will be expelled. But I, when I am lifted up from the 32  
earth, will draw all men to myself." (By this he indicated the kind of 33  
death he was to die.) So the 34  
people answered, "We have learned from the Law that the Christ is to remain for ever; what do you mean by saying that the Son of man must be lifted up? Who is this Son of man?" Then Jesus said to them, 35  
"The Light will shine among you for a little longer yet; walk while you have the Light, that the darkness may not overtake you. He who walks in the dark does not know where he is going. While 36  
you have the Light, believe in the Light, that you may be sons of the Light." \* And Jesus cried 44  
aloud, "He who believes in me believes not in me but in him who sent me, and he who beholds 45  
me beholds him who sent me. I 46  
have come as light into the world, that no one who believes in me may remain in the dark. If any- 47

\* Restoring vers. 44-50 to their original position in the middle of ver. 36.



one hears my words and does not keep them, it is not I who judge him; for I have not come to judge the world but to save the world.  
 48 He who rejects me and will not receive my words has indeed a judge: the word I have spoken  
 49 will judge him on the last day, for I have not spoken of my own accord—the Father who sent me, he it was who ordered me what to say  
 50 and what to speak. And I know his orders mean eternal life. Therefore when I speak, I speak as the Father  
 36 has told me.” With these words Jesus went away and hid from them.  
 37 Now for all the Signs he had performed before them, they did  
 38 not believe in him—that the word spoken by the prophet Isaiah might be fulfilled:

*Lord, who has believed what they heard from us?*

*And to whom has the arm of the Lord been revealed?*

39 This was why they could not believe; for Isaiah again said,  
 40 *He has blinded their eyes and made their hearts insensible, to prevent them seeing with their eyes and understanding with their hearts and turning for me to cure them.*

41 (Isaiah said this because he saw  
 42 his glory and spoke of him.) Still, a number even of the authorities believed in him, though they would not confess it on account of the Pharisees, in case of being excommunicated; they preferred the approval of men to the approval of God.

CHAP.

13 Now before the passover festival Jesus knew the time had come for him to pass from this world to the Father. He had loved his own in this world and he loved

them to the end; so at supper, 2 knowing that though the devil had suggested to Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him, the 3 Father had put everything into his hands—knowing that he had come from God and was going to God, he rose from table, laid 4 aside his robe, and tied a towel round him, then poured water into 5 a basin, and began to wash the feet of the disciples, wiping them with the towel he had tied round him. He came to Simon Peter. 6 “Lord,” said he, “you to wash my feet!” Jesus answered him, “You 7 do not understand just now what I am doing, but you will understand it later on.” Said Peter, “You 8 will never wash my feet, never!” “Unless I wash you,” Jesus replied, “you will not share my lot.” “Lord,” said Simon Peter, “then 9 wash not only my feet but my hands and head.” Jesus said, “He 10 who has bathed only needs to have his feet washed; he is clean all over. And you are clean—but not all of you” (he knew the traitor; that 11 was why he said, “You are not all clean”). Then, after washing their 12 feet and putting on his robe, he lay down again. “Do you know,” he said to them, “what I have been doing to you? You call me Teacher 13 and Lord, and you are right: that is what I am. Well, if I have washed 14 your feet, I who am your Lord and Teacher, you are bound to wash one another's feet; for I have been 15 setting you an example, that you should do what I have done to you. Truly, truly I tell you, a 16 servant is not greater than his master, nor is a messenger greater than he who sent him. If you 17 know all this, blessed are you if you really do it. When I say ‘you,’ 18

I do not mean you all; I know the men of my choice, and I made my choice that this scripture might be fulfilled, *he who eats my bread has* 19 *lifted up his heel against me.* I am telling you this now, before it occurs, so that when it has occurred 20 you may believe who I am. (Truly, truly I tell you,

he who receives anyone I send receives me,

and he who receives me receives him who sent me.)”

21 On saying this Jesus was disquieted in spirit: he testified and said, “Truly, truly I tell you, one of you

22 will betray me.” The disciples looked at each other, at a loss to

23 know which of them he meant. As one of his disciples was reclining on his breast—he was the favourite of

24 Jesus—Peter nodded to him, saying,

25 “Tell us who he means.” The disciple just leant back on the breast of Jesus and said, “Lord, who is it?”

26 Jesus answered, “The man I am going to give this piece of bread to, when I dip it in the dish.” Then

he took the piece of bread, dipped it, and gave it to Judas, the son

27 of Simon Iscariot; and when he took the bread, at that moment Satan entered him. Then Jesus told him, “Be quick with what

28 you have to do.” (None of those at table understood why he said

29 this to him; some of them thought that as Judas kept the money-box, Jesus told him to buy what they

30 needed for the festival or to give something to the poor.) So Judas went out immediately after taking the bread. And it was night.

31 When he had gone out, Jesus said,\*

“I AM the real Vine, and my 15 Father is the vine-dresser; he cuts 2 away any branch on me which is not bearing fruit, and cleans every branch which does bear fruit, to make it bear richer fruit. You 3 are already clean, by the word I have spoken to you. Remain in 4 me, as I remain in you: just as a branch cannot bear fruit by itself, without remaining on the vine, neither can you, unless you remain in me. I am the vine, you are the 5 branches. He who remains in me, as I in him, bears rich fruit (because apart from me you can do nothing). If anyone does not 6 remain in me, he is thrown aside like a branch and he withers up; then the branches are gathered and thrown into the fire to be burned. If you remain in me and 7 my words remain in you, then ask whatever you like and you shall have it. As you bear rich fruit 8 and prove yourselves my disciples, my Father is glorified. As the 9 Father has loved me, so I have loved you; remain within my love. If you keep my commands you 10 will remain within my love, just as I have kept my Father’s commands and remain within his love.

I have told you this, that my 11 joy may be within you and your joy complete. This is my com- 12 mand: you are to love one another as I have loved you. To lay life 13 down for his friends, man has no greater love than that. You are 14 my friends—if you do what I command you; I call you servants 15 no longer, because a servant does not know what his master is doing: I call you friends, because I have imparted to you all that I have learned from my Father. You have not 16 chosen me, it is I who have chosen

\* Chapters xv. and xvi. are restored to their original position in the middle of ver. 31.



you, appointing you to go and bear fruit—fruit that lasts, so that the Father may grant you whatever  
 17 you ask in my name. This is what I command you, to love one another.  
 18 If the world hates you, remember  
 19 it hated me first. If you belonged to the world, the world would love what it owned; it is because you do not belong to the world, because I have chosen you from the world,  
 20 that the world hates you. Remember what I told you, ‘A servant is not greater than his master.’

If they persecuted me, they will persecute you;

if they hold to my word, they will hold to yours.

21 They will do all this to you on account of my name, because they know not him who sent me.  
 22 They would not be guilty, if I had not come and spoken to them; but, as it is, they have  
 23 no excuse for their sin—he who hates me hates my Father also.  
 24 They would not be guilty, if I had not done deeds among them such as no one has ever done; but, as it is, they have seen—and they have hated—both me and  
 25 my Father. It is that the word written in their Law may be fulfilled: *they hated me for no cause.*

26 When the Helper comes, whom I will send to you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth which issues from the Father, he will  
 27 bear witness to me; and you too are witnesses, for you have been with me from the very beginning.  
 16 I have told you all this, to keep  
 2 you from being repelled. They will excommunicate you; indeed the time is coming when anyone who

kills you will imagine he is performing a service to God. This they  
 will do to you, because they have not known the Father nor me.

I have told you all this, so  
 that when the time for it arrives, you may remember what I said to you. I did not tell you about this at the beginning, because I was with you then; but now I am going to him who sent me. And yet not one of you asks, ‘Where are you going?’ No, your heart is full of sorrow at what I have told you. Yet—I am telling you the truth—my going is for your good. If I do not depart, the Helper will not come to you; whereas if I go, I will send him to you. And when he comes, he will convict the world, convincing men of sin, of righteousness, and of judgment: of sin, because they do not believe in me; of righteousness, because I go to the Father and you see me no more; of judgment, because the Prince of this world has been judged. I have still much to say to you, but you cannot bear it just now. However, when the Spirit of truth comes, he will lead you into all the truth; for he will not speak of his own accord, he will say whatever he is told, and he will disclose to you what is to come. He will glorify me, for he will draw upon what is mine and disclose it to you. All that the Father has is mine; that is why I say, ‘he will draw upon what is mine and disclose it to you.’

In a little while, you will behold me no longer; then, after a little, you shall see me.” So some of his disciples said to one another, “What does he mean by telling us, ‘In a little while, you shall behold me no longer; then, after a little,



you shall see me'? and, 'I go to  
 18 the Father'?" They said, "What  
 is the meaning of 'In a little'?  
 We do not understand what he is  
 19 saying." Jesus knew they wanted  
 to ask him; so he said to them,  
 "Is this what you are discussing  
 together, why I said, 'In a little  
 while, you will not see me: then,  
 after a little, you shall see me'?"  
 20 Truly, truly, I tell you, you will  
 be wailing and lamenting while the  
 world is rejoicing; you will be  
 sorrowful, but then your sorrow  
 21 will be changed into joy. When  
 a woman is in labour she is sorry,  
 for her time has come; but when  
 the child is born she remembers  
 her anguish no longer, for joy that  
 a human being has been born into  
 22 the world. So with you. Just  
 now you are in sorrow, but I shall  
 see you again and your heart will  
 rejoice—with a joy that no one  
 can take from you.  
 23 And on that day you will not  
 ask me any questions. Truly,  
 truly I tell you, whatever you  
 ask the Father, he will give you  
 24 in my name; hitherto you have  
 asked nothing in my name; ask  
 and you will receive, that your  
 25 joy may be full. I have told you  
 this in figures, but the time is  
 coming when I shall speak to you  
 in figures no longer; I shall let you  
 know plainly about the Father.  
 26 On that day you will ask in my  
 name, and I do not say to you  
 I will ask the Father on your  
 27 behalf; for the Father loves you  
 himself, because you have loved  
 me and believed that I came forth  
 28 from God. From the Father I  
 came and I entered the world;  
 again, I leave the world and I go  
 29 to the Father." His disciples said,  
 "Now, you are talking plainly at

last, not speaking in figures. Now 30  
 we are sure you know everything,  
 and need no one to put questions to  
 you. This makes us believe you  
 have come forth from God." Jesus 31  
 replied, "You believe it, at last?  
 Behold, the time is coming, it has 32  
 come already, when you will be  
 scattered to your homes, every one  
 of you, leaving me alone. But I am  
 not alone, for the Father is with me.  
 I have said all this to you that in 33  
 me you may have peace; in the  
 world you have trouble, but courage!  
 I have conquered the world.\*

"Now at last the Son of man is 31  
 glorified, and in him God is glori-  
 fied: [if God is glorified in him,] 32  
 God will glorify him in Himself and  
 glorify him at once. My dear chil- 33  
 dren, I am only to be with you a little  
 longer; then you will look for me,  
 and, as I told the Jews I tell you  
 now, where I go you cannot come.  
 I give you a new command, to 34  
 love one another—as I have loved  
 you, you are to love one another.  
 By this everyone will recognize 35  
 that you are my disciples, if you  
 have love one for another."  
 "Lord," said Simon Peter, "where 36  
 are you going?" Jesus replied,  
 "I am going where you cannot  
 follow me at present; later on  
 you will follow me." "Lord," 37  
 said Peter, "why cannot I follow  
 you just now? I will lay down my  
 life for you." Jesus replied, "Lay 38  
 down your life for me? Truly,  
 truly I tell you, before the cock  
 crows, you will have disowned  
 me thrice over.

CHAP.

LET not your hearts be dis- 14  
 quieted; you believe—believe in  
 God and also in me. In my 2

\* The sequence of xiii. 31 is now resumed  
 (see above, note on p. 134).

## S. JOHN XIV

Father's house there are many abodes; were it not so, would I have told you I was going to  
 3 prepare a place for you? And when I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back and take you to be with me, so that you  
 4 may be where I am. And you know the way to where I am going."  
 5 "Lord," said Thomas, "we do not know where you are going, and how  
 6 are we to know the way?" Jesus said to him, "I am the real and living way: no one comes to the  
 7 Father except by means of me. If you knew me, you would know my Father too. You know him now  
 8 and you have seen him." "Lord," said Philip, "let us see the Father;  
 9 that is all we want." Jesus said to him, "Philip, have I been with you all this time, and yet you do not understand me? He who has seen me has seen the Father. What do you mean by saying,  
 10 'Let us see the Father'? Do you not believe I am in the Father and the Father is in me? The words I speak to you all I do not speak of my own accord; it is the Father who remains ever in me, who is  
 11 performing his own deeds. Believe me, I am in the Father and the Father is in me:—or else, believe because of the deeds themselves.  
 12 Truly, truly I tell you, he who believes in me will do the very deeds I do, and still greater deeds than these. For I am going to the  
 13 Father, and I will do whatever you ask in my name, that the Father may be glorified in the  
 14 Son; I will do whatever you ask  
 15 me in my name. If you love me  
 16 you will keep my commands, and I will ask the Father to give you another Helper to be with you for  
 17 ever, even the Spirit of truth: the

world cannot receive him, because it neither sees nor knows him, but you know him, because he remains with you and will be within you. I will not leave you 18  
 forlorn; I am coming to you. A 19  
 little while longer and the world will see me no more; but you will see me, because I am living and you will be living too. You 20  
 will understand, on that day, that I am in my Father and you are in me and I am in you. He who 21  
 possesses my commands and obeys them is he who loves me, and he who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I will love him and appear to him." "Lord," said 22  
 Judas (not Judas Iscariot), "why is it that you are to appear to us, and not to the world?" Jesus 23  
 answered, "If anyone loves me he will obey my word, and my Father will love him, and we will come to him and take up our abode with him. He who does not love me 24  
 does not obey my word; and what you hear me say is not my word but the word of the Father who sent me.

I have told you all this while 25  
 I am still with you, but the 26  
 Helper, the holy Spirit whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you everything and recall to you everything I have said. Peace I leave to you, my peace 27  
 I give to you; I give it not as the world gives its 'Peace!' Let not your hearts be disquieted or timid. You heard me tell you 28  
 I was going away and coming back to you; if you loved me, you would rejoice that I am going to the Father—for the Father is greater than I am.

I tell you this now, before it occurs, 29  
 so that, when it does occur, you may



30 believe. I will no longer talk much  
with you, for the Prince of this  
world is coming. He has no hold  
31 on me; his coming will only serve  
to let the world see that I love the  
Father and that I am acting as the  
Father ordered. Rise, let us be  
going."

CHAP.

17 So Jesus spoke; then, lifting  
his eyes to heaven, he said :  
" Father, the time has now come ;  
glorify thy Son that thy Son may  
2 glorify thee, since thou hast  
granted him power over all flesh  
to give eternal life to all whom  
3 thou hast given to him. And this  
is eternal life, that they know  
thee, the only real God, and him  
whom thou hast sent, even Jesus  
4 Christ. I have glorified thee on  
earth by accomplishing the work  
5 thou gavest me to do ; now,  
Father, glorify me in thy presence  
with the glory which I enjoyed  
in thy presence before the world  
6 began. I have made thy Name  
known to the men whom thou hast  
given to me from the world (thine  
they were, and thou gavest them  
to me), and they have held to thy  
7 word. They know now that what-  
ever thou hast given me comes from  
8 thee, for I have given them the  
words thou gavest me and they  
have received them ; they are  
now sure that I came from thee  
and believe that thou didst send me.  
9 I pray for them—not for the world  
but for those whom thou hast  
given me do I pray ; for they are  
10 thine (all mine is thine and thine  
is mine), and I am glorified in  
11 them. I am to be in the world no  
longer, but they are to be in the  
world ; I come to thee. Holy  
Father, keep them by the power

of thy Name which thou hast given  
me, that they may be one as we  
are one. When I was with them, 12  
I kept them by the power of thy  
Name which thou hast given me ;  
I guarded them, and not one of  
them perished—only the son of  
perdition, that the scripture might  
be fulfilled. But now I come to 13  
thee (I speak thus in the world  
that they may have my joy com-  
plete within them). I have given 14  
them thy word, and the world  
has hated them because they do  
not belong to the world any more  
than I belong to the world. I 15  
pray not that thou wilt take them  
out of the world, but that thou wilt  
keep them from the evil one. They 16  
do not belong to the world any more  
than I belong to the world. Con- 17  
secrate them by thy truth : thy  
word is truth. As thou hast sent 18  
me into the world, so have I sent  
them into the world, and for their 19  
sake I consecrate myself that they  
may be consecrated by the truth.

Nor do I pray for them alone, 20  
but for all who believe in me by  
their spoken word ; may they all 21  
be one ! As thou, Father, art  
in me and I in thee, so may they  
be in us—that the world may be-  
lieve thou hast sent me. Yea, I 22  
have given them the glory thou  
gavest me, that they may be one  
as we are one—I in them and thou 23  
in me—that they may be made  
perfectly one, so that the world  
may recognize that thou hast sent  
me and hast loved them as thou  
hast loved me. Father, it is my 24  
will that these, thy gift to me, may  
be beside me where I am, to behold  
my glory which thou hast given  
me, because thou lovedst me before  
the foundation of the world. O just 25  
Father, though the world has not



known thee, I have known \* thee, and they have known that thou  
 26 hast sent me; so have I declared, so will I declare, thy Name to them, that the love with which thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them."

CHAP.

18 HAVING said this, Jesus went out with his disciples across the Kidron ravine to an orchard, which he entered in the company  
 2 of his disciples. Judas the traitor also knew the spot, for Jesus and  
 8 his disciples often met there. So after procuring troops and some attendants belonging to the high priests and the Pharisees, Judas went there with lanterns and  
 4 torches and weapons. Then Jesus, who knew everything that was to happen to him, came forward and asked them, "Who are you looking  
 5 for?" "Jesus the Nazarene," they replied. Jesus said, "I am he."  
 (And Judas the traitor was standing  
 6 beside them.) When he said, "I am he," they fell back and dropped  
 7 to the ground; so he asked them once more, "Who are you looking for?" And when they replied,  
 8 "Jesus the Nazarene," he answered, "I told you that I am he; if it is  
 me you are looking for, let these  
 9 men get away" (this was to fulfil his own word: "I did not lose a single one of those whom thou  
 10 didst give me"). Then Simon Peter, who had a sword, drew it and struck the high priest's servant, cutting off his right ear (the servant's name was Malchus);  
 11 whereupon Jesus said to Peter,

"Sheathe your sword. Am I not to drink the cup which the Father has handed me?"

So the troops and their com- 12  
 mander and the Jewish attendants seized Jesus, bound him, and 13  
 brought him first of all to Annas (for Annas was the father-in-law of Caiaphas, who was high priest that year—the Caiaphas who had 14  
 advised the Jews that it was for their interests that one man should die for the people).† Then the 19  
 high priest questioned Jesus about his disciples and about his teaching. Jesus answered, "I have spoken 20  
 openly to the world; I have always taught in the synagogues and in the temple, where all Jews gather; I have said nothing in secret. Why ask me? Ask my hearers 21  
 what I have said to them; they know what I said." As he said 22  
 this, one of the attendants who stood by gave him a blow, saying, "Is that how you answer the high priest?" "If I have said any- 23  
 thing wrong," replied Jesus, "prove it; if I said what was true, why strike me?" Then Annas had 24  
 him bound and sent him to Caiaphas the high priest. Simon Peter 15  
 followed Jesus along with another disciple; and as this disciple was an acquaintance of the high priest, he passed into the courtyard of the high priest with Jesus, while Peter 16  
 stood outside at the door. Then this other disciple, who was an acquaintance of the high priest, came out and spoke to the woman at the door, and brought Peter inside. The 17  
 maidservant at the door then said to Peter, "Are you not one of this fellow's disciples?" He said, "No." Now the servants and the 18

\* The English perfect is the least inadequate rendering of the Greek aorist here. Luther, however, prefers the present. "Ich kenne Dich, und diese erkennen. . . ."

† Transposing vers. 19-24 to a position between vers. 14 and 15.

attendants were standing and warming themselves at a charcoal fire which they had lit (for it was cold), and Peter also stood beside them and warmed himself. They asked him, "Are you not one of his disciples?" He denied it, saying, "No." Said one of the high priest's servants, a kinsman of the man whose ear had been cut off by Peter, "Did I not see you with him in the orchard?" Again Peter denied it. And at that very moment the cock crowed.

Then from the house of Caiaphas they took Jesus to the praetorium. (It was early morning.) They would not enter the praetorium themselves, in case of being ceremonially defiled, for they wanted to eat the passover; so Pilate came outside to them and asked, "What charge do you bring against this man?" They retorted, "If he had not been a criminal, we would not have handed him over to you." Then said Pilate, "Take him yourselves, and sentence him according to your own Law." The Jews said, "We have no right to put anyone to death" (that the word of Jesus might be fulfilled, by which he had indicated the kind of death he was to die). So Pilate went back inside the praetorium and called Jesus, saying, "Then you are king of the Jews?" Jesus replied, "Are you saying this of your own accord, or did other people tell you about me?" "Am I a Jew?" said Pilate. "Your own nation and the high priests have handed you over to me. What have you done?" Jesus replied, "My realm does not belong to this world; if my realm did belong to this world, my men would have fought to prevent me

being handed over to the Jews. No, my realm lies elsewhere." "So you are a king?" said Pilate, "you!" "Certainly," said Jesus, "I am a king. This is why I was born, this is why I came into the world, to bear testimony to the truth. Everyone who belongs to the truth listens to my voice." "Truth!" said Pilate, "what is truth!" With these words he went outside to the Jews again and told them, "I cannot find anything wrong about him. But it is your custom that I should release a prisoner for you at the passover. Is it your will that I release you the king of the Jews?" Again they yelled, "No, not him! Bar-Abbas!" Now Bar-Abbas was a robber.

CHAP.

THEN Pilate took Jesus and had him scourged. And the soldiers twisted some thorns into a crown and put it on his head, and arrayed him in a purple robe, marching up to him and shouting, "Hail, king of the Jews!"—and striking him. Again Pilate went out and said to them, "Look, I am bringing him out to you. Understand, I cannot find anything wrong about him." So out came Jesus, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe; and Pilate said, "Here the man\* is!" Now when the high priests and their attendants saw him, they yelled, "Crucify him, crucify him!" Pilate said, "Take him and crucify him yourselves! I find nothing wrong about him." The Jews retorted, "But we have a Law, and

\* The unconscious force of Pilate's words, it has been suggested, might be brought out by rendering either "Here is the man!" or, "Here is the Man!"



## S. JOHN XIX

by [our] Law he is bound to die, because he has made himself out 8 to be God's Son." Now when Pilate heard that, he was still 9 more afraid; he went inside the praetorium again and asked Jesus, "Where do you come from?" 10 Jesus made no reply. Then Pilate said, "You will not speak to me? Do you not know it is in my power to release you or to crucify you?" 11 Jesus answered, "You would have no power over me, unless it had been granted you from above. So you are less guilty than he who 12 betrayed me to you." This made Pilate anxious to release him, but the Jews yelled, "If you release him, you are no friend of Caesar's! Anyone who makes himself a king 13 is against Caesar!" On hearing this, Pilate brought Jesus out and seated him on the tribunal at a spot called the 'mosaic pavement' 14—the Hebrew name is Gabbatha (it was the day of Preparation for the passover, about noon). "There is your king!" he said to the 15 Jews. Then they yelled, "Off with him! Off with him! Crucify him!" "Crucify your king?" said Pilate. The high priests retorted, "We have no king but 16 Caesar!" Then Pilate handed him over to them to be crucified. 17 So they took Jesus, and he went away, carrying the cross by himself, to the spot called the 'place of the skull'—the Hebrew name 18 is Golgotha; there they crucified him, along with two others, one on each side and Jesus in the 19 middle. Pilate had written an inscription to be put on the cross; what he wrote was, JESUS THE NAZARENE, THE KING OF THE 20 JEWS. Now many of the Jews read this inscription, for the place

where Jesus had been crucified was close to the city; besides, the inscription was in Hebrew, Latin, and Greek. So the Jewish high 21 priests said to Pilate, "Do not write, THE KING OF THE JEWS; write, HE SAID I AM THE KING OF THE JEWS." Pilate replied, "What 22 I have written, I have written."

Now when the soldiers crucified 23 Jesus they took his clothes and divided them into four parts, one for each soldier. But as the tunic was seamless, woven right down in a single piece, they said to 24 themselves, "Don't let us tear it. Let us draw lots to see who gets it" (that the scripture might be fulfilled,

*they distributed my clothes among them,*

*and drew lots for my raiment).*

This was what the soldiers did.

Now beside the cross of Jesus 25 stood his mother and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Clopas, and Mary of Magdala. So when Jesus 26 saw his mother and his favourite disciple standing near, he said to his mother, "Woman, there is your son!" Then he said to the 27 disciple, "Son, there is your mother!" And from that hour the disciple took her to his home. After that, as Jesus knew that 28 everything was now finished and fulfilled, he said (to fulfil the scripture), "*I am thirsty.*" A jug full 29 of vinegar was lying there; so they put a sponge full of vinegar on a spear and held it to his lips. And when Jesus took the vinegar, 30 he said, "It is finished," bowed his head, and gave up his spirit.

Now, as it was the day of Prepara- 31 tion, in order to prevent the bodies remaining on the cross during the sabbath (for that sabbath-day was



a great day), the Jews asked Pilate to have the legs broken and the  
 32 bodies removed. So the soldiers went and broke the legs of the first man and of the other man who had  
 33 been crucified along with him; but when they came to Jesus and saw he was dead already, they did not  
 34 break his legs; only, one of the soldiers pricked his side with a lance, and out came blood and  
 35 water in a moment. He who saw it has borne witness (his witness is true; God knows he is telling the truth), that you may believe.  
 36 For this took place that the scripture might be fulfilled,

*Not a bone of him will be broken.*

37 And another scripture also says,  
*They shall look on him whom they have impaled.*

38 After this, Joseph of Arimathaea, a disciple of Jesus but a secret disciple—for fear of the Jews—asked Pilate for permission to remove the body of Jesus. And Pilate allowed him. So he went  
 39 and removed the body, accompanied by Nicodemus (he who had first come to Jesus by night) who brought a mixture of myrrh and  
 40 aloes, about a hundred pounds of it; they took and wrapped up the body of Jesus in the spices and in bandages, according to the Jewish  
 41 custom of burial. Now at the spot where he had been crucified there was an orchard, and in the orchard a new tomb where no one  
 42 had yet been laid; so they put Jesus there, since it was the Jewish day of Preparation, seeing that the tomb was close by.

CHAP.

20 On the first day of the week Mary of Magdala went early to the tomb, when it was still dark; but as

she saw the boulder had been removed from the tomb, she ran off  
 2 to Simon Peter and to the other disciple, the favourite of Jesus, telling them, "They have taken the master out of the tomb, and we do not know where they have  
 3 put him!" So Peter and the other disciple set out for the tomb; they both started to run,  
 4 but the other disciple ran ahead, faster than Peter, and got to the tomb first. He glanced in and saw  
 5 the bandages lying on the ground, but he did not go inside. Then Simon Peter came after him, and  
 6 went inside the tomb; he noticed not only that the bandages were lying on the ground but that the  
 7 napkin which had been round his head was folded up by itself, instead of lying beside the other  
 8 bandages. Upon this the other disciple, who had reached the tomb first, went inside too, and when  
 9 he saw for himself he was convinced. (For as yet they did not understand the Scripture that he  
 10 must rise from the dead.) Then the disciples returned home; but  
 11 Mary stood sobbing outside the tomb. As she sobbed, she glanced inside the tomb and noticed two  
 12 angels in white, sitting where the body of Jesus had lain, one at the head and one at the feet.  
 13 "Woman," they said to her, "why are you sobbing?" She said, "Because they have taken away  
 14 my master, and I do not know where they have put him!" With these words she turned round and  
 15 noticed Jesus standing—though she did not know it was Jesus. "Woman," said Jesus, "why are  
 you sobbing? Who are you looking for?" Supposing he was the gardener, she said, "Oh, sir, if

you carried him away, tell me where you put him, and I will remove him." "Mary!" said Jesus. She started round and said, "Rabboni!" (a Hebrew word meaning 'teacher'). Jesus said, "Cease clinging to me. I have not ascended yet to the Father, but go to my brothers and tell them, 'I am ascending to my Father and yours, to my God and yours.'" Away went Mary of Magdala to the disciples with the news, "I have seen the Lord!"—telling them what he had said to her.

On the evening of that same day—the first day of the week—though the disciples had gathered within closed doors for fear of the Jews, Jesus entered and stood among them, saying, "Peace be with you!" So saying he showed them his hands and his side; and when the disciples saw the Lord, they rejoiced. Jesus then repeated, "Peace be with you! As the Father sent me forth, I am sending you forth." And with these words he breathed on them, and added, "Receive the holy Spirit! If you remit the sins of any, they are remitted: if you retain them, they are retained."

Now Thomas, one of the twelve, who was called 'the Twin,' was not with them when Jesus came; and when the rest of the disciples told him, "We have seen the Lord," he said, "Unless I see his hands with the mark of the nails, and put my finger where the nails were, and put my hand into his side, I refuse to believe it." Eight days afterwards his disciples were together again, and Thomas with them. Though the doors were closed, Jesus entered and stood among them, saying, "Peace be

with you!" Then he said to Thomas, "Look at my hands, put your finger here; and put your hand here into my side; cease your unbelief and believe." Thomas answered him, "My Lord and my God!" Jesus said to him, "You believe because you have seen me? Blessed be those who believe though they have never seen me."

Many another Sign did Jesus perform in presence of his disciples, which is not recorded in this book; but these Signs are recorded so that you may believe Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and believing may have life through his Name.

CHAP.

AFTER that, Jesus disclosed himself once more to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias. It was in this way. Simon Peter, Thomas (who was called 'the Twin'), Nathanael from Cana in Galilee, the two sons of Zebedaeus, and two other disciples of his, were all together. Simon Peter said to them, "I am going to fish." They said, "We are coming with you too." Off they went and embarked in the boat, but that night they caught nothing. Now at break of day Jesus was standing on the beach (though the disciples did not know it was Jesus). "Lads," said Jesus, "have you got anything?" "No," they answered. So he told them, "Throw your net on the right of the boat, and you will have a take." At this they threw the net, and now they could not haul it in for the mass of fish. So the disciple who was Jesus' favourite said to Peter, "It is the Lord!" Hearing it was the Lord, Simon Peter threw on his blouse (he was stripped for work) and jumped into the water, while



the rest of the disciples came ashore in the punt (they were not far from land, only about a hundred yards),  
 9 dragging their netful of fish. When they got to land, they saw a charcoal fire burning, with fish cooking  
 10 on it, and some bread. Jesus said to them, "Bring some of the fish  
 11 you have just caught." So Peter went aboard and hauled the net ashore, full of large fish, a hundred and fifty three of them; but for all their number the net was not  
 12 torn. Jesus said, "Come and breakfast." (Not one of the disciples dared to ask him who he was; they knew it was the Lord.)  
 13 Jesus went and took the bread and gave it to them, and the fish too.  
 14 This was the third time, now, that Jesus appeared to the disciples after rising from the dead.  
 15 Then after breakfast Jesus said to Simon Peter, "Simon, son of John, do you love me more than the others do?" "Why, Lord," he said, "you know I love you."  
 "Then feed my lambs," said Jesus.  
 16 Again he asked him, for the second time, "Simon, son of John, do you love me?" "Why, Lord," he said, "you know I love you."  
 "Then be a shepherd to my sheep,"  
 17 said Jesus. For the third time he asked him, "Simon, son of John, do you love me?" Now Peter was vexed at being asked a third time, "Do you love me?" So he replied, "Lord, you know everything, you

can see I love you." Jesus said, "Then feed my sheep. Truly, 18 truly I tell you, you put on your own girdle and went wherever you wanted, when you were young; but when you grow old, you will stretch out your hands for someone to gird you, and you will be taken where you have no wish to go" (he said 19 this to indicate the kind of death by which Peter would glorify God); then he added, "Follow me." Peter turned round and saw that 20 the favourite disciple of Jesus was following, the disciple who had leant on his breast at supper and put the question, "Lord, who is to betray you?" So, on catching 21 sight of him, Peter said to Jesus, "And what about him, Lord?" Jesus replied, "If I choose that he 22 should survive till I come back, what does that matter to you? Follow me yourself." This started the report 23 among the brotherhood that the said disciple was not to die. Jesus, however, did not say he was not to die; what he said was, "If I choose that he should survive till I come back, what does that matter to you?"

This was the disciple who bears 24 testimony to these facts and who wrote them down; his testimony, we know, is true.

Now there is much else that 25 Jesus did—so much, that if it were written down in detail, I do not suppose the world itself could hold the written records.



## THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES

CHAP.

1 IN my former volume, Theophilus, I treated all that Jesus  
2 began by doing and teaching down to the day when, after issuing his orders by the holy Spirit to the disciples whom he had chosen, he  
3 was taken up to heaven. After his sufferings he had shown them that he was alive by a number of proofs, revealing himself to them for forty days and discussing the  
4 affairs of God's Realm. Also, as he ate with them, he charged them not to leave Jerusalem but to wait for what the Father promised—"for what you have heard me speak of,"  
5 said he; "for John baptized with water, but not many days after this you shall be baptized with the holy  
6 Spirit." Now when they met, they asked him, "Lord, is this the time you are going to restore the Realm to Israel?" But he told them, "It is not for you to know the course and periods of time that the Father has  
8 fixed by his own authority. You will receive power when the holy Spirit comes upon you, and you will be my witnesses at Jerusalem, throughout all Judaea and Samaria, and  
9 to the end of the earth." On saying this he was lifted up while they looked on, and a cloud took him  
10 out of sight. As he went up, their eyes were fixed on heaven; but just then two men stood beside  
11 them dressed in white, who said, "Men of Galilee, why do you stand looking up to heaven? This Jesus

who has been taken from you into heaven will come back, just as you have seen him depart to heaven." Then they made their way back 12 to Jerusalem from the hill called 'The Olive-Orchard'; it is close to Jerusalem, only a sabbath day's journey from it. On entering the 13 city they went to the upper room where they were in the habit of meeting; there were Peter, John, James, Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James (the son of Alphaeus) and Simon who had been a Zealot, with Judas the son of James. All these men 14 resorted with one mind to prayer, together with the women, with Mary the mother of Jesus and with his brothers.

Now during these days Peter 15 stood up among the brothers (there was a crowd of about a hundred and twenty persons all together). "My 16 brothers," said he, "it had to be fulfilled, that scripture which the holy Spirit uttered beforehand by the lips of David with regard to Judas who acted as guide to those who arrested Jesus. Judas did 17 enter our number, he did get his allotted share of this our ministry. With the money paid him for 18 his crime he purchased an estate; but swelling up he burst in two, and all his bowels poured out—a 19 fact which became known to all the residents in Jerusalem, so that the estate got the name, in

their language, of Akeldamach  
20 or The Ground of Blood. Now  
it is written in the book of  
psalms,

*Desolate be his residence,  
may no one dwell in it :*

also,

*let another man take over his  
charge.*

21 Well then, of the men who have  
been associated with us all the  
time the Lord Jesus went in and out  
22 among us, from the baptism of  
John down to the day when he was  
taken up from us—of these men  
one must join us as a witness to his  
23 resurrection.” So they brought  
forward two men, Joseph called  
Bar-Sabbas (surnamed Justus) and  
24 Matthias; and they prayed, “O  
Lord, who readest the hearts of  
all, do thou single out from these  
two men him whom thou hast  
25 chosen to fill the place in this  
apostolic ministry which Judas left  
in order to go to his own place.”  
26 Then they cast lots for them, and  
the lot fell upon Matthias, who was  
assigned his position with the  
eleven apostles.

## CHAP.

2 DURING the course of the day  
of Pentecost they were all to-  
2 gether, when suddenly there came  
a sound from heaven like a violent  
blast of wind, which filled the  
whole house where they were  
3 seated. They saw tongues like  
flames distributing themselves, one  
4 resting on the head of each, and  
they were all filled with the holy  
Spirit—they began to speak in  
foreign tongues, as the Spirit en-  
abled them to express themselves.  
5 Now there were devout Jews from  
every nation under heaven staying  
6 in Jerusalem. So when this sound

was heard, the multitude gathered  
in bewilderment, for each heard  
them speaking in his own language.  
All were amazed and astonished. 7  
“Are these not all Galileans,” they  
said, “who are speaking? Then 8  
how is it that each of us hears them  
in his own native tongue? Par- 9  
thians, Medes, Elamites, residents  
in Mesopotamia, in Judaea and  
Cappadocia, in Pontus and Asia, in 10  
Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt  
and the districts of Libya round  
Cyrene, visitors from Rome, Jews 11  
and proselytes, Cretans and Ara-  
bians, we hear these men talking  
of the triumphs of God in our  
own languages!” They were all 12  
amazed and quite at a loss. “What  
can it mean?” they said to one  
another. Some others sneered, 13  
“They are brim-full of new wine!”  
But Peter stood up along with the 14  
eleven, and raising his voice he  
addressed them thus: “Men of  
Judaea and residents in Jerusalem,  
let every one of you understand  
this—attend to what I say: these 15  
men are not drunk, as you imagine.  
Why, it is only nine in the morning!  
No, this is what was predicted by 16  
the prophet Joel—

In the last days, saith God, then 17  
*will I pour out my Spirit upon  
all flesh,  
your sons and daughters shall  
prophecy,  
your young men shall see visions,  
your old men shall dream dreams :  
on my very slaves and slave-girls 18  
in those days will I pour out my  
Spirit,  
and they shall prophesy.  
And I will display wonders in 19  
heaven above  
and signs on earth below,  
blood and fire and vapour of  
smoke :*



20 *the sun shall be changed into  
darkness  
and the moon into blood,  
ere the great, open Day of the Lord  
arrives.*

21 *And everyone who invokes the  
name of the Lord shall be saved.*

22 Men of Israel, listen to my words.  
Jesus the Nazarene, a man ac-  
credited to you by God through  
miracles, wonders, and signs which  
God performed by him among you

23 (as you yourselves know), this  
Jesus, betrayed in the predestined  
course of God's deliberate purpose,  
you got wicked men to nail to the  
24 cross and murder; but God raised  
him by checking the pangs of  
death. Death could not hold him.

25 For David says of him,  
*I saw the Lord before me ever-  
more;  
lest I be shaken, he is at my right  
hand.*

26 *My heart is glad,  
my tongue exults,  
my very flesh will rest in hope,*

27 *because thou wilt not forsake my  
soul in the grave,  
nor let thy holy one suffer decay.*

28 *Thou hast made known to me the  
paths of life,  
thou wilt fill me with delight in thy  
presence.*

29 Brothers, I can speak quite plainly  
to you about the patriarch David;  
he died and was buried and his  
tomb remains with us to this day.

30 (He was a prophet; he knew God  
had sworn an oath to him that he  
would seat one of his descendants  
31 on his throne;\* so he spoke with a  
prevision of the resurrection of the  
Christ, when he said that he was  
not forsaken in the grave nor did

32 his flesh suffer decay. This Jesus

\* Omitting [τὸ κατὰ σὰρκα ἀναστήσειν τὸν Χριστόν].

God raised, as we can all bear  
witness. Uplifted then by God's 33  
right hand, and receiving from the  
Father the long-promised holy  
Spirit, he has poured on us what  
you now see and hear.) For it was 34  
not David who ascended to heaven;  
David says,

*The Lord said to my Lord, 'Sit at  
my right hand,  
till I make your enemies a foot- 35  
stool for your feet'.*

So let all the house of Israel under- 36  
stand beyond a doubt that God  
has made him both Lord and Christ,  
this very Jesus whom you have  
crucified." When they heard this, 37  
it went straight to their hearts;  
they said to Peter and the rest of  
the apostles, "Brothers, what are  
we to do?" "Repent," said Peter, 38  
"let each of you be baptized in the  
name of Jesus Christ for the re-  
mission of your sins; then you  
will receive the gift of the holy  
Spirit. For the promise is meant 39  
for you and for your children and  
for all who are far off, for anyone  
whom the Lord our God may call to  
himself." And with many another 40  
appeal he urged and entreated  
them. "Save yourselves," he  
cried, "from this crooked genera- 41  
tion!" So those who accepted  
what he said were baptized; about  
three thousand souls were brought 42  
in, that day. They devoted them-  
selves to the instruction given by  
the apostles and to fellowship,  
breaking bread and praying to- 43  
gether. Awe fell on everyone,  
and many wonders and signs were  
performed by the apostles [in  
Jerusalem]. The believers † all 44  
kept together; they shared all they  
had with one another, they would 45  
sell their possessions and goods

† Omitting [φόβος τε ἦν μέγας ἐπὶ πάντας, καί].



and distribute the proceeds among all, as anyone might be in need.

46 Day after day they resorted with one accord to the temple and broke bread together in their own homes; they ate with a glad and simple heart,

47 praising God and looked on with favour by all the people. Meantime the Lord added the saved daily to their number.\*

CHAP.

3 PETER and John were on their way up to the temple for the hour of prayer at three in the afternoon,

2 when a man lame from birth was carried past, who used to be laid every day at what was called the ' Beautiful Gate ' of the temple, to ask alms from those who entered the temple.

3 When he noticed that Peter and John meant to go into the temple, he

4 asked them for alms. Peter looked at him steadily, as did John, and

5 said, " Look at us." The man attended, expecting to get something from them. But Peter said,

6 " I have no silver or gold, but I will give you what I do have. In the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene,

7 [get up and] walk ! " And catching him by the right hand he raised him. Instantly his feet and ankles

8 grew strong, he leapt to his feet, started to walk, and accompanied them into the temple, walking,

9 leaping, and praising God. When all the people saw him walking and

10 praising God, and when they recognized this was the very man who used to sit and beg at the Gate Beautiful, they were lost in awe and amazement at what had hap-

11 pened to him. As he clung to Peter and John, all the people rushed awestruck to them in what

\* Omitting [τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ], although the omission makes it difficult to get the above sense, or indeed any, out of the Greek.

was called Solomon's portico. But 12 when Peter saw this, he said to the people, " Men of Israel, why are you surprised at this? Why do you stare at us, as if we had made him walk by any power or piety of ours? *The God of Abraham and 13 the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob, the God of our fathers has glorified Jesus his servant, whom you delivered up and repudiated before Pilate. Pilate had decided to release him, but you repudiated the 14 Holy and Just One; the boon you asked was a murderer, and you killed 15 the pioneer of Life. But God raised him from the dead, as we can bear witness. (He it is who has given 16 strength to this man whom you see and know, by faith in His name; it is the faith He inspires which has made the man thus hale and whole before you all.) Now I know, 17 brothers, that you acted in ignorance, like your rulers—though this 18 was how God fulfilled what he had announced beforehand by the lips of all the prophets, namely the sufferings of his Christ. Repent 19 then, and turn to have your sins blotted out, so that a breathing-space may be vouchsafed you, and 20 that the Lord may send Jesus your long-decreed Christ, who must be 21 kept in heaven till the period of the great Restoration. Ages ago God spoke of this by the lips of his holy prophets; for Moses said, 22*

*The Lord our God will raise up a prophet for you from among your brotherhood, as he raised me :*

*you must listen to whatever he may tell you.*

*Any soul that will not listen to 23 this prophet shall be exterminated from the People ; and all the prophets who have 24*

# THE ACTS IV

spoken since Samuel and his successors have also announced these 25 days. Now you are the sons of the prophets and of the covenant which God made with your fathers when he said to Abraham, *all families on earth shall be blessed in your offspring*. It was for you first that God raised up his Servant, and sent him to bless you by turning each of you from your wicked ways."

4 While they were speaking to the people, they were surprised by the priests, the commander of the 2 temple, and the Sadducees, who were annoyed at them teaching the people and proclaiming Jesus as an instance of resurrection from 3 the dead. They laid hands on them and, as it was now evening, put them in custody till next morning. (A number of those who heard them speak believed, bringing up their numbers to [about] five thousand.)

5 Next morning a meeting was held in Jerusalem of their rulers, elders 6 and scribes, which was attended by the high priest Annas, by Caiaphas, John, Alexander, and all the members of the high priest's family. 7 They made the men stand before them and inquired, "By what authority, in whose name, have you\* 8 done this?" Then Peter, filled with the holy Spirit, said to them: "Rulers of the people and elders 9 of Israel, if we are being cross-examined to-day upon a benefit rendered to a cripple, upon how 10 this man got better, you and the people of Israel must all understand that he stands before you strong

and well, thanks to the name of Jesus Christ the Nazarene whom you crucified and whom God raised from the dead. He is 11 *the stone despised by you builders, which has become head of the corner*.

There is no salvation by anyone 12 else, nor even a second Name under heaven appointed for us men and our salvation." They were aston- 13 ished to notice how outspoken Peter and John were, and to discover that they were uncultured persons and mere outsiders; they recognized them as having been companions of Jesus, but as they saw the man 14 who had been healed standing beside them, they could say nothing. Ordering them to withdraw from 15 the Sanhedrin, they proceeded to hold a consultation: "What are 16 we to do with these men?" they said. "It is plain to all the inhabitants of Jerusalem that a miracle has admittedly been worked by them. That we cannot deny. However, to keep things from 17 going any further with the people, we had better threaten them that they are not to tell anyone in future about this Name." So they called the men 18 in and ordered them not to speak or teach a single sentence about the Name of Jesus. But Peter and 19 John replied, "Decide for yourselves whether it is right before God to obey you rather than God. Certainly we cannot give up speak- 20 ing of what we have seen and heard." Then they threatened 21 them still further and let them go; on account of the people they found themselves unable to find any means of punishing them, for everybody was glorifying God over what had happened (the man on whom 22 this miracle of healing had been

\* With a touch of superciliousness ('men like you!'), which is perhaps better expressed in reading aloud than by any verbal periphrasis.



performed, being more than forty years old).

- 23 On being released they went to their friends and related what the high priests and elders had said; and on hearing this the entire company raised their cry to God, "O Sovereign Lord, thou art he \* who made heaven, earth, 24 and sea, and all that in them is, who said to our fathers† by the holy Spirit through the lips of thy servant David,

*Why did the Gentiles rage,  
and the peoples vainly conspire?*

- 26 *The kings of the earth stood ready,  
the rulers mustered together  
against the Lord and his Christ.*

- 27 In this very city they actually mustered against thy holy Servant Jesus, whom thou didst consecrate —Herod and Pontius Pilate, together with the Gentiles and the 28 peoples of Israel, mustering to carry out what thy hand had traced, 29 thy purpose had decreed. So now, O Lord, consider the threats of these men, and grant that thy servants may be perfectly fearless 30 in speaking thy word, when thy hand is stretched out to heal and to perform miracles and wonders by the name of thy holy Servant 31 Jesus." At their prayer the place of meeting was shaken, and they were all filled with the holy Spirit, speaking God's word fearlessly; 33 the apostles gave their testimony to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus with great power, and great grace was upon them all.†

- 32 Now there was but one heart

\* Omitting [*δ θεός*].

† Accepting Hort's suggestion that *τοῦ πατρός* is a corruption of *τοῖς πατέσιν*, though the text even then seems to include a gloss somewhere.

‡ Transposing ver. 33 to its original position after ver. 31.

and soul among the multitude of the believers; not one of them considered anything his personal property, they shared all they had with one another. There was not 34 a needy person among them, for those who owned land or houses would sell them and bring the proceeds of the sale, laying the 35 money before the feet of the apostles; it was then distributed according to each individual's need. Thus Joseph, who was surnamed 36 Barnabas or (as it may be translated) 'Son of Encouragement' by the apostles, a Levite of Cypriote birth, sold a farm belonging to him 37 and brought the money, which he placed before the feet of the apostles. But a man called Ananias, who 5 with his wife Sapphira had sold some property, appropriated some of the 2 purchase-money with the connivance of his wife; he only brought part of it to lay before the feet 3 of the apostles. "Ananias," said Peter, "why has Satan filled your heart and made you cheat the holy Spirit by appropriating some of the money paid for the land? When it 4 remained unsold, did it not remain your own? And even after the sale, was the money not yours to do as you pleased about it? How could you think of doing a thing like this? You have not defrauded men but 5 God." When Ananias heard this, he fell down and expired. (Great 6 awe came over all who heard of it.) And the younger men rose, wrapped the body up and carried it away to be buried. After an interval of 7 about three hours his wife happened to come in, quite unconscious of what had occurred. "Tell me," 8 said Peter, "did you only sell the land for such and such a sum?" "Yes," she said, "that was all we



9 sold it for." Peter said to her,  
 "How could you arrange to put  
 the Lord's Spirit to the proof?  
 Listen, there are the footsteps of  
 the men who have buried your hus-  
 band! They are at the door, and  
 they will carry you out as well."  
 10 Instantly she fell down at their  
 feet and expired. The younger  
 men came in to find her dead; they  
 carried her out and buried her  
 11 beside her husband. Great awe  
 came over the whole church and  
 over all who heard about this.  
 12 Now they all without exception  
 met in the portico of Solomon.  
 13 Though the people extolled them,  
 not a soul from the outside dared  
 14 to join them. On the other hand,  
 crowds of men and women who  
 believed in the Lord were brought  
 12 in. Many miracles and wonders  
 were performed among the people  
 15 by the apostles.\* In fact, invalids  
 were actually carried into the  
 streets and laid on beds and  
 mattresses, so that, when Peter  
 passed, his shadow at anyrate  
 might fall on one or other of them.  
 16 Crowds gathered even from the  
 towns round Jerusalem, bringing  
 invalids and people troubled with  
 unclean spirits, all of whom were  
 healed.  
 17 This filled the high priest Annas †  
 and his allies, the Sadducean party,  
 18 with bitter jealousy; they laid  
 hands on the apostles and put  
 19 them into the public prison, but  
 an angel of the Lord opened the  
 prison-doors during the night and  
 20 brought them out, saying, "Go  
 and stand in the temple, telling

the people all about this Life."  
 With these orders they went into 21  
 the temple about dawn and pro-  
 ceeded to teach. Meantime the  
 high priest and his allies met, called  
 the Sanhedrin together and the  
 council of seniors belonging to the  
 sons of Israel, and then sent to  
 prison for the men. But as the 22  
 attendants did not find them when  
 they got to the prison, they came  
 back to report, "We found the prison 23  
 safely locked up, with the sentries  
 posted at the doors, but on opening  
 the doors we found no one inside!"  
 On hearing this the commander 24  
 of the temple and the high priests  
 were quite at a loss to know what  
 to make of it. However, someone 25  
 came and reported to them, "Here  
 are the very men you put in prison,  
 standing in the temple and teach-  
 ing the people!" At this the 26  
 commander went off with the  
 attendants and fetched them—but  
 without using violence, for fear that  
 the people would pelt them with  
 stones. They conducted them be- 27  
 fore the Sanhedrin, and the high  
 priest asked them, "We strictly 28  
 forbade you to teach about this  
 Name, did we not? And here  
 you have filled Jerusalem with your  
 doctrine! You want to make us  
 responsible for this man's death!"  
 Peter and the apostles answered, 29  
 "One must obey God rather than  
 men. The God of our fathers 30  
 raised Jesus whom you murdered  
 by hanging him on a gibbet. God 31  
 lifted him up to his right hand as  
 our pioneer and saviour, in order  
 to grant repentance and remission  
 of sins to Israel. To these facts 32  
 we bear witness, with the holy  
 Spirit which God has given to  
 those who obey him." When they 33  
 heard this, they were so furious

\* Transposing the first clause of ver. 12  
 to the beginning of ver. 15.

† Blass's brilliant conjecture for the  
*ἀναστάς* of the ordinary text. It is not  
 entirely without manuscript evidence.

that they determined to make  
 34 away with the apostles. But a  
 Pharisee in the Sanhedrin called  
 Gamaliel, a doctor of the Law who  
 was highly respected by all the  
 people, got up and ordered the  
 35 apostles to be removed for a few  
 moments. Then he said, "Men  
 of Israel, take care what you do  
 36 about these men. In days gone  
 by Theudas started up, claiming  
 to be a person of importance; a  
 number of men, about four hundred  
 of them, rallied to him, but he was  
 slain, and all his followers were  
 37 dispersed and wiped out. After  
 him Judas the Galilean started up  
 at the time of the census, and got  
 people to desert to him; but he  
 perished too, and all his followers  
 38 were scattered. So I advise you  
 to-day to leave these men to them-  
 selves. Let them alone. If this  
 project or enterprise springs from  
 39 men, it will collapse; whereas, if it  
 really springs from God, you will be  
 unable to put them down. You  
 may even find yourselves fighting  
 40 God!" They gave in to him, and  
 after summoning the apostles and  
 giving them a flogging, they re-  
 leased them with instructions that  
 they were not to speak about the  
 41 name of Jesus. The apostles left  
 the Sanhedrin, rejoicing that they  
 had been considered worthy of  
 suffering dishonour for the sake  
 42 of the Name; not for a single day  
 did they cease to teach and  
 preach the gospel of Jesus the  
 Christ in the temple and at home.

CHAP.

6 DURING these days, when the  
 disciples were increasing in number,  
 the Hellenists began to complain  
 against the Hebrews, on the ground  
 that their widows were being over-

looked in the daily distribution of  
 food. So the twelve summoned 2  
 the main body of the disciples and  
 said: "It is not desirable that we  
 should drop preaching the word of  
 God and attend to meals. Brothers, 3  
 look out seven of your own  
 number, men of good reputation  
 who are full of the Spirit and of  
 wisdom. We will appoint them  
 to this duty, but we will continue 4  
 to devote ourselves to prayer and  
 the ministry of the word." This 5  
 plan commended itself to the whole  
 body, and they chose Stephen,  
 a man full of faith and the holy  
 Spirit, Philip, Prochorus, Nikanor,  
 Timon, Parmenas and Nikolaos 6  
 a proselyte from Antioch; these  
 men they presented to the apostles,  
 who, after prayer, laid their hands  
 upon them.

And the word of God spread; 7  
 the number of the disciples in Jeru-  
 salem greatly increased, and a host  
 of priests became obedient to the  
 faith.

Now Stephen, who was full of 8  
 grace and power, performed great  
 wonders and miracles among the  
 people. Some of those who be- 9  
 longed to the so-called synagogue  
 of the Libyans,\* the Cyrenians,  
 and the Alexandrians, as well as  
 to that of the Cilicians and Asiatics,  
 started a dispute with Stephen, but 10  
 they could not meet the wisdom  
 and the Spirit with which he spoke.  
 They then instigated people to say, 11  
 "We have heard him talking  
 blasphemy against Moses and God."  
 In this way they excited the people, 12  
 the elders, and the scribes, who

\* Reading *Λιβυστίνων* instead of the  
*Λιβερτινών* of the text. This, as Blass  
 points out, gives "the African Jews in  
 the geographical order of their original  
 dwelling-places."



- rushed on him, dragged him away, and took him before the Sanhedrin.
- 13 They also brought forward false witnesses to say, "This fellow is never done talking against this
- 14 holy Place and the Law! Why, we have heard him say that Jesus the Nazarene will destroy this Place and change the customs handed down to us by Moses!"
- 15 Then all who were seated in the Sanhedrin fixed their eyes on him, and saw that his face shone like the face of an angel.

CHAP.

- 7 SAID the high priest, "Is this 2 true?" "Listen, brothers and fathers," said Stephen. "The *God of glory* appeared to our father Abraham when he was still in 3 Mesopotamia, before ever he stayed in Haran, and said to him, '*Leave your land and your countrymen and come to whatever \* land I show you.*' 4 Then he left the land of the Chaldeans and stayed in Haran. From Haran God shifted him, after his father's death, to this land which 5 you now inhabit. But *he did not* give him any inheritance in it, not even a foot of the land. All he did was to promise he would give it as a possession to him and to his offspring after him (he at the time 6 being childless). What God said was this: '*His offspring will sojourn in a foreign land, where they will be enslaved and oppressed for 7 four hundred years. But,*' said God, '*I† will pass sentence on the nation that has made them slaves, and then they will get away to worship me in*

\* Omitting [την].

† The 'I' is emphatic. When the New Testament is read aloud, as it was originally meant to be, such stresses can be brought out. They often interpret the inner meaning of the text.

this Place.' God also gave him 8 the covenant of circumcision. So Abraham became the father of Isaac, whom he circumcised on the eighth day, Isaac was the father of Jacob, and Jacob of the twelve patriarchs. Out of jealousy the 9 patriarchs sold Joseph into Egypt; but God was with him, rescuing 10 him from all his troubles and allowing him to find favour for his wisdom with Pharaoh king of Egypt, who appointed him viceroy over Egypt and over all his own household. Now a famine came over 11 the whole of Egypt and Canaan, attended with great misery, so that our ancestors could not find provender. But, hearing there was 12 food in Egypt, Jacob sent our ancestors on their first visit to that country; at their second visit 13 Joseph made himself known to his brothers, and Pharaoh was informed of Joseph's lineage. Then 14 Joseph sent for his father Jacob and all his kinsfolk, amounting to seventy-five souls; and Jacob went 15 south to Egypt. When he and our ancestors died, they were carried 16 across to Shechem and laid in the tomb which Abraham had bought for a sum of money from the sons of Hamor in Shechem. As the time 17 approached for the promise God had made to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt, till 18 another king arose to rule Egypt who knew nothing of Joseph. He took a 19 cunning method with our race; he oppressed our ancestors by forcing them to expose their infants, to prevent them from surviving. It 20 was at this period that Moses was born, a divinely beautiful child. For three months he was brought up in his father's house; then he 21 was exposed, but Pharaoh's daughter



adopted him and brought him up  
 22 as her own son. So Moses was  
 educated in all the culture of the  
 Egyptians; he was a strong man  
 23 in speech and action. When he  
 had completed his fortieth year,  
 it occurred to him to visit his  
 24 brothers, the sons of Israel. He saw  
 one of them being badly treated,  
 so he defended him, *struck down the*  
*Egyptian*, and thus avenged the  
 25 man who had been wronged. (He  
 thought his brothers would under-  
 stand God was going to bring them  
 deliverance by means of him, but  
 26 they did not understand.) Next  
 day he came upon two of them  
 fighting and tried to pacify them.  
 "You are brothers!" he said,  
 27 "why injure one another?" But  
 the man who was injuring his  
 neighbour pushed him aside. "*Who*  
*made you ruler and umpire over*  
 28 *us?*" he asked. "*Do you want to*  
*kill me, as you killed the Egyptian*  
 29 *yesterday?*" At that Moses fled;  
 he became a sojourner in the land  
 of Midian, where he had two sons  
 30 born to him. At the close of forty  
 years an angel [of the Lord] appeared  
 to him in the flames of a burning  
 thorn-bush, in the desert of mount  
 31 Sinai. When Moses saw this, he  
 marvelled at the sight; and as he  
 went up to look at it, the voice of  
 32 the Lord said, '*I am the God of your*  
*fathers, the God of Abraham and*  
*Isaac and Jacob.*' Moses was so  
 terrified that he did not dare to look  
 33 at the bush. But the Lord said to  
 him, '*Take the sandals off your feet,*  
*for the place where you are standing*  
*is sacred ground. I have indeed seen*  
*the oppression of my people in Egypt,*  
*I have heard their groans, and I*  
*have come down to rescue them.*  
*Come now, I will send you back to*  
 34 *Egypt.*' The Moses they refused,

when they said, '*Who made you*  
*ruler and umpire?*'—that was  
 the very man whom God sent to  
 rule and to redeem them, by aid  
 of the angel who had appeared to  
 him in the bush. He it was who 36  
 led them forth, performing *wonders*  
*and signs in the land of Egypt*, at  
 the Red Sea, and *in the desert during*  
*forty years.* (This was the Moses 37  
 who told the sons of Israel, '*God*  
*will raise up a prophet for you from*  
*among your brotherhood, as he raised*  
*me.*') This was the man who at the 38  
 assembly in the desert intervened  
 between the angel who spoke to  
 him on mount Sinai and our fathers;  
 he received living Words to be  
 given to us. But our fathers would 39  
 not submit to him; they pushed  
 him aside and *hankered* secretly  
 after Egypt. They told Aaron, 40  
 '*Make gods that will march in front*  
*of us! As for this Moses who led us*  
*out of Egypt, we don't know what*  
*has happened to him!*' They 41  
 actually made a calf in those days,  
 offered sacrifice to this idol, and  
 grew festive over what their own  
 hands had manufactured. So God 42  
 turned from them, abandoning  
 them to the worship of the *starry*  
*Host*—as it is written in the book  
 of the prophets, *Did you offer me*  
*victims and sacrifices during the*  
*forty years in the desert, O house*  
*of Israel? No, it was the tent* 43  
*of Moloch and the star-symbol of*  
*Rephan your god that you carried,*  
*figures that you manufactured for*  
*worship. So now I will transport*  
*you beyond Babylon!* In the desert 44  
 our fathers had the tent of witness  
 as arranged by Him who told Moses  
 to make it after the pattern he had  
 seen. It was passed on and borne 45  
 in by our fathers as with Joshua  
 they took possession of the territory

## THE ACTS VIII

of the nations whom God drove out before our fathers. So it remained down to the days of David. He found favour with God and asked permission to *devise a dwelling for the God of Jacob*. It was Solomon, however, who *built him a house*. And yet the most High does not dwell in houses made by hands.

As the prophet says,  
*Heaven is my throne,  
 the earth is a footstool for my feet!  
 What house would you build me?  
 saith the Lord.*

*On what spot could I settle?  
 Did not my hand make all this?  
 Stiff-necked, uncircumcised in heart and ear,* you are always *resisting the holy Spirit!* As with your fathers, so with you! Which of the prophets did your fathers fail to persecute? They killed those who announced beforehand the coming of the Just One. And here you have betrayed him, murdered him!—you who got the Law that angels transmitted, and have not obeyed it!”

When they heard this, they were furious and gnashed their teeth at him. He, full of the holy Spirit, gazed up at heaven and saw the glory of God and Jesus standing at God’s right hand. “Look,” he said, “I see heaven open and the Son of man standing at God’s right hand!” With a loud shriek they shut their ears and rushed at him like one man. Putting him outside the city, they proceeded to stone him (the witnesses laid their clothes at the feet of a youth called Saul). So they stoned Stephen, who called on the Lord, saying, “Lord Jesus, receive my spirit!” Then he knelt down and cried aloud, “Lord, let not this sin stand against them!” With these words

he slept the sleep of death. (Saul quite approved of his murder.)

That day a severe persecution broke out against the church in Jerusalem, and everyone, with the exception of the apostles, was scattered over Judaea and Samaria. Devout men buried Stephen and made loud lamentation over him, but Saul made havoc of the church by entering one house after another, dragging off men and women, and consigning them to prison.

Now those who were scattered went through the land preaching the gospel. Philip travelled down to a town in Samaria, where he preached Christ to the people. And the crowds attended like one man to what was said by Philip, listening to him and watching the miracles he performed. For unclean spirits came screaming and shrieking out of many who had been possessed, and many paralytics and lame people were healed. So there was great rejoicing in that town. Now for some time previous a man called Simon had been practising magic arts in the town, to the utter astonishment of the Samaritan nation; he made himself out to be a great person, and all sorts and conditions of people attached themselves to him, declaring he was that Power of God which is known as ‘the Great Power.’ They attached themselves to him because he had dazzled them with his skill in magic for a considerable time. But when they believed Philip, who preached the gospel of the Reign of God and the name of Jesus, they had themselves baptized, both men and women; indeed Simon himself believed, and after his baptism kept close to Philip, utterly astonished



to see the signs and striking miracles which were taking place.

- 14 When the apostles at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had accepted the word of God, they despatched
- 15 Peter and John, who came down and prayed that the Samaritans
- 16 might receive the holy Spirit. (As yet it had not fallen upon any of them; they had simply been baptized in the name of the Lord
- 17 Jesus.) Then they laid their hands on them, and they received the holy
- 18 Spirit. Now Simon noticed that the holy Spirit was conferred by the laying on of the apostles' hands;
- 19 so he brought them money, saying, "Let me share this power too, so that anyone on whom I lay my hands may receive the holy Spirit."
- 20 Peter said to him, "Death to you and your money, for dreaming you
- 21 could buy the gift of God! You come in for no share or lot in this religion. *Your heart is all wrong*
- 22 *in the sight of God.* So repent of this wickedness of yours, and ask God whether you cannot be forgiven for your heart's purpose.
- 23 For I see you are *a bitter poison* and
- 24 *a pack of evil.*" Simon replied, "Beseech the Lord for me! Pray that nothing you have said may befall me!"
- 25 After bearing their testimony to the word of the Lord and preaching it, the apostles went back to Jerusalem, preaching the gospel to a number of the Samaritan
- 26 villages; but an angel of the Lord said to Philip, "Get up and go south, along the road from Jerusalem to Gaza" (the desert-route).
- 27 So he got up and went on his way. Now there was an Ethiopian eunuch, a high official of Candace the queen of the Ethiopians (he was her chief treasurer), who had come to Jeru-

salem for worship and was on his 28 way home. He was sitting in his chariot, reading the prophet Isaiah. The Spirit said to Philip, "Go up 29 and join that chariot." When Philip 30 ran up, he heard him reading the prophet Isaiah. "Do you really understand \* what you are reading?" he asked. "Why, how can 31 I possibly understand it," said the eunuch, "unless someone puts me on the right track?" And he begged Philip to get up and sit beside him. Now the passage of scripture which 32 he was reading was as follows:—

*he was led like a sheep to be slaughtered,  
and as a lamb is dumb before the shearer,  
so he opens not his lips.*

*By humbling himself he had his 33 doom removed.*

*Who can tell his family?*

*For his life is cut off from the earth.*

So the eunuch said to Philip, 34 "Pray, who is the prophet speaking about? Is it himself or someone else?" Then Philip opened his 35 lips, and starting from this scripture preached the gospel of Jesus to him. As they travelled on, they came to 36 some water, and the eunuch said, "Here is water! What is to prevent me being baptized?" So he 38 ordered the chariot to stop. Both of them stepped into the water, and Philip baptized the eunuch. When they came up from the water, 39 the Spirit of the Lord caught Philip away, and the eunuch lost sight of him. He went on his way rejoicing, while Philip found himself 40 at Azotus, where he passed on,

\* The Vulgate preserves the play on words in the Greek. *Intellegis quae legis* brings out, as English cannot, the force of *γινώσκεις & ἀναγινώσκεις*.



preaching the gospel in every town, till he reached Caesarea.

CHAP.

- 9 MEANWHILE Saul still breathed threats of murder against the disciples of the Lord. He went  
2 to the high priest and asked him for letters to the synagogues at Damascus empowering him to put any man or woman in chains whom he could find belonging to the Way, and bring them to Jerusalem. As  
3 he neared Damascus in the course of his journey, suddenly a light from heaven flashed round him;  
4 he dropped to the ground and heard a voice saying to him, "Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?" "Who are you?"\* he asked. "I am Jesus," he said, "and you persecute me. Get up and go into the city. There you will be told what  
7 you have to do." His fellow-travellers stood speechless, for they heard the voice but they could not  
8 see anyone. Saul got up from the ground, but though his eyes were open he could see nothing; so they took his hand and led him to  
9 Damascus. For three days he remained sightless, he neither ate nor drank.  
10 Now there was a disciple called Ananias in Damascus. The Lord said to him in a vision, "Ananias."  
11 He said, "I am here, Lord." And the Lord said to him, "Go away to the street called 'The Straight Street,' and ask at the house of Judas for a man of Tarsus called Saul. He is praying at this very  
12 moment, and he has seen a man called Ananias enter and lay his hands upon him to bring back his

\* I have deliberately left *κύριε* untranslated here, as in xxii. 8 and xxvi. 14, no less than in x. 4. Any English rendering would imply either too much or too little.

sight." "But, Lord," Ananias 13 answered, "many people have told me about all the mischief this man has done to thy saints at Jerusalem! And in this city too 14 he has authority from the high priests to put anyone in chains who invokes thy Name!" But 15 the Lord said to him, "Go; I have chosen him to be the means of bringing my Name before the Gentiles and their kings as well as before the sons of Israel. I will show 16 him all he has to suffer for the sake of my Name." So Ananias went off 17 and entered the house, laying his hands on him with these words, "Saul, my brother, I have been sent by the Lord, by Jesus who appeared to you on the road, to let you regain your sight and be filled with the holy Spirit." In a mo- 18 ment something like scales fell from his eyes, he regained his sight, got up and was baptized. Then he 19 took some food and felt strong again. For several days he stayed at Damascus with the disciples. He lost no time in preaching 20 throughout the synagogues that Jesus was the Son of God—to the 21 amazement of all his hearers, who said, "Is this not the man who in Jerusalem harried those who invoke this Name, the man who came here for the express purpose of carrying them all in chains to the high priests?"

Saul became more and more 22 vigorous. He put the Jewish residents in Damascus to confusion by his proof that Jesus was the Christ; and the Jews, after a number of 23 days had elapsed, conspired to make away with him. But their plot came 24 to the ears of Saul, and, although they kept watch on the gates day and night in order to make away

25 with him, his disciples managed  
one night to let him down over the  
wall by lowering him in a basket.  
26 He got to Jerusalem and tried to  
join the disciples, but they were all  
afraid of him, unable to believe he  
27 was really a disciple. Barnabas,  
however, got hold of him and  
brought him to the apostles. To  
them he related how he had seen  
the Lord upon the road, how He had  
spoken to him, and how he had  
spoken freely in the name of Jesus  
28 at Damascus. He then went in  
and out among them at Jerusalem,  
speaking freely in the name of the  
29 Lord; he also held conversations  
and debates with the Hellenists.  
But when the brothers learned that  
the Hellenists were attempting to  
30 make away with him, they took  
him down to Cæsarea and sent him  
off to Tarsus.

31 Now, all over Judæa, Galilee,  
and Samaria, the church enjoyed  
peace; it was consolidated, in-  
spired by reverence for the Lord  
and by its invocation of the holy  
Spirit, and so increased in numbers.  
32 Peter moved here and there among  
them all, and it happened that in  
the course of his tours he came  
down to visit the saints who stayed  
33 at Lydda. There he found a man  
called Æneas who had been bed-  
ridden for eight years with paraly-  
34 sis. "Æneas," said Peter, "Jesus  
the Christ cures you! Get up and  
make your bed!" He got up at  
35 once. And all the inhabitants of  
Lydda and Saron saw him, and  
they turned to the Lord.

36 At Joppa there was a disciple  
called Tabitha (which may be trans-  
lated Dorcas, or 'Gazelle'), a woman  
whose life was full of good actions

and of charitable practices. She 37  
happened to take ill and die at this  
time, and after washing her body  
they laid it in an upper room. When 38  
the disciples heard that Peter was  
at Lydda (for Joppa is not far from  
Lydda), they sent two men to beg  
him to "Come on to us without  
delay." So Peter got up and went 39  
with them. When he arrived, they  
took him up to the room, where  
all the widows stood beside him  
crying as they showed him the  
garments and dresses that Dorcas  
used to make when she was with  
them. Peter put them all outside; 40  
then he knelt down and prayed,  
and turning to the body said,  
"Tabitha, rise." She opened her  
eyes, and on seeing Peter she sat  
up. Then he gave her his hand, 41  
raised her, and, after calling  
the saints and the widows he pre-  
sented her to them alive. This 42  
became known all over Joppa,  
and many believed in the Lord.

In Joppa Peter stayed for some 43  
time, at the house of Simon a  
tanner. Now in Caesarea there 44  
was a man called Cornelius, a  
captain in the Italian regiment, 2  
a religious man, who revered  
God with all his household, who  
was liberal in his alms to the  
People, and who constantly prayed  
to God. About three o'clock in the 3  
afternoon he distinctly saw in a  
vision an angel of God entering and  
saying to him, "Cornelius." He 4  
stared at the angel in terror, say-  
ing, "What is it?" He replied,  
"Your prayers and your alms  
have risen before God as a sacri-  
fice to be remembered. You must 5  
now send some men to Joppa  
for a certain Simon who is sur-  
named Peter; he is staying with 6  
Simon a tanner, whose house stands



7 by the sea." When the angel who spoke to him had left, he called two of his menservants and a religiously minded soldier who be-  
 8 longed to his personal retinue, and after describing all the vision to  
 9 them, he sent them to Joppa. Next day they were still on the road and not far from the town, when Peter went up to the roof of the house  
 10 about noon to pray. He became very hungry and longed for some food. But as they were getting the  
 11 meal ready, a trance came over him. He saw heaven open and a vessel coming down, like a huge sheet lowered by the four corners to the  
 12 earth, which contained all quadrupeds and creeping things of the  
 13 earth and wild birds. A voice came to him, "Rise, Peter, kill and eat."  
 14 But Peter said, "No, no, my Lord; I have never eaten anything com-  
 15 mon or unclean." A second time the voice came back to him,  
 "What God has cleansed, you must  
 16 not regard as common." This happened three times; then the vessel was at once raised to heaven.  
 17 Peter was quite at a loss to know the meaning of the vision he had seen; but just then, the messengers of Cornelius, who had made in-  
 18 quiries for the house of Simon, stood at the door and called out to ask if Simon, surnamed Peter,  
 19 was staying there. So the Spirit said to Peter, who was pondering over the vision, "There are three  
 20 men looking for you! Come, get up and go down, and have no hesita-  
 tion about accompanying them, for it is I who have sent them."  
 21 Then Peter went down to the men, saying, "I am the man you are looking for. What is your reason  
 22 for coming?" They said, "Cornelius, a captain, a good man who

reverences God and enjoys a good reputation among the whole Jewish nation, was instructed by a holy angel to send for you to his house and to listen to what you had to say." So he invited them in and  
 23 entertained them. Next day he was up and off with them, accompanied by some of the brothers from Joppa; and on the next day he  
 24 reached Caesarea. Peter was just  
 25 going into the house when Cornelius met him, fell at his feet, and worshipped him; but Peter raised him,  
 26 saying, "Get up, I am only a man myself." Then talking to him he  
 27 entered the house, to find a large company assembled. (For Cor-  
 28 nelius had been expecting him and had called his kinsfolk and intimate friends together.) \* To them Peter  
 29 said, "You know yourselves it is illegal for a Jew to join or accost any-  
 one belonging to another nation; but God has shown me that I must not call any man common or unclean, and so I have come without any  
 30 demur when I was sent for. Now I want to know why you sent for me?" "Three days ago," said  
 31 Cornelius, "at this very hour I was praying in my house at three o'clock in the afternoon, when a man stood before me in shining dress, saying,  
 32 'Cornelius, your prayer has been heard, your alms are remembered by God. You must send to  
 33 Joppa and summon Simon who is surnamed Peter; he is staying in the house of Simon a tanner beside the sea.' So I sent for you at once,  
 and you have been kind enough to come. Well now, here we are all present before God to listen to what the Lord has commanded you to say." Then Peter opened his lips  
 34

\* Transposing ver. 24b to its right position between ver. 27 and ver. 28.



and said, "I see quite plainly that  
 85 *God has no favourites*, but that he  
 who reverences Him and lives a  
 good life in any nation is welcomed  
 86 by Him. You know *the message he*  
*sent to the sons of Israel when he*  
*preached the gospel of peace by*  
 Jesus Christ (who is Lord of all);  
 87 you know how it spread over the  
 whole of Judaea, starting from  
 Galilee after the baptism preached  
 by John—how *God consecrated*  
 88 Jesus of Nazaret *with the holy*  
*Spirit* and power, and how he went  
 about doing good and curing all  
 who were harassed by the devil;  
 89 for God was with him. As for what  
 he did in the land of the Jews and  
 of Jerusalem, we can testify to that.  
 They slew him *by hanging him on a*  
 40 *gibbet*, but God raised him on the  
 third day, and allowed him to be seen  
 41 not by all the People but by wit-  
 nesses whom God had previously  
 selected, by us who ate and drank  
 with him after his resurrection from  
 42 the dead, when he enjoined us to  
 preach to the People, testifying that  
 this was he whom God has appointed  
 to be judge of the living and of the  
 43 dead. All the prophets testify that  
 everyone who believes in him is to  
 receive remission of sins through  
 44 his Name." While Peter was still  
 speaking, the holy Spirit fell upon  
 all who listened to what he said.  
 45 Now the Jewish believers who had  
 accompanied Peter were amazed  
 that the gift of the holy Spirit had  
 actually been poured out on the  
 46 Gentiles—for they heard them  
 speak with 'tongues' and magnify  
 47 God. At this Peter asked, "Can  
 any one refuse water for the bap-  
 tism of these people—people who  
 have received the holy Spirit just  
 48 as we ourselves have?" And he  
 ordered them to be baptized in the

name of Jesus Christ. Then they  
 begged him to remain for some  
 days.

CHAP.

Now the apostles and the brothers 11  
 in Judaea heard that the Gentiles  
 also had received the word of God.  
 So when Peter came up to Jeru- 2  
 salem, the circumcision party fell  
 foul of him. "You went into 3  
 the houses of the uncircumcised,"  
 they said, "and you ate with  
 them!" Then Peter proceeded to 4  
 put the facts before them. "I 5  
 was in the town of Joppa at prayer,"  
 he said, "and in a trance I saw a  
 vision—a vessel coming down like  
 a huge sheet lowered from heaven  
 by the four corners. It came down 6  
 to me, and when I looked steadily  
 at it, I noted the quadrupeds of the  
 earth, the wild beasts, the creeping 7  
 things and the wild birds. Also I  
 heard a voice saying to me, 'Rise, 8  
 Peter, kill and eat.' I said, 'No,  
 no, my Lord;\* nothing common or 9  
 unclean has ever passed my lips.'  
 But a voice answered me for the 10  
 second time out of heaven, 'What  
 God has cleansed, you must not  
 regard as common.' This hap- 10  
 pened three times, and then the  
 whole thing was drawn back into  
 heaven. At that very moment 11  
 three men reached the house where  
 I was living, sent to me from  
 Caesarea. The Spirit told me to 12  
 have no hesitation in accompanying  
 them; these six brothers went with  
 me as well, and we entered the  
 man's house. He related to us how 13  
 he had seen the angel standing in  
 his house and saying, 'Send to  
 Joppa for Simon who is surnamed

\* Here, as in x. 14, *κύριε* is translated.  
 Peter was a Christian, and the connexion of  
 the Voice with the Spirit is evident from the  
 context.

14 Peter; he will tell you how you and  
all your household are to be saved.’  
15 Now just as I began to speak, the  
holy Spirit fell upon them as upon  
16 us at the beginning; and I remem-  
bered the saying of the Lord, that  
‘John baptized with water, but  
you shall be baptized with the holy  
17 Spirit.’ Well then, if God has given  
them exactly the same gift as he  
gave us when we believed in the  
Lord Jesus Christ, who was I—  
how could I try—to thwart God? ”  
18 On hearing this they desisted and  
glorified God, saying, “ So God has  
actually allowed the Gentiles to  
repent and live ! ”  
19 Now those who had been scat-  
tered by the trouble which arose  
over Stephen made their way as  
far as Phœnicia and Cyprus and An-  
tioch, but they preached the word  
20 to none except Jews. Some of  
them, however, were Cypriotes and  
Cyrenians, who on reaching An-  
tioch told the Greeks \* also the  
21 gospel of the Lord Jesus; the  
strong hand of the Lord was with  
them, and a large number believed  
22 and turned to the Lord. The news  
of this reached the church in Jeru-  
salem, and they despatched Barna-  
bas to Antioch. When he came and  
23 saw the grace of God he rejoiced,  
and encouraged them all to hold  
by the Lord with heartfelt pur-  
24 pose (for he was a good man, full  
of the holy Spirit and faith). Con-  
siderable numbers of people were  
25 brought in for the Lord. So Barna-  
bas went off to Tarsus to look for  
26 Saul, and on finding him he brought  
him to Antioch, where for a whole  
year they were guests of the church  
and taught considerable numbers.

\* Reading “*Ἑλληνας* with N° A D\*, for which “*Ἑλληνιστὰς*” seems to have been substituted under the influence of ix. 29.

It was at Antioch too that the  
disciples were originally called  
“ Christians.”

During these days some prophets 27  
came down from Jerusalem to  
Antioch, one of whom, named 28  
Agabus, showed by the Spirit that  
a severe famine was about to visit  
the whole world (the famine which  
occurred in the reign of Claudius).  
So the disciples put aside money, 29  
as each of them was able to afford  
it, for a contribution to be sent to  
the brothers in Judæa. This they 30  
carried out, sending their contribu-  
tion to the presbyters by Barnabas  
and Saul.

## CHAP.

It was about that time that king 12  
Herod laid hands of violence on  
some members of the church. James 2  
the brother of John he slew with  
the sword, and when he saw this 3  
pleased the Jews, he went on to  
seize Peter. (This was during the  
days of unleavened bread.) After 4  
arresting him he put him in prison,  
handing him over to a guard of  
sixteen soldiers, with the intention  
of producing him to the People  
after the passover. So Peter was 5  
closely guarded in prison, while  
earnest prayer for him was offered  
to God by the church. The very 6  
night before Herod meant to have  
him produced, Peter lay asleep  
between two soldiers; he was fast-  
ened by two chains, and sentries  
in front of the door guarded the  
prison. But an angel of the Lord 7  
flashed on him, and a light shone  
in the cell; striking Peter on the side  
he woke him, saying, “ Quick, get  
up ! ” The fetters dropped from  
his hands, and the angel said to him, 8  
“ Gird yourself and put on your  
sandals.” He did so. Then said



the angel, "Put on your coat and  
 9 follow me." And he followed him  
 out, not realizing that what the  
 angel did was real, but imagining  
 10 that he saw a vision. When they  
 had passed the first guard and the  
 second they came to the iron gate  
 leading into the city, which opened  
 to them of its own accord; they  
 passed out, and after they had gone  
 through one street, the angel imme-  
 11 diately left him. Then Peter came  
 to his senses and said, "Now I know  
 for certain that the Lord has sent  
 his angel and rescued me from the  
 hand of Herod and from all that  
 the Jewish people were anticipat-  
 12 ing." When he grasped the situa-  
 tion, he went to the house of Mary,  
 the mother of John who was sur-  
 named Mark, where a number had  
 13 met for prayer. When he knocked at  
 the door of the porch, a maidservant  
 called Rhoda came to answer it;  
 14 but as soon as she recognized Peter's  
 voice, instead of opening the door  
 she ran inside from sheer joy and  
 announced that Peter was standing  
 15 in front of the porch. "You are  
 mad," they said. But she insisted  
 it was true. "It is his angel," they  
 16 said. But Peter kept on knocking,  
 and when they opened the door they  
 17 were amazed to see him. He beck-  
 oned to them to keep quiet and  
 then described to them how the  
 Lord had brought him out of prison.  
 "Report this to James," he said,  
 "and to the brothers." And off he  
 18 went to another place. Now  
 when day broke there was a great  
 commotion among the soldiers over  
 what could have become of Peter.  
 19 Herod made inquiries for him but  
 could not find him; so, after cross-  
 examining the guards, he ordered  
 them off to death. He then went  
 down from Judaea to Caesarea,

where he spent some time. As 20  
 there was a bitter feud between  
 him and the inhabitants of Tyre  
 and Sidon, they waited on him  
 unanimously and after conciliating  
 the royal chamberlain Blastus they  
 made overtures for peace, as their  
 country depended for its food-  
 supply upon the royal territory. On 21  
 a stated day Herod arrayed himself  
 in royal robes, took his seat on the  
 dais, and proceeded to harangue  
 them. The populace shouted, "It 22  
 is a god's voice, not a man's!" and 23  
 in a moment an angel of the  
 Lord struck him, because he had  
 not given due glory to God; he  
 was eaten up by worms and so  
 expired.

The word of God spread and 24  
 multiplied.

After fulfilling their commission, 25  
 Barnabas and Saul returned from  
 Jerusalem, bringing with them  
 John who is surnamed Mark.  
 Now in the local church at An- 13  
 tioch there were prophets and  
 teachers, Barnabas, Symeon (called  
 Niger) and Lucius the Cyrenian,  
 besides Manaen (a foster-brother  
 of Herod the tetrarch) and Saul.  
 As they were worshipping the Lord 2  
 and fasting, the holy Spirit said,  
 "Come! set me apart Barnabas  
 and Saul for the work to which I  
 have called them." Then after 3  
 fasting and praying they laid their  
 hands on them and let them  
 go.

Sent out thus by the holy Spirit, 4  
 they went down to Seleucia and  
 from there they sailed to Cyprus.  
 On reaching Salamis they pro- 5  
 claimed the word of God in the  
 Jewish synagogues, with John as  
 their assistant. They covered the 6  
 whole island as far as Paphos,  
 where they fell in with a Jewish



sorcerer and false prophet called  
 7 Bar-Jesus; he belonged to the suite  
 of the proconsul Sergius Paulus,  
 an intelligent man who called for  
 Barnabas and Saul and demanded  
 8 to hear the word of God. But the  
 sorcerer Elymas (for that is the  
 translation of his name) tried to  
 divert the proconsul from the faith.  
 9 So Saul (who is also called Paul),  
 filled with the holy Spirit, looked  
 10 steadily at him and said, "You  
 son of the devil, you enemy of all  
 good, full of all craft and all cun-  
 ning, will you never stop diverting  
 11 the straight paths of the Lord? See  
 here, the Lord's hand will fall on  
 you, and you will be blind, unable  
 for a time to see the sun." In a  
 moment a dark mist fell upon him,  
 and he groped about for someone  
 12 to take him by the hand. Then  
 the proconsul believed, when he  
 saw what had happened; he was  
 astounded at the doctrine of the  
 Lord.  
 13 Setting sail from Paphos, Paul  
 and his companions reached Perga  
 in Pamphylia; John left them and  
 14 went back to Jerusalem, but they  
 passed on from Perga and arrived  
 at Pisidian Antioch. On the sab-  
 bath they went into the synagogue  
 15 and sat down; and, after the reading  
 of the Law and the prophets, the  
 presidents of the synagogue sent to  
 tell them, "Brothers, if you have  
 any word of counsel for the people,  
 16 say it." So Paul stood up and  
 motioning with his hand said,  
 "Listen, men of Israel and you who  
 17 reverence God. The God of this  
 People Israel chose our fathers;  
 he multiplied the people as they  
 sojourned in the land of Egypt and  
 with arm uplifted led them out of it.  
 18 For about forty years he bore with  
 19 them in the desert, and after destroying

seven nations in the land of Canaan  
 he gave them their land as an inheri-  
 tance for about four hundred and fifty 20  
 years. After that he gave them  
 judges, down to the prophet  
 Samuel. Then it was that they 21  
 begged for a king, and God gave  
 them forty years of Saul, the son  
 of Kish, who belonged to the tribe  
 of Benjamin. After deposing him, 22  
 he raised up David to be their king,  
 to whom he bore this testimony  
 that 'In David, the son of Jessai,  
 I have found a man after my own  
 heart, who will obey all my will.'  
 From his offspring God brought to 23  
 Israel, as he had promised, a saviour  
 in Jesus, before whose coming John 24  
 had already preached a baptism of  
 repentance for all the people of  
 Israel. And as John was closing 25  
 his career he said, 'What do you  
 take me for? I am not He; no,  
 he is coming after me, and I am not  
 fit to untie the sandals on his feet!' Brothers, sons of Abraham's race 26  
 and all among you who reverence  
 God, the message of this salvation  
 has been sent to us. The inhabi- 27  
 tants of Jerusalem and their rulers,  
 by condemning him\* in their  
 ignorance, fulfilled the words of the  
 prophets which are read every sab-  
 bath; though they could find him 28  
 guilty of no crime that deserved  
 death they begged Pilate to have  
 him put to death, and, after carry- 29  
 ing out all that had been predicted  
 of him in scripture, they lowered  
 him from the gibbet and laid him  
 in a tomb. But God raised him 30  
 from the dead. For many days he 31  
 was seen by those who had come

\* The Greek text is difficult. I prefer, as the least radical treatment, Lachmann's proposal to read *κρίναντες* immediately after *ἀγνοήσαντες* καὶ, which at any rate yields a fair sense.

up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem; they are now his witnesses  
 32 to the People. So we now preach to you the glad news that the  
 33 promise made to the fathers has been fulfilled by God for us their children, when he raised Jesus. As it is written in the second psalm,

*thou art my son,*

*to-day have I become thy father.*

34 And as a proof that he has raised him from the dead, never to return to decay, he has said this: *I will give you the holiness of David that fails not.*

35 Hence in another psalm he says, *thou wilt not let thy holy One suffer decay.*

36 Of course *David*, after serving God's purpose in his own generation, died and was laid *beside his fathers*; he  
 37 suffered decay, but He whom God  
 38 raised did not suffer decay. So you must understand, my brothers, that remission of sins is proclaimed  
 39 to you through him, and that by him everyone who believes is absolved from all that the law of  
 40 Moses never could absolve you from. Beware then in case the prophetic saying applies to you:

41 *Look, you disdainful folk, wonder at this and perish—*

*for in your days I do a deed,*

*a deed you will never believe, not though one were to explain it to you."*

42 As Paul and Barnabas went out, the people begged to have all this repeated to them on the following  
 43 sabbath. After the synagogue broke up, a number of the Jews and the devout proselytes followed them; Paul and Barnabas talked to them and encouraged them to hold by  
 44 the grace of God. And on the next sabbath nearly all the town gathered  
 45 to hear the word of the Lord. But when the Jews saw the crowds they

were filled with jealousy; they began to contradict what Paul said and to abuse him. So Paul and Barnabas  
 46 bas spoke out fearlessly. "The word of God," they said, "had to be spoken to you in the first instance; but as you push it aside and judge yourselves unworthy of eternal life, well, here we turn to the Gentiles! For these are the Lord's 47 orders to us:

*I have set you to be a light for the Gentiles,*

*to bring salvation to the end of the earth."*

When the Gentiles heard this they 48 rejoiced and glorified the word of the Lord and believed, that is, all who had been ordained to eternal life; and the word of the Lord 49 went far and wide over the whole country. But the Jews incited the 50 devout women of high rank and the leading men in the town, who stirred up persecution against Paul and Barnabas and drove them out of their territory. They shook the 51 dust off their feet as a protest and went to Iconium. As for the 52 disciples, they were filled with joy and the holy Spirit.

CHAP.

At Iconium the same thing hap- 14 pened. They went into the synagogue of the Jews and spoke in such a way that a great body both of Jews and Greeks believed. Here 3 they spent a considerable time, speaking fearlessly about the Lord, who attested the word of his grace by allowing signs and wonders to be performed by them.\* But the 2 refractory Jews stirred up and exasperated the feeling of the Gentiles against the brothers. The 4

\* Restoring ver. 3 to what appears to have been its original position between vers. 1 and 2.



## THE ACTS XV

populace of the town was divided; some sided with the Jews, some  
 5 with the apostles. But, when the Gentiles and Jews along with their rulers made a hostile movement to  
 6 insult and stone them, the apostles grasped the situation and escaped to the Lycaonian towns of Lystra and Derbe and to the surrounding  
 7 country; there they continued to preach the gospel.

8 At Lystra there was a man sitting, who was powerless in his feet, a lame man unable to walk ever since  
 9 he was born. He heard Paul speaking, and Paul, gazing steadily at him and noticing that he had faith  
 10 enough to make him better, said in a loud voice, "Stand erect on your feet." Up he jumped and  
 11 began to walk. Now when the crowds saw what Paul had done, they shouted in the Lycaonian language, "The gods have come down to us in human form!"  
 12 Barnabas they called Zeus, and Paul Hermes, since he was the chief  
 13 spokesman. Indeed the priest of the temple of Zeus in front of the town brought oxen and garlands to the gates, intending to offer sacrifice along with the crowds.  
 14 But when the apostles, Paul and Barnabas, heard this they rent their clothes and sprang out among  
 15 the crowd, shouting, "Men, what is this you are doing? We are but human, with natures like your own! The gospel we are preaching to you is to turn from such futile ways to the living God *who made the heaven, the earth, the sea,*  
 16 *and all that in them is.* In bygone ages he allowed all nations to go  
 17 their own ways, though as the bountiful Giver he did not leave himself without a witness, giving you rain from heaven and fruitful seasons,

giving you food and joy to your heart's content." Even by saying 18 this it was all they could do to keep the crowds from sacrificing to them.

But Jews from Antioch and Ico- 19 nium arrived, who won over the crowds, and after pelting Paul with stones they dragged him outside the town, thinking he was dead. How- 20 ever, as the disciples gathered round him, he got up and went into the town.

Next day he went off with Barna- bas to Derbe, and after preaching 21 the gospel to that town and making a number of disciples, they turned back to Lystra, Iconium and Antioch, strengthening the souls of the 22 disciples, encouraging them to hold by the faith, and telling them that "we have to get into the Realm of God through many a trouble." They chose presbyters for them in 23 every church, and with prayer and fasting entrusted them to the Lord in whom they had believed. Then 24 they came through Pisidia to Pamphylia, and after speaking the word 25 of the Lord in Perga they went down to Attaleia; thence they sailed 26 for Antioch, where they had been commended to the grace of God for the work they had now completed. On their arrival they 27 gathered the church together and reported how God had been with them, what he had done, and how he had opened a door into faith for the Gentiles.

They spent a considerable time 28 with the disciples there. But cer- 15 tain individuals came down from Jerusalem and taught the brothers that "unless you get circumcised after the custom of Moses you cannot be saved." As a sharp dispute 2 and controversy sprang up between

them and Paul and Barnabas, it was arranged that Paul and Barnabas, along with some others of their number, should go up to Jerusalem to see the apostles and presbyters at Jerusalem about this question.

3 The church sped them on their journey, and they passed through both Phœnicia and Syria informing the brothers, to the great joy of all, that the Gentiles were turning to God.

4 On arriving at Jerusalem they were received by the church, the apostles and the presbyters, and they reported how God had been with them

5 and what he had done. But some of the believers who belonged to the Pharisaic party got up and said, "Gentiles must be circumcised and told to observe the law of Moses."

6 The apostles and the presbyters met

7 to investigate this question, and a keen controversy sprang up; but Peter rose and said to them, "Brothers, you are well aware that from the earliest days God chose that of you all I should be the one by whom the Gentiles were to hear the word of the gospel and believe

8 it. The God who reads the hearts of all attested this by giving them the holy Spirit just as he gave it

9 to us; in cleansing their hearts by faith he made not the slightest distinction between us and them.

10 Well now, why are you trying\* to impose a yoke on the neck of the disciples which neither our fathers nor we ourselves could

11 bear? No, it is by the grace of the Lord Jesus that we believe and are saved, in the same way as they

12 are." So the whole meeting was quieted and listened to Barnabas and Paul recounting the signs and wonders God had performed by

them among the Gentiles. When 13 they had finished speaking, James spoke. "Brothers," he said, "listen to me. Symeon has explained 14 how it was God's original concern to secure a People from among the Gentiles to bear his Name. This 15 agrees with the words of the prophets; as it is written,

*After this I will return and rebuild 16*

*David's fallen tent,*

*its ruins I will rebuild and erect it anew,*

*that the rest of men may seek for 17 the Lord,*

*even all the Gentiles who are called by my name,*

*saieth the Lord, who makes this known 18 from of old.* Hence, in my opinion, 19

we ought not to put fresh difficulties in the way of those who are turning to God from among the Gentiles, but 20

write them injunctions to abstain from whatever is contaminated by idols, from sexual vice, from the flesh of animals that have been strangled, and from tasting blood;

for Moses has had his preachers 21 from the earliest ages in every town, where he is read aloud in the synagogues every sabbath." Then the 22

apostles and the presbyters, together with the whole church, decided to select some of their number

and send them with Paul and Barnabas to Antioch. The men selected were Judas (called Bar-Sabbas) and Silas, prominent members of the brotherhood. They conveyed the 23

following letter. "The apostles and the presbyters of the brotherhood to the brothers who belong to the Gentiles throughout Antioch and Syria and Cilicia: greeting.

Having learned that some of our 24

number,† quite unauthorized by us,

\* Omitting τὸν θεόν.

† Omitting ἐξελεθόντες.



## THE ACTS XVI

have unsettled you with their teaching and upset your souls, we have decided unanimously to select some of our number and send them to you along with our beloved Paul and Barnabas who have risked their lives for the sake of our Lord Jesus Christ. We therefore send Judas and Silas with the following message, which they will also give to you orally. The holy Spirit and we have decided not to impose any extra burden on you, apart from these essential requirements: abstain from food that has been offered to idols, from tasting blood, from the flesh of animals that have been strangled, and from sexual vice. Keep clear of all this and you will prosper. Goodbye." When the messengers were despatched, they went down to Antioch and after gathering the whole body they handed them the letter. On reading it the people rejoiced at the encouragement it brought; and as Judas and Silas were themselves prophets, they encouraged and strengthened the brothers with many a counsel. Then after some time had passed the brothers let them go with a greeting of peace to those who had sent them. Paul and Barnabas, however, stayed on in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord along with a number of others.

Some days later, Paul said to Barnabas, "Come and let us go back to visit the brothers in every town where we have proclaimed the word of the Lord. Let us see how they are doing." But while Barnabas wanted to take John (who was called Mark) along with them, Paul held they should not take a man with them who had deserted them in Pamphylia, instead of accom-

panying them on active service. So in irritation they parted company, Barnabas taking Mark with him and sailing for Cyprus, while Paul selected Silas and went off, commended by the brothers to the grace of the Lord. He made his way through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the churches.

He also came down to Derbe and Lystra, where there was a disciple called Timotheus, the son of a believing Jewess and a Greek father. He had a good reputation among the brothers at Lystra and Iconium; so, as Paul wished him to go abroad with him, he took and circumcised him on account of the local Jews, all of whom knew his father had been a Greek. As they travelled on from town to town, they handed over to the people the resolutions which the apostles and the presbyters in Jerusalem had decided were to be obeyed; and the churches were strengthened in the faith and increased in numbers day by day. They crossed Phrygia and the country of Galatia, the holy Spirit having stopped them from preaching the word in Asia; when they got as far as Mysia, they tried to enter Bithynia, but the Spirit of Jesus would not allow them, and so they passed Mysia by and went down to Troas. A vision appeared to Paul by night, the vision of a Macedonian standing and appealing to him with the words, "Cross to Macedonia and help us." As soon as he saw the vision, we made efforts to start for Macedonia, inferring that God had called us to preach the gospel to them. Setting sail then from Troas we ran straight to Samothrace and on the following day to Neapolis. We then came to the Roman colony

## THE ACTS XVI

- of Philippi, which is the foremost town of the district of Macedonia. In this town we spent some days.
- 13 On the sabbath we went outside the gate to the bank of the river, where as usual there was a place of prayer; we sat down and talked to the women who had gathered.
- 14 Among the listeners there was a woman called Lydia, a dealer in purple who belonged to the town of Thyatira. She revered God, and the Lord opened her heart to
- 15 attend to what Paul said. When she was baptized, along with her household, she begged us, saying, "If you are convinced I am a believer in the Lord, come and stay at my house." She compelled us to come.
- 16 Now it happened as we went to the place of prayer that a slave-girl met us, possessed by a spirit of ventriloquism, and a source of great profit to her owners by her power
- 17 of fortune-telling. She followed Paul and the rest of us, shrieking, "These men are servants of the Most High God, they proclaim to
- 18 you the way of salvation!" She did this for a number of days. Then Paul turned in annoyance and told the spirit, "In the name of Jesus Christ I order you out of her!" And it left her that very moment.
- 19 But when her owners saw their chance of profit was gone, they caught hold of Paul and Silas and dragged them before the magistrates
- 20 in the forum. Bringing them before the praetors they declared, "These fellows are Jews who are making
- 21 an agitation in our town; they are proclaiming customs which as Romans we are not allowed to accept
- 22 or observe!" The crowd also joined in the attack upon them, while the praetors, after having
- them stripped and after ordering them to be flogged with rods, had 23 many lashes inflicted on them and put them into prison, charging the jailer to keep them safe. On re- 24 ceiving so strict a charge, he put them into the inner prison and secured their feet in the stocks. But about midnight, as Paul and 25 Silas were praying and singing to God, while the prisoners listened, all of a sudden there was a great 26 earthquake which shook the very foundations of the prison; the doors all flew open in an instant and the fetters of all the prisoners were unfastened. When the jailer 27 started from his sleep and saw the prison-doors open, he drew his sword and was on the point of killing himself, supposing the prisoners had made their escape; but Paul shouted aloud, "Do 28 not harm yourself, we are all here!" So calling for lights he 29 rushed in, fell in terror before Paul and Silas, and brought them out 30 (after securing the other prisoners).\* "Sirs," he said, "what must I do to be saved?" "Believe in the 31 Lord Jesus Christ," they said, "and then you will be saved, you and your household as well." And 32 they spoke the word of the Lord to him and to all in his house. Then 33 he took them at that very hour of the night and washed their wounds and got baptized instantly, he and all his family. He took them up to 34 his house and put food before them, overjoyed like all his household at having believed in God. When 35 day broke, the praetors sent the lictors with the message, "Release these men." The jailer repeated 36 this to Paul. "The praetors," he

\* Adding τοὺς λοιποὺς ἀσφαλίσάμενος with D and the (Harklean) Syriac version.



## THE ACTS XVII

said, "have sent to release you.  
 37 So come out and go in peace." But Paul replied, "They flogged us in public and without a trial, flogged Roman citizens! They put us in prison, and now they are going to get rid of us secretly! No indeed! Let them come here themselves  
 38 and take us out!" The lictors reported this to the praetors, who, on hearing the men were Roman  
 39 citizens, became alarmed; they went to appease them and after taking them out of prison begged  
 40 them to leave the town. So they left the prison and went to Lydia's house, where they saw the brothers and encouraged them; then they departed.  
 17 Travelling on through Amphipolis and Apollonia they reached Thessalonica. Here there was a  
 2 Jewish synagogue, and Paul as usual went in; for three sabbaths he argued with them on the scrip-  
 3 tures, explaining and quoting passages to prove that the messiah had to suffer and rise from the dead, and that "the Jesus I proclaim  
 4 to you is the messiah." Some were persuaded and threw in their lot with Paul and Silas, including a host  
 5 of devout Greeks and a large number of the leading women. But the  
 6 Jews were roused to jealousy; they got hold of some idle rascals to form a mob and set the town in an uproar; they attacked Jason's house in the endeavour to bring them  
 7 out before the populace, but as they failed to find Paul and Silas they haled Jason and some of the brothers before the politarchs, yelling, "These upsetters of the whole  
 7 world have come here too! Jason has welcomed them! They all violate the decrees of Caesar by declaring someone else called Jesus

is king." Both the crowd and the  
 8 politarchs were disturbed when they heard this; however, they let Jason  
 9 and the others go, after binding them over to keep the peace. Then  
 10 the brothers at once sent off Paul and Silas by night to Berea. When they arrived there, they be-  
 took themselves to the Jewish syna-  
 11 gogue, where the people were more amenable than at Thessalonica; they were perfectly ready to receive  
 the Word and made a daily study  
 of the scriptures to see if it was  
 12 really as Paul said. Many of them believed, together with a large number of prominent Greeks, both  
 13 women and men. But when the Jews of Thessalonica heard that Paul was proclaiming the word of  
 God at Berea as well, they came to create a disturbance and a riot among the crowds at Berea too.  
 The brothers then sent off Paul at  
 14 once on his way to the sea, while Silas and Timotheus remained where they were. Paul's escort  
 15 brought him as far as Athens and left with instructions that Silas and Timotheus were to join him as soon as possible.

While Paul was waiting for them  
 16 at Athens, his soul was irritated at the sight of the idols that filled the city. He argued in the synagogue  
 17 with the Jews and the devout proselytes and also in the marketplace daily with those who chanced to be present. Some of the Epicurean  
 18 and Stoic philosophers also came across him. Some said, "Whatever does the fellow mean with his scraps of learning?" Others said, "He looks like a herald of foreign deities" (this was because he preached  
 'Jesus' and 'the Resurrection'). Then taking him to the Areopagus  
 19 they asked, "May we know what

is this novel teaching of yours?  
 20 You talk of some things that sound strange to us; so we want to know  
 21 what they mean." (For all the Athenians and the foreign visitors to Athens occupied themselves with nothing else than repeating or listening to the latest novelty.) So Paul  
 22 stood in the middle of the Areopagus and said, "Men of Athens, I observe at every turn that you  
 23 are a most religious people. Why, as I passed along and scanned your objects of worship, I actually came upon an altar with the inscription

## TO AN UNKNOWN GOD.

Well, I proclaim to you what you  
 24 worship in your ignorance. *The God who made the world and all things in it*, he, as Lord of heaven and earth, does not dwell in shrines that are  
 25 made by human hands; he is not served by human hands as if he needed anything, for it is he who gives life and breath and all things  
 26 to all men. All nations he has created from a common origin, to dwell all over the earth, fixing their allotted periods and the  
 27 boundaries of their abodes, meaning them to seek for God on the chance of finding him in their groping for him. Though indeed he is close to  
 28 each one of us, for it is in him that we live and move and exist—as some of your own poets have said,

'We too belong to His race.'

29 Well, as the race of God, we ought not to imagine that the divine nature resembles gold or silver or stone, the product of human art and invention. Such ages of ignorance God overlooked, but he now charges men that they are all

everywhere to repent, inasmuch 31 as he has fixed a day on which he will judge the world justly by a man whom he has destined for this. And he has given proof of this to all by raising him from the dead." But on hearing of a 'resur- 32 rection of dead men,' some sneered, while others said, "We will hear you again on that subject." So 33 Paul withdrew from them. Some 34 men, however, did join him and believe, including Dionysius the Areopagite, a woman called Damaris, and some others.

## CHAP.

AFTER this Paul left Athens and 18 went to Corinth. There he came 2 across a Jew called Aquila, a native of Pontus, who had recently arrived from Italy with his wife Priscilla, as Claudius had ordered all Jews to leave Rome. Paul accosted them, and as he belonged to the same 3 trade he stayed with them and they all worked together. (They were workers in leather by trade.) Every sabbath he argued in the 4 synagogue, persuading both Jews and Greeks. By the time Silas 5 and Timotheus came south from Macedonia, Paul was engrossed in this preaching of the word, arguing to the Jews that the messiah was Jesus. But as they opposed and 6 abused him, he shook out his garments in protest, saying, "Your blood be on your own heads! I am not responsible! After this I will go to the Gentiles." Then 7 he removed to the house of a devout proselyte called Titus Justus, which adjoined the synagogue. But 8 Crispus the president of the synagogue believed in the Lord, as did all his household, and many of the Corinthians listened, believed,



## THE ACTS XIX

9 and were baptized. And the Lord said to Paul in a vision by night, "*Have no fear, speak on and never*  
 10 *stop, for I am with you, and no one shall attack and injure you; I have many people in this city.*"  
 11 So he settled there for a year and six months, teaching them the word of God.  
 12 But when Gallio was proconsul of Achaia the Jews without exception rose against Paul and brought  
 13 him up before the tribunal, crying, "This fellow incites men to worship  
 14 God contrary to the Law." Paul was just on the point of opening his lips to reply, when Gallio said to the Jews, "If it had been a misdemeanour or wicked crime, there would be some reason in me listening  
 15 to you, O Jews. But as these are merely questions of words and persons and your own Law, you can attend to them for yourselves. I decline to adjudicate upon matters  
 16 like that." And he drove them  
 17 from the tribunal. Then all [the Greeks] caught hold of Sosthenes the president of the synagogue and beat him in front of the tribunal; but Gallio took no notice.  
 18 After waiting on for a number of days Paul said goodbye to the brothers and sailed for Syria, accompanied by Priscilla and Aquila. (As the latter was under a vow, he had his head shaved at Cenchreae.)  
 19 When they reached Ephesus, Paul left them there. He went to the synagogue and argued with the  
 20 Jews, who asked him to stay for a while. But he would not consent;  
 21 he said goodbye to them, telling them, "I will come back to you, if it is the will of God." Then,  
 22 sailing from Ephesus, he reached Caesarea, went up to the capital to salute the church, and travelled

down to Antioch. After spending 23 some time there he went off on a journey right through the country of Galatia and Phrygia, strengthening the disciples.

There came to Ephesus a Jew 24 called Apollos, who was a native of Alexandria, a man of culture, strong in his knowledge of the scriptures. He had been instructed in the Way 25 of the Lord and he preached and taught about Jesus with ardour and accuracy, though all the baptism he knew was that of John. In the synagogue he was very outspoken at first; but when Aquila and Priscilla listened to him, they took him home and explained more accurately to him what the Way of God really meant. As he wished to 27 cross to Achaia, the brothers wrote and urged the disciples there to give him a welcome. And on his arrival he proved of great service to those who by God's grace had believed, for he publicly refuted the 28 Jews with might and main, showing from the scriptures that the messiah was Jesus.

CHAP.

It was when Apollos was in 19 Corinth that Paul, after passing through the inland districts, came down to Ephesus. There he found some disciples, whom he asked, 2 "Did you receive the holy Spirit when you believed?" "No," they said, "we never even heard of its existence." "Then," said he, 3 "what were you baptized in?" "In John's baptism," they replied. "John," said Paul, "baptized with 4 a baptism of repentance, telling the people to believe in Him who was to come after him, that is, in Jesus." When they heard this, 5 they had themselves baptized in

6 the name of the Lord Jesus, and  
 after Paul laid his hands on them  
 the holy Spirit came upon them,  
 they spoke with 'tongues' and  
 7 prophesied. They numbered all  
 together about twelve men.  
 8 Then Paul entered the synagogue  
 and for three months spoke out  
 fearlessly, arguing and persuading  
 people about the Reign of God.  
 9 But as some grew stubborn and  
 disobedient, decrying the Way  
 in presence of the multitude, he  
 left them, withdrew the disciples,  
 and continued his argument every  
 day from eleven to four\* in the  
 10 lecture-room of Tyrannus. This  
 went on for two years, so that all  
 the inhabitants of Asia, Jews as  
 well as Greeks, heard the word of  
 the Lord.  
 11 God also worked no ordinary  
 12 miracles by means of Paul; people  
 even carried away towels or aprons  
 he had used, and at their touch  
 sick folk were freed from their  
 diseases and evil spirits came out  
 13 of them. Some strolling Jewish  
 exorcists also undertook to pro-  
 nounce the name of the Lord Jesus  
 over those who had evil spirits,  
 saying, "I adjure you by the Jesus  
 14 whom Paul preaches!" The seven  
 sons of Sceuas, a Jewish high priest,  
 15 used to do this. But the evil spirit  
 retorted, "Jesus I know and Paul  
 I know, but you—who are you?"  
 16 And the man in whom the evil spirit  
 resided leapt at them, overpowered  
 them all, and belaboured them,  
 till they rushed out of the house  
 17 stripped and wounded. This came  
 to the ears of all the inhabitants of  
 Ephesus, Jews as well as Greeks;  
 awe fell on them all, and the name  
 of the Lord Jesus was magnified.

\* The words ἀπὸ ἑβρας πέμπτης ἕως δεκάτης (D, etc.) are probably original.

Many believers would also come to 18  
 confess and disclose their magic  
 spells; and numbers who had prac- 19  
 tised magic arts collected their  
 books and burned them in the  
 presence of all. On adding up the  
 value of them, it was found that  
 they were worth two thousand  
 pounds.

Thus did the word of the Lord 20  
 increase and prevail mightily.

After these events Paul resolved 21  
 in the Spirit to travel through  
 Macedonia and Achaia on his way  
 to Jerusalem. "After I get there,"  
 he said, "I must also visit Rome."  
 So he despatched two of his assis- 22  
 tants to Macedonia, Timotheus and  
 Erastus, while he himself stayed on  
 awhile in Asia. It was about that 23  
 time that a great commotion arose  
 over the Way. This was how it 24  
 happened. By making silver shrines  
 of Artemis a silversmith called  
 Demetrius was the means of bring-  
 ing rich profit to his workmen. So 25  
 he got them together, along with the  
 workmen who belonged to similar  
 trades, and said to them: "My  
 men, you know this trade is the  
 source of our wealth. You also see 26  
 and hear that not only at Ephesus  
 but almost all over Asia this fellow  
 Paul has drawn off a considerable  
 number of people by his persuasions.  
 He declares that hand-made gods  
 are not gods at all. Now the 27  
 danger is not only that we will  
 have our trade discredited but that  
 the temple of the great goddess  
 Artemis will fall into contempt and  
 that she will be degraded from her  
 majestic glory, she whom all Asia  
 and the wide world worship."  
 When they heard this they were 28  
 filled with rage and raised the cry,  
 "Great is Artemis of Ephesus!"  
 So the city was filled with confusion. 29



They rushed like one man into the amphitheatre, dragging along Gaius and Aristarchus, Macedonians who were travelling with Paul.

30 (Paul wanted to enter the popular assembly, but the disciples would  
31 not allow him. Some of the Asiarchs, who were friends of his, also sent to beg him not to venture  
32 into the amphitheatre.) Some were shouting one thing, some another; for the assembly was in confusion, and the majority had no idea why  
33 they had met. Some of the mob concluded it must be Alexander, as the Jews pushed him to the front. So Alexander, motioning with his hand, wanted to defend himself  
34 before the people; but when they discovered he was a Jew, a roar broke from them all, and for about two hours they shouted, "Great is Artemis of Ephesus! Great is  
35 Artemis of Ephesus!" The secretary of state then got the mob calmed down, and said to them, "Men of Ephesus, who on earth does not know that the city of Ephesus is Warden of the temple of the great Artemis and of the  
36 statue that fell from heaven? All this is beyond question. So you should keep calm and do nothing  
37 reckless. Instead of that, you have brought these men here who are guilty neither of sacrilege nor of  
38 blasphemy against our goddess. If Demetrius and his fellow tradesmen have a grievance against anybody, let both parties state their charges; assizes are held and there  
39 are always the proconsuls. Any wider claim must be settled in the legal assembly of the citizens.  
40 Indeed there is a danger of our being charged with riot over to-day's meeting; there is not a single reason we can give for this disorderly

gathering." With these words he 41 dismissed the assembly.

CHAP.

WHEN the tumult had ceased, 20 Paul sent for the disciples and encouraged them; he then took leave of them and went his way to Macedonia. After passing 2 through the districts of Macedonia and encouraging the people at length, he came to Greece, where he 3 spent three months. Just as he was on the point of sailing for Syria, the Jews laid a plot against him. He therefore resolved to return through Macedonia. His company 4 as far as Asia consisted of Sopater of Berea (the son of Pyrrhus), Aristarchus and Secundus from Thessalonica, Gaius of Derbe, Timotheus, and Tychicus and Trophimus from Asia. They went 5 on to wait for us at Troas, while we sailed from Philippi, after the days of unleavened bread, and joined 6 them five days later at Troas. There we spent seven days. On the first 7 day of the week we met for the breaking of bread; Paul addressed them, as he was to leave next day, and he prolonged his address till 8 midnight (there were plenty of lamps in the upper room where we met). In the window sat a young 9 man called Eutychus, and as Paul's address went on and on, he got overcome with drowsiness, went fast asleep, and fell from the third storey. He was picked up a corpse, but Paul went downstairs, threw 10 himself upon him, and embraced him. "Do not lament," he said, "the life is still in him." Then he 11 went upstairs, broke bread, and ate; finally, after conversing awhile with them till the dawn, he went away. As for the lad, they took 12

him away alive, much to their  
 13 relief. Now we had gone on  
 beforehand to the ship and set sail  
 for Assos, intending to take Paul  
 on board there. This was his own  
 arrangement, for he intended to  
 14 travel by land. So when he met  
 us at Assos, we took him on board  
 15 and got to Mitylene. Sailing thence  
 on the following day we arrived  
 off Chios; next day we crossed over  
 to Samos, and [after stopping at  
 Trogyllium] we went on next day  
 16 to Miletus. This was because Paul  
 had decided to sail past Ephesus, to  
 avoid any loss of time in Asia; he  
 wanted to reach Jerusalem, if poss-  
 ible, by the day of Pentecost.  
 17 From Miletus he sent to Ephesus  
 for the presbyters of the church.  
 18 When they came to him, he said,  
 "You know quite well how I lived  
 among you all the time ever since  
 19 I set foot in Asia, how I served  
 the Lord in all humility, with many  
 a tear and many a trial which I en-  
 countered owing to the plots of the  
 20 Jews, how I never shrank from let-  
 ting you know anything for your  
 good, or from teaching you alike in  
 21 public and from house to house, bear-  
 ing my testimony, both to Jews and  
 Greeks, of repentance before God  
 and faith in our Lord Jesus Christ.  
 22 Now here I go to Jerusalem under  
 the binding force of the Spirit.  
 What will befall me there, I do  
 23 not know. Only, I know this, that  
 in town after town the holy Spirit  
 testifies to me that bonds and  
 24 troubles are awaiting me. But  
 then, I set no value on my own  
 life as compared with the joy of  
 finishing my course and fulfilling  
 the commission I received from  
 the Lord Jesus to attest the gospel  
 25 of the grace of God. I know to-  
 day that not one of you will ever

see my face again—not one of  
 you among whom I moved as I  
 preached the Reign. Therefore do 26  
 I protest before you this day that I  
 am not responsible for the blood of  
 any of you; I never shrank from 27  
 letting you know the entire purpose  
 of God. Take heed to yourselves 28  
 and to all the flock of which the  
 holy Spirit has appointed you  
 guardians; shepherd *the church of*  
*the Lord which he has purchased*  
 with his own blood. I know that 29  
 when I am gone, fierce wolves will  
 get in among you, and they will  
 not spare the flock; yes, and men 30  
 of your own number will arise with  
 perversions of the truth to draw  
 the disciples after them. So be on 31  
 the alert, remember how for three  
 whole years I never ceased night  
 and day to watch over each one of  
 you with tears. And now I entrust 32  
 you to God and the word of his  
 grace; he is able to upbuild you  
 and give you your *inheritance among*  
*all the consecrated*. Silver, gold, or 33  
 apparel I never coveted; you know 34  
 yourselves how these hands of mine  
 provided everything for my own  
 needs and for my companions. I 35  
 showed you how this was the way  
 to work hard and succour the needy,  
 remembering the words of the Lord  
 Jesus, who said, 'To give is happier  
 than to get.' With these words he 36  
 knelt down and prayed beside them  
 all. They all broke into loud lament- 37  
 ation and falling upon the neck of  
 Paul kissed him fondly, sorrowing 38  
 chiefly because he told them they  
 would never see his face again.  
 Then they escorted him to the ship.

CHAP.

WHEN we had torn ourselves 21  
 away from them and set sail, we  
 made a straight run to Cos, next



day to Rhodes, and thence to  
 2 Patara; as we found a ship there  
 bound for Phœnicia, we went on  
 3 board and set sail. After sighting  
 Cyprus and leaving it on our left,  
 we sailed for Syria, landing at Tyre,  
 where the ship was to unload her  
 4 cargo. We found out the local  
 disciples and stayed there for seven  
 days. These disciples told Paul by  
 the Spirit not to set foot in Jeru-  
 5 salem; but, when our time was up,  
 we started on our journey, escorted  
 by them, women and children and  
 all, till we got outside the town.  
 Then, kneeling on the beach, we  
 6 prayed and said goodbye to one  
 another. We went on board and  
 7 they went home. By sailing from  
 Tyre to Ptolemais we completed  
 our voyage; we saluted the brothers,  
 8 spent a day with them, and started  
 next morning for Caesarea, where  
 we entered the house of Philip  
 9 the evangelist (he belonged to the  
 Seven, and had four unmarried  
 daughters who prophesied). We  
 10 stayed with him. While we re-  
 mained there for a number of days,  
 a prophet called Agabus came down  
 11 from Judaea. He came to us, took  
 Paul's girdle and bound his own  
 feet and hands, saying, "Here is  
 the word of the holy Spirit: 'So  
 shall the Jews bind the owner of  
 this girdle at Jerusalem and hand  
 12 him over to the Gentiles.'" Now  
 when we heard this, we and the  
 local disciples besought Paul not to  
 13 go up to Jerusalem. Then Paul  
 replied, "What do you mean by  
 weeping and disheartening me? I  
 am ready not only to be bound but  
 also to die at Jerusalem for the  
 14 sake of the Lord Jesus." As he  
 would not be persuaded, we ac-  
 quiesced, saying, "The will of the  
 Lord be done."

After these days we packed up 15  
 and started for Jerusalem, accom- 16  
 panied by some of the disciples  
 from Caesarea, who conducted us to  
 the house of Mnason, a Cypriote,  
 with whom we were to lodge. He  
 was a disciple of old standing.

The brothers welcomed us gladly 17  
 on our arrival at Jerusalem. Next 18  
 day we accompanied Paul to  
 James; all the presbyters were  
 present, and after saluting them 19  
 Paul described in detail what God  
 had done by means of his ministry  
 among the Gentiles. They glorified 20  
 God when they heard it. Then  
 they said to him, "Brother, you  
 see how many thousands of be-  
 lievers there are among the Jews,  
 all of them ardent upholders of the  
 law. Now, they have heard that 21  
 you teach all Jews who live among  
 Gentiles to break away from Moses  
 and not to circumcise their children,  
 nor to follow the old customs.  
 What is to be done? They will 22  
 be sure to hear you have arrived.\*  
 So do as we tell you. We have 23  
 four men here under a vow; asso- 24  
 ciate yourself with them, purify  
 yourself with them, pay their ex-  
 penses so that they may be free to  
 have their heads shaved, and then  
 everybody will understand there is  
 nothing in these stories about you,  
 but that, on the contrary, you are  
 guided by obedience to the Law.  
 As for Gentile believers, we have 25  
 issued our decision that they must  
 avoid food that has been offered  
 to idols, the taste of blood, flesh of  
 animals that have been strangled,  
 and sexual vice." Then Paul 26  
 associated himself with the men  
 next day; he had himself purified  
 along with them and went into

\* Omitting [δεῖ πληθὺς συναλθεῖν] and [γὰρ].

the temple to give notice of the time when *the days of purification* would be completed—the time, that is to say, when the sacrifice could be offered for each one of them.

27 The seven days were almost over when the Asiatic Jews, catching sight of him in the temple, stirred up all the crowd and laid hands on  
28 him, shouting, "To the rescue, men of Israel! Here is the man who teaches everyone everywhere against the People and the Law and this Place! And he has actually brought Greeks inside the temple  
29 and defiled this holy Place!" (They had previously seen Trophimus the Ephesian along with him in the city, and they supposed Paul had taken him inside the temple.)  
30 The whole city was thrown into turmoil. The people rushed together, seized Paul and dragged him outside the temple; whereupon the  
31 doors were immediately shut. They were attempting to kill him, when word reached the commander of the garrison that the whole of Jerusalem  
32 was in confusion. Taking some soldiers and officers, he at once rushed down to them, and when they saw the commander and the soldiers they stopped beating Paul.  
33 Then the commander came up and seized him; he ordered him to be bound with a couple of chains, and asked "Who is he?" and "What  
34 has he done?" Some of the crowd roared one thing, some another, and as he could not learn the facts owing to the uproar, he ordered Paul to be taken to the barracks.  
35 By the time he reached the steps, he had actually to be carried by the soldiers on account of the  
36 violence of the crowd, for the whole mass of the people followed shout-

ing, "Away with him!" Just as 37 he was being taken into the barracks, Paul said to the commander, "May I say a word to you?" "You know Greek!" said the commander. "Then you are not the Egyptian 38 who in days gone by raised the four thousand assassins and led them out into the desert?" Paul said, 39 "I am a Jew, a native of Tarsus in Cilicia, the citizen of a famous town. Pray let me speak to the people." As he gave per- 40 mission, Paul stood on the steps and motioned to the people. A great hush came over them, and he addressed them as follows in Hebrew.

CHAP.

"BROTHERS and fathers, listen 22 to the defence I now make before you." When they heard him 2 addressing them in Hebrew they were all the more quiet. So he went on. "I am a Jew, born at 3 Tarsus in Cilicia, but brought up in this city, educated at the feet of Gamaliel in all the strictness of our ancestral Law, ardent for God as you all are to-day. I persecuted 4 this Way of religion to the death, chaining and imprisoning both men and women, as the high priest and 5 all the council of elders can testify. It was from them that I got letters to the brotherhood at Damascus and then journeyed thither to bind those who had gathered there and bring them back to Jerusalem for punishment. Now as I neared 6 Damascus on my journey, suddenly about noon a brilliant light from heaven flashed round me. I 7 dropped to the earth and heard a voice saying to me, 'Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?' 'Who are 8 you?' I asked. He said to me, 'I



am Jesus the Nazarene, and you are  
 9 persecuting me.' (My companions  
 saw the light, but they did not hear  
 the voice of him who talked to me.)  
 10 I said, 'What am I to do?' And the  
 Lord said to me, 'Get up and make  
 your way into Damascus; there  
 you shall be told about all you are  
 11 destined to do.' As I could not see  
 owing to the dazzling glare of that  
 light, my companions took my hand  
 12 and so I reached Damascus. Then  
 a certain Ananias, a devout man in  
 the Law, who had a good reputation  
 among all the Jewish inhabitants,  
 13 came to me and standing beside me  
 said, 'Saul, my brother, regain  
 your sight!' The same moment  
 I regained my sight and looked up  
 14 at him. Then he said, 'The God  
 of our fathers has appointed you to  
 know his will, to see the Just One,  
 and to hear him speak with his own  
 15 lips. For you are to be a witness  
 for him before all men, a witness  
 of what you have seen and heard.  
 16 And now, why do you wait? Get  
 up and be baptized and wash away  
 your sins, invoking his name.'  
 17 When I returned to Jerusalem, it  
 happened that while I was praying  
 in the temple I fell into a trance  
 18 and saw Him saying to me, 'Make  
 haste, leave Jerusalem quickly, for  
 they will not accept your evidence  
 19 about me.' 'But, Lord,' I said,  
 'they surely know it was I who  
 imprisoned and flogged those who  
 believed in you throughout the  
 synagogues, and that I stood and  
 20 approved when the blood of your  
 martyr Stephen was being shed,  
 taking charge of the clothes of his  
 21 murderers!' But he said to me,  
 'Go; I will send you afar to the  
 22 Gentiles——' Till he said that,  
 they had listened to him. But at  
 that they shouted, "Away with

such a creature from the earth!  
 He is not fit to live!" They yelled 23  
 and threw their clothes into the air  
 and flung dust about, till the com- 24  
 mander ordered him to be taken  
 inside the barracks and examined  
 under the lash, so as to find out why  
 the people shouted at him in this  
 way. They had strapped him up, 25  
 when Paul said to the officer who  
 was standing by, "Are you allowed  
 to scourge a Roman citizen—and  
 to scourge him without a trial?"  
 When the officer heard this, he went 26  
 to the commander and said to him,  
 "What are you going to do? This  
 man is a Roman citizen." So the 27  
 commander went to him and said,  
 "Tell me, are you a Roman  
 citizen?" "Yes," he said. The 28  
 commander replied, "I had to pay  
 a large sum for this citizenship."  
 "But I was born a citizen," said  
 Paul. Then those who were to have 29  
 examined him left him at once  
 alone; even the commander was  
 alarmed to find that Paul was a  
 Roman citizen and that he had  
 bound him.

Next day, as he was anxious to 30  
 find out the real reason why the  
 Jews accused him, he unbound him,  
 ordered the high priests and all the  
 Sanhedrin to meet, and brought  
 Paul down, placing him in front of  
 them. With a steady look at the 23  
 Sanhedrin Paul said, "Brothers, I  
 have lived with a perfectly good  
 conscience before God down to  
 the present day." Then the high 2  
 priest Ananias ordered those who  
 were standing next Paul to strike  
 him on the mouth. At this Paul 3  
 said to him, "You whitewashed  
 wall, God will strike you! You  
 sit there to judge me by the Law,  
 do you? And you break the Law  
 by ordering me to be struck!" The 4

bystanders said, "What! would you  
 5 rail at God's high priest?" "Brothers," said Paul, "I did not know he was high priest" (for it is written, *You must not speak evil of any ruler*  
 6 *of your people*). Then, finding half the Sanhedrin were Sadducees and the other half Pharisees, Paul shouted to them, "I am a Pharisee, brothers, the son of Pharisees! It is for the hope of the resurrection from the dead that I am on trial!"  
 7 When he said this, a quarrel broke out between the Pharisees and the Sadducees; the meeting was  
 8 divided. For while the Sadducees declare there is no such thing as resurrection, angels, or spirits, the  
 9 Pharisees affirm them all. Thus a loud clamour broke out. Some of the scribes who belonged to the Pharisaic party got up and contended, "We find nothing wrong about this man. What if some spirit or angel has spoken to him?"  
 10 The quarrel then became so violent that the commander was afraid they would tear Paul in pieces; he therefore ordered the troops to march down and take him from them by force, bringing him inside the  
 11 barracks. On the following night the Lord stood by Paul and said, "Courage! As you have testified to me at Jerusalem, so you must testify at Rome."  
 12 When day broke, the Jews formed a conspiracy, taking a solemn oath neither to eat nor to drink till  
 13 they had killed Paul. There were more than forty of them in this  
 14 plot. They then went to the high priests and elders, saying, "We have taken a solemn oath to taste no food till we have killed  
 15 Paul. Now you and the Sanhedrin must inform the commander that you propose to investigate this case

in detail, so that he may have Paul brought down to you. We will be all ready to kill him on the way down." Now Paul's nephew 16 heard about their treacherous ambush; so he got admission to the barracks and told Paul. Paul 17 summoned one of the officers and said, "Take this young man to the commander, for he has some news to give him." So the officer took 18 him to the commander, saying, "The prisoner Paul has summoned me to ask if I would bring this young man to you, as he has something to tell you." The commander 19 then took him by the hand aside and asked him in private, "What is the news you have for me?" He answered, "The Jews have 20 agreed to ask you to bring Paul down to-morrow to the Sanhedrin, on the plea that they\* propose to examine his case in detail. Now 21 do not let them persuade you. More than forty of them are lying in ambush for him, and they have taken a solemn oath neither to eat nor to drink till they have murdered him. They are all ready at this moment, awaiting your consent." Then the commander dismissed the 22 youth, bidding him "Tell nobody that you have informed me of this." He summoned two of the officers 23 and said, "Get ready by nine o'clock to-night two hundred infantry to march as far as Caesarea, also seventy troopers, and two hundred spearmen." Horses were also to be 24 provided, on which they were to mount Paul and carry him safe to Felix the governor. He then wrote 25 a letter in the following terms.

\* Reading either μέλλοντες with the Latin, Syriac, Sahidic, and Ethiopic versions, or μελλόντων (N<sup>c</sup>, Chrysostom, and some minuscules).



26 "Claudius Lysias, to his excellency  
 27 the governor Felix: greeting. This man had been seized by the Jews and was on the point of being murdered by them, when I came on them with the troops and rescued him, as I had ascertained that he  
 28 was a Roman citizen. Anxious to find out why they accused him, I took him down to their Sanhedrin,  
 29 where I found he was accused of matters relating to their Law but not impeached for any crime that deserved death or imprisonment.  
 30 I am informed a plot is to be laid against him, so I am sending him to you at once,\* telling his accusers that they must impeach him before  
 31 you. Farewell." The soldiers, according to their instructions, took Paul and brought him by  
 32 night to Antipatris. Next day the infantry returned to their barracks, leaving the troopers to ride on with him. They reached Caesarea, presented the letter to the governor, and also handed Paul  
 34 over to him. On reading the letter he asked what province he belonged to, and finding it was  
 35 Cilicia he said, "I will go into your case whenever your accusers arrive," giving orders that he was to be kept in the praetorium of Herod.

CHAP.

24 FIVE days later down came the high priest Ananias with some elders and a barrister called Tertullus. They laid information before the governor against Paul.  
 2 So Paul was summoned, and then Tertullus proceeded to accuse him. "Your excellency," he said to Felix, "as it is owing to you that

we enjoy unbroken peace, and as it is owing to your wise care that the state of this nation has been improved in every way and everywhere, we acknowledge all this with  
 3 profound gratitude. I have no wish  
 4 to weary you, but I beg of you to grant us in your courtesy a brief hearing. The fact is, we have  
 5 found this man is a perfect pest; he stirs up sedition among the Jews all over the world and he is a ringleader of the Nazarene sect. He actually tried to desecrate the  
 6 temple, but we got hold of him. Examine him for yourself and you  
 8 will be able to find out about all these charges of ours against him." The Jews joined in the attack,  
 9 declaring that such were the facts of the case. Then at a nod from  
 10 the governor Paul made his reply. "As I know you have administered justice in this nation for a number of years," he said, "I feel encouraged to make my defence, because  
 11 it is not more than twelve days, as you can easily ascertain, since I went up to worship at Jerusalem. They  
 12 never found me arguing with anyone in the temple or causing a riot either in the synagogues or in the city; they cannot furnish you with  
 13 any proof of their present charges against me. I certainly admit to  
 14 you that I worship our fathers' God according to the methods of what they call a 'sect'; but I believe all that is written in the Law and in the prophets, and I cherish  
 15 the same hope in God as they accept, namely that there is to be a resurrection of the just and the unjust. Hence I too endeavour  
 16 to have a clear conscience before God and men all the time. After  
 17 a lapse of several years I came up with alms and offerings for my

\* Reading ἐξ αὐτῆς instead of ἐξ αὐτῶν.

18 nation,\* and it was in presenting these that I was found within the temple. I was ceremonially pure, I was not mixed up in any mob or riot; no, the trouble was caused  
 19 by some Jews from Asia, who ought to have been here before you with any charge they may  
 20 have against me. Failing them, let these men yonder tell what fault they found with my appearance before the Sanhedrin!—unless  
 21 it was with the single sentence I uttered, when I stood and said, ‘It is for the resurrection of the dead that I am on my trial to-day  
 22 before you.’” As Felix had a pretty accurate knowledge of the Way, he remanded Paul, telling the Jews, “When Lysias the commander comes down, I will decide  
 23 your case.” He gave orders to the officer to have Paul kept in custody but to allow him some freedom and not to prevent any of his own people from rendering him any service.  
 24 Some days later Felix arrived with his wife Drusilla, who was a Jewess. He sent for Paul and heard what he had to say about  
 25 faith in Christ Jesus; but when he argued about morality, self-mastery, and the future judgment, Felix grew uneasy. “You may go for the present,” he said; “when I can find a moment, I will send for  
 26 you” (though at the same time he hoped Paul would give him a bribe). So he did send for him pretty frequently and conversed  
 27 with him. But when two years

had elapsed, Felix was succeeded by Porcius Festus, and as Felix wanted to ingratiate himself with the Jews, he left Paul still in custody.

CHAP.

THREE days after Festus entered 25  
 his province, he went up from Caesarea to Jerusalem. The high 2  
 priests and the Jewish leaders laid information before him against Paul, and begged him, as a special 3  
 favour, to send for him to Jerusalem, meaning to lay an ambush for him and murder him on the road. Festus replied that Paul 4  
 would be kept in custody at Caesarea, but that he himself meant to leave for Caesarea before long—  
 “when,” he added, “your competent 5  
 authorities can come down with me and charge the man with whatever crime he has committed.” After staying not more than eight or 6  
 ten days with them, he went down to Caesarea. Next day he took his seat on the tribunal and ordered Paul to be brought before him. When he arrived, the Jews who 7  
 had come down from Jerusalem surrounded him and brought a number of serious charges against him, none of which they were able to prove. Paul’s defence was, “I 8  
 have committed no offence against the Law of the Jews, against the temple, or against Caesar.” As 9  
 Festus wanted to ingratiate himself with the Jews, he asked Paul, “Will you go up to Jerusalem and be tried there by me upon these charges?” Paul said, “I am 10  
 standing before Caesar’s tribunal; that is where I ought to be tried. I have done no wrong whatever to the Jews—you know that perfectly well. If I am a criminal, if I have 11

\* It is hardly possible to make sense of the following Greek text, and none of the various readings or of the emendations that have been proposed is entirely satisfactory. All one can do is to reproduce the general drift of the passage.



## THE ACTS XXVI

done anything that deserves death, I do not object to die; but if there is nothing in any of their charges against me, then no one can give me up to them. I appeal to  
 12 Caesar!" Then, after conferring with the council, Festus answered, "You have appealed to Caesar? Very well, you must go to Caesar!"  
 13 Some days had passed, when king Agrippa and Bernice came to Caesarea to pay their respects to  
 14 Festus. As they were spending several days there, Festus laid Paul's case before the king. "There is a man," he said, "who was left  
 15 in prison by Felix. When I was at Jerusalem, the high priests and elders of the Jews informed me about him and demanded his con-  
 16 demnation. I told them Romans were not in the habit of giving up  
 any man until the accused met the accusers face to face and had a chance of defending himself against  
 17 the impeachment. Well, the day after they came here along with me, I took my seat on the tribunal  
 without any loss of time. I ordered  
 18 the man to be brought in, but when his accusers stood up they did not charge him with any of the crimes  
 19 that I had expected. The questions at issue referred to their own religion, and to a certain Jesus who had  
 20 died. Paul said he was alive. As I felt at a loss about the method of inquiry into such topics, I asked  
 if he would go to Jerusalem and be tried there on these charges.  
 21 But Paul entered an appeal for his case to be reserved for the decision of the emperor; so I ordered  
 him to be detained till I could remit  
 22 him to Caesar." "I should like to hear the man myself," said Agrippa to Festus. "You shall hear him to-morrow," said Festus.

So next day Agrippa and Bernice 23  
 proceeded with great pomp to the hall of audience, accompanied by the military commanders and the prominent civilians of the town. Festus then ordered Paul to be brought in. "King Agrippa and 24  
 all here present," said Festus, "you see before you a man of whom the entire body of the Jews at Jerusalem and also here have complained to me. They loudly insist he ought  
 not to live any longer. I could not 25  
 find he had done anything that deserved death, so I decided to send him, on his own appeal, to the emperor. Only, I have nothing 26  
 definite to write to the sovereign about him. So I have brought him up before you all, and especially  
 before you, O king Agrippa, in order that I may have something to write as the result of your cross-  
 examination. For it seems absurd 27  
 to me to forward a prisoner without notifying the particulars of his charge." Then Agrippa said to 26  
 Paul, "You have our permission to speak upon your own behalf." At this Paul stretched out his hand  
 and began his defence. "I consider 2  
 myself fortunate, king Agrippa, in being able to defend myself to-day  
 before you against all that the Jews charge me with; for you are well 3  
 acquainted with all Jewish customs and questions. Pray listen to me  
 then with patience. How I lived 4  
 from my youth up among my own nation and at Jerusalem, all that  
 early career of mine, is known to all the Jews. They know me of old. 5  
 They know, if they chose to admit it, that as a Pharisee I lived by the  
 principles of the strictest party in our religion. To-day I am standing 6  
 my trial for hoping in the promise made by God to our fathers, a 7

promise which our twelve tribes hope to gain by serving God earnestly both night and day. And I am actually impeached by Jews for  
 9 this hope, O king! I once believed it my duty indeed actively to oppose the name of Jesus the  
 10 Nazarene. I did so in Jerusalem. I shut up many of the saints in prison, armed with authority from the high priests; when they were put to death, I voted against them;  
 11 there was not a synagogue where I did not often punish them and force them to blaspheme; and in my frantic fury I persecuted them  
 12 even to foreign towns. I was travelling to Damascus on this business, with authority and a commission from the high priests,  
 13 when at mid-day on the road, O king, I saw a light from heaven, more dazzling than the sun, flash round me and my fellow-travellers.  
 14 We all fell to the ground, and I heard a voice saying to me in Hebrew, 'Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me? You hurt yourself  
 15 by kicking at the goad.' 'Who are you?' I asked. And the Lord said, 'I am Jesus, and you are  
 16 persecuting me. Now get up and *stand on your feet*, for I have appeared to you in order to appoint you to my service as a witness to what you have seen and to the  
 17 visions you shall have of me. *I will rescue you from the People and also from the Gentiles—to whom I*  
 18 *send you, that their eyes may be opened* and that they may turn *from darkness to light*, from the power of Satan to God, to get remission of their sins and an inheritance among those who are  
 19 consecrated by faith in me.' Upon this, O king Agrippa, I did not  
 20 disobey the heavenly vision; I

announced to those at Damascus and at Jerusalem in the first instance, then all over the land of Judaea, and also to the Gentiles, that they were to repent and turn to God by acting up to their repentance. This is why the Jews seized 21 me in the temple and tried to assassinate me. To this day I have had 22 the help of God in standing, as I now do, to testify alike to low and high, never uttering a single syllable beyond what the prophets and Moses predicted was to take place. Why should you consider it in- 8 credible that God raises the dead,\* that the Christ is capable of suffer- 23 ing, and that he should be the first to rise from the dead and bring the message of light to the People and to the Gentiles?" When he 24 brought this forward in his defence, Festus called out, "Paul, you are quite mad! Your great learning is driving you insane." "Your 25 excellency," said Paul to Festus, "I am not mad, I am speaking the sober truth. Why, the king 26 is well aware of this! To the king I can speak without the slightest hesitation. I do not believe any of it has escaped his notice, for this was not done in a corner. King Agrippa, you 27 believe the prophets? I know you do." "At this rate," Agrippa re- 28 marked, "it won't be long before you believe you have made a Christian of me!" "Long or 29 short," said Paul, "I would to God that not only you but all my hearers to-day could be what I am—barring these chains!" Then the king rose, with the gover- 30 nor and Bernice and those who had been seated beside them. They 31

\* Restoring *ver.* 8 to its original position at the beginning of *ver.* 23.



retired to discuss the affair, and agreed that "this man has done nothing to deserve death or imprisonment." "He might have been released," said Agrippa to Festus, "if he had not appealed to Caesar."

CHAP.

27 WHEN it was decided we were to sail for Italy, Paul and some other prisoners were handed over to an officer of the Imperial regiment 2 called Julius. Embarking in an Andramyttian ship which was bound for the Asiatic seaports, we set sail, accompanied by a Macedonian from Thessalonica called 3 Aristarchus. Next day we put in at Sidon, where Julius very kindly allowed Paul to visit his friends and 4 be looked after. Putting to sea from there, we had to sail under the lee of Cyprus, as the wind was 5 against us; then, sailing over the Cilician and Pamphylian waters, 6 we came to Myra in Lycia. There the officer found an Alexandrian ship bound for Italy, and put us on 7 board of her. For a number of days we made a slow passage and had great difficulty in arriving off Cnidus; then, as the wind checked our progress, we sailed under the 8 lee of Crete off Cape Salmonê, and coasting along it with great difficulty we reached a place called Fair Havens, not far from the town of 9 Lasea. By this time it was far on in the season and sailing had become dangerous (for the autumn Fast was past), so Paul warned them thus: 10 "Men," said he, "I see this voyage is going to be attended with hardship and serious loss not only to the cargo and the ship but also to 11 our own lives." However the officer let himself be persuaded

by the captain and the owner rather than by anything Paul could say, and, as the harbour was badly 12 placed for wintering in, the majority proposed to set sail and try if they could reach Phœnix and winter there (Phœnix is a Cretan harbour facing S.W. and N.W.). When a 13 moderate southerly breeze sprang up, they thought they had secured their object, and after weighing anchor they sailed along the coast of Crete, close inshore. Presently 14 down rushed a hurricane of a wind called Euroclydon; the ship was 15 caught and unable to face the wind, so we gave up and let her drive along. Running under the lee of 16 a small island called Claudia, we managed with great difficulty to get the boat hauled in; once it was 17 hoisted aboard, they used ropes\* to undergird the ship, and in fear of being stranded on the Syrtis they lowered the sail and lay to. As 18 we were being terribly battered by the storm, they had to jettison the cargo next day, while two days 19 later they threw the ship's gear overboard with their own hands; for many days neither sun nor stars 20 could be seen, the storm raged heavily, and at last we had to give up all hope of being saved. When 21 they had gone without food for a long time, Paul stood up among them and said, "Men, you should have listened to me and spared yourselves this hardship and loss by refusing to set sail from Crete. I now bid you cheer up. There 22 will be no loss of life, only of the ship. For last night an angel of 23 the God I belong to and serve, stood before me, saying, 'Have no 24

\* Naber's conjecture *βοηθῆσαι* for the *βοηθῆσαι* of the MSS. yields this excellent sense.

fear, Paul; you must stand before Caesar. And God has granted you the lives of all your fellow-voyagers.' Cheer up, men! I believe God, I believe it will turn out just as I have been told. However, we are to be stranded on an island."

25 When the fourteenth night arrived, we were drifting about in the sea of Adria, when the sailors about midnight suspected land was near. On taking soundings they found twenty fathoms, and a little further on, when they sounded again, they found fifteen. Then, afraid of being stranded on the rocks, they let go four anchors from the stern and longed for daylight. The sailors tried to escape from the ship. They had even lowered the boat into the sea, pretending they were going to lay out anchors from the bow, when Paul said to the officer and the soldiers, "You cannot be saved unless these men stay by the ship." Then the soldiers cut away the ropes of the boat and let her fall off. Just before daybreak Paul begged them all to take some food. "For fourteen days," he said, "you have been on the watch all the time, without a proper meal. Take some food then, I beg of you; it will keep you alive. You are going to be saved! Not a hair of your heads will perish."

35 With these words he took a loaf and after thanking God, in presence of them all, broke it and began to eat. Then they all cheered up and took food for themselves (there were about\* seventy-six souls of us on board, all told); and when they had eaten their fill, they lightened the

ship by throwing the wheat into the sea. When day broke, they could not recognize what land it was; however, they noticed a creek with a sandy beach, and resolved to see if they could run the ship ashore there. So the anchors were cut away and left in the sea, while the crew unlashed the ropes that tied the rudders, hoisted the foresail to the breeze, and headed for the beach. Striking a reef, they drove the ship aground; the prow jammed fast, but the stern began to break up under the beating of the waves. Now the soldiers resolved to kill the prisoners, in case any of them swam off and escaped; but as the officer wanted to save Paul, he put a stop to their plan, ordering those who could swim to jump overboard first and get to land, while the rest were to manage with planks or pieces of wreckage. In this way it turned out that the whole company got safe to land.

CHAP.

It was only after our escape that we found out the island was called Malta. The natives showed us uncommon kindness, for they lit a fire and welcomed us all to it, as the rain had come on and it was chilly. Now Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks and laid them on the fire, when a viper crawled out with the heat and fastened on his hand. When the natives saw the creature hanging from his hand, they said to each other, "This man must be a murderer! He has escaped the sea, but Justice will not let him live." However, he shook off the creature into the fire and was not a whit the worse. The natives waited for him to swell up or drop

\* Reading ὡς (B and Sahidic version) for διακόσμαι.



down dead in a moment, but after waiting a long while and observing that no harm had befallen him, they changed their minds and declared he was a god.

- 7 There was an estate in the neighbourhood which belonged to a man called Publius, the governor of the island; he welcomed us and entertained us hospitably for three days.
- 8 His father, it so happened, was laid up with fever and dysentery, but Paul went in to see him and after prayer laid his hands on him and
- 9 cured him. When this had happened, the rest of the sick folk in the island also came and got cured;
- 10 they made us rich presents and furnished us, when we set sail, with all we needed.
- 11 We set sail, after three months, in an Alexandrian ship, with the Dioscouri on her figure-head, which
- 12 had wintered at the island. We put in at Syracuse and stayed for
- 13 three days. Then tacking round we reached Rhegium; next day a south wind sprang up which brought us in a day to Puteoli,
- 14 where we came across some of the brotherhood, who invited us to stay a week with them.

- 15 In this way we reached Rome. As the local brothers had heard about us, they came out to meet us as far as Appii Forum and Tres Tabernae, and when Paul saw them he thanked God and took courage.
- 16 When we did reach Rome, Paul got permission\* to live by himself,
- 17 with a soldier to guard him. Three days later, he called the leading Jews together, and when they met he said to them, "Brothers, although I have done nothing against the People or our ancestral customs,

\* Omitting [ὁ ἐκατόνταρχος παρέδωκεν τοὺς δεσμίους τῷ στρατοπεδάρχῃ] and [δὲ].

I was handed over to the Romans as a prisoner from Jerusalem. They meant to release me after 18 examination, as I was innocent of any crime that deserved death. But the Jews objected, and so I 19 was obliged to appeal to Caesar—not that I had any charge to bring against my own nation. This is 20 my reason for asking to see you and have a word with you. I am wearing this chain because I share Israel's hope." They replied, "We 21 have had no letters about you from Judaea, and no brother has come here with any bad report or story about you. We think it 22 only right to let you tell your own story; but as regards this sect, we are well aware that there are objections to it on all hands." So 23 they fixed a day and came to him at his quarters in large numbers. From morning to evening he explained the Reign of God to them + from personal testimony, and tried to convince them about Jesus from the law of Moses and the prophets. Some were convinced by what he 24 said, but the others would not believe. As they could not agree 25 among themselves, they were turning to go away, when Paul added this one word: "It was an apt word that the holy Spirit spoke by the prophet Isaiah to your fathers, when he said, 26

*Go and tell this people,*

*'You will hear and hear but never understand,  
you will see and see but never perceive.'*

*For the heart of this people is 27 obtuse,*

*their ears are heavy of hearing,  
their eyes they have closed,  
lest they see with their eyes and hear with their ears,*

## THE ACTS XXVIII

*lest they understand with their heart and turn again, and I cure them.*

28 Be sure of this, then, that this *salvation of God* has been sent to the *Gentiles*; they will listen to it."

For two full years he remained in 30 his private lodging, welcoming anyone who came to visit him; he 31 preached the Reign of God and taught about the Lord Jesus Christ quite openly and unmolested.



# THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE ROMANS

CHAP.

1 PAUL, a servant of Jesus Christ,  
called to be an apostle, set apart  
2 for the gospel of God (which he  
promised of old by his prophets  
3 in the holy scriptures) concerning  
his Son, who was born of David's  
4 offspring by natural descent and  
installed as Son of God with power  
by the Spirit of holiness when he  
was raised from the dead—con-  
cerning Jesus Christ our Lord,  
5 through whom I have received the  
favour of my commission to pro-  
mote obedience to the faith for  
his sake among all the Gentiles,  
6 including yourselves who are called  
7 to belong to Jesus Christ: to all  
in Rome who are beloved by God,  
called to be saints, grace and peace  
to you from God our Father and  
the Lord Jesus Christ.  
8 First of all, I thank my God  
through Jesus Christ for you all,  
because the report of your faith  
9 is over all the world. God is my  
witness, the God whom I serve  
with my spirit in the gospel of his  
10 Son, how unceasingly I always  
mention you in my prayers, asking  
if I may at last be sped upon my  
11 way to you by God's will. For I  
do yearn to see you, that I may  
impart to you some spiritual gift  
12 for your strengthening—or, in other  
words, that I may be encouraged  
by meeting you, I by your faith  
13 and you by mine. Brothers, I  
would like you to understand that I  
have often purposed to come to you  
(though up till now I have been

prevented) so as to have some re-  
sults among you as well as among  
the rest of the Gentiles. To Greeks 14  
and to barbarians, to wise and to  
foolish alike, I owe a duty. Hence 15  
my eagerness to preach the gospel  
to you in Rome as well. For I am 16  
proud of the gospel; it is God's  
saving power for everyone who has  
faith, for the Jew first and for the  
Greek as well. God's righteousness 17  
is revealed in it by faith and for  
faith—as it is written, *Now by faith*  
*shall the righteous live.* But God's 18  
anger is revealed from heaven  
against all the impiety and wicked-  
ness of those who hinder the Truth  
by their wickedness. For what- 19  
ever is to be known of God is  
plain to them; God himself has  
made it plain—for ever since the 20  
world was created, his invisible  
nature, his everlasting power and  
divine being, have been quite per-  
ceptible in what he has made.  
So they have no excuse. Though 21  
they knew God, they have not  
glorified him as God nor given  
thanks to him; they have turned  
to futile speculations till their  
ignorant minds grew dark. They 22  
claimed to be wise, but they have  
become fools; they have *exchanged* 23  
*the glory of the immortal God for*  
*the semblance of the likeness of*  
mortal man, of birds, of quad-  
rupeds, and of reptiles. So God 24  
has given them up, in their heart's  
lust, to sexual vice, to the dis-  
honouring of their own bodies,—

25 since they have exchanged the truth of God for an untruth, worshipping and serving the creature rather than the Creator who is  
 26 blessed for ever: Amen. That is why God has given them up to vile passions; their women have exchanged the natural function of  
 27 sex for what is unnatural, and in the same way the males have abandoned the natural use of women and flamed out in lust for one another, men perpetrating shameless acts with their own sex and getting in their own persons the due recompense of their perversity.  
 28 Yes, as they disdained to acknowledge God any longer, God has given them up to a reprobate instinct for the perpetration of what is improper,  
 29 till they are filled with all manner of wickedness, depravity, lust, and viciousness, filled to the brim with envy, murder, quarrels, intrigues, and malignity—slanderers, defamers, loathed by God, outrageous, haughty, boastful, inventive in evil, disobedient to parents,  
 31 devoid of conscience, false to their  
 32 word, callous, merciless; though they know God's decree that people who practise such vice deserve death, they not only do it themselves but applaud those who practise it.

CHAP.

2 THEREFORE you are inexcusable, whoever you are, if you pose as a judge, for in judging another you condemn yourself; you, the judge, do the very same things yourself.  
 2 'We know the doom of God falls justly upon those who practise such  
 3 vices.' Very well; and do you imagine you will escape God's doom, O man, you who judge those who practise such vices and do the same

yourself? Or are you slighting all his wealth of kindness, forbearance, and patience? Do you not know his kindness is meant to make you repent? In your stubbornness and impenitence of heart you are simply storing up anger for yourself on the Day of anger, when the just doom of God is revealed. For he will render to everyone according to what he has done, eternal life to those who by patiently doing good aim at glory, honour, and immortality, but anger and wrath to those who are wilful, who disobey the Truth and obey wickedness—anguish and calamity for every human soul that perpetrates evil, for the Jew first and for the Greek as well, but glory, honour, and peace for everyone who does good, for the Jew first and for the Greek as well. There is no partiality about God.

All who sin outside the Law will perish outside the Law, and all who sin under the Law will be condemned by the Law. For it is not the hearers of the Law who are just in the eyes of God, it is those who obey the Law who will be acquitted, on the day when God judges the secret things of men, as my gospel holds, by Jesus Christ. (When Gentiles who have no law obey instinctively the Law's requirements, they are a law to themselves, even though they have no law; they exhibit the effect of the Law written on their hearts, their conscience bears them witness, as their moral convictions accuse or it may be defend them.)\*

\* Ver. 16 is the sequel to the first clause of ver. 14. The rest of ver. 14 and the whole of ver. 15 form a short paragraph which is either a marginal note or an awkward insertion. To preserve the sequence of thought I have re-arranged the verses as above.



17 If you bear the name of 'Jew,'  
 18 relying on the Law, priding your-  
 self on God, understanding his  
 will, and with a sense of what is  
 vital in religion; if you are in-  
 19 structed by the Law and are per-  
 suaded you are a guide to the  
 blind, a light to darkened souls,  
 20 a tutor for the foolish, a teacher  
 of the simple, because in the Law  
 you have the embodiment of know-  
 21 ledge and truth—well then, do  
 you ever teach yourself, you teacher  
 of other people? You preach  
 against stealing; do you steal?  
 22 You forbid adultery; do you com-  
 mit adultery? You detest idols;  
 23 do you rob temples? You pride  
 yourself on the Law; do you dish-  
 honour God by your breaches of the  
 24 Law? Why, it is *owing to you that*  
*the name of God is maligned among*  
 25 *the Gentiles*, as scripture says! Cir-  
 cumcision is certainly of use, pro-  
 vided you keep the Law; but if  
 you are a breaker of the Law, then  
 your circumcision is turned into  
 26 uncircumcision. (If then the uncir-  
 cumcised observe the requirements  
 of the Law, shall not their uncir-  
 cumcision be reckoned equivalent  
 27 to circumcision? And shall not  
 those who are physically uncircum-  
 cised and who fulfil the Law, judge  
 you who are a breaker of the Law  
 for all your written code and cir-  
 cumcision?)  
 28 He is no Jew who is merely a Jew  
 outwardly,  
 nor is circumcision something  
 outward in the flesh;  
 29 he is a Jew who is one inwardly,  
 and circumcision is a matter  
 of the heart, spiritual not  
 literal—  
 praised by God, not by man.

THEN what is the Jew's superi- 3  
 ority? What is the good of cir-  
 cumcision? Much in every way. 2  
 This to begin with—Jews were en-  
 trusted with the scriptures of God.  
 Even supposing some of them have 3  
 proved untrustworthy, is their  
 faithlessness to cancel the faith-  
 fulness of God? Never! Let God 4  
 be true to his word, though *every*  
*man be perfidious*—as it is written,  
*That thou mayest be vindicated in*  
*thy pleadings,*  
*and triumph in thy trial.*  
 But if our iniquity thus serves 5  
 to bring out the justice of God,  
 what are we to infer? That it is  
 unfair of God to inflict his anger on  
 us? (I speak in a merely human  
 way.) Never! In that case, how 6  
 could he judge the world? You 7  
 say, "If my perfidy serves to make  
 the truthfulness of God redound  
 to his glory, why am I to be judged  
 as a sinner? Why should we not 8  
 do evil that good may come out of  
 it?" (which is the calumny attri-  
 buted to me—the very thing some  
 people declare I say). Such argu-  
 ments are rightly condemned.  
 Well now, are we Jews in a better 9  
 position? Not at all. I have  
 already charged all, Jews as well as 10  
 Greeks, with being under sin—as it  
 is written,  
*None is righteous, no, not one ;*  
*no one understands, no one 11*  
*seeks for God.*  
*All have swerved, one and all have 12*  
*gone wrong,*  
*no one does good, not a single one.*  
*Their throat is an open grave, 13*  
*they are treacherous with their*  
*tongues,*  
*the venom of an asp lies under*  
*their lips.*  
*Their mouth is full of cursing and 14*  
*bitterness.*

15 *their feet are swift for bloodshed,*  
 16 *their ways bring destruction and*  
*calamity,*  
 17 *they know nothing of the way of*  
*peace;*

18 *there is no reverence for God*  
*before their eyes.*

19 Whatever the Law says, we  
 know, it says to those who are  
 inside the Law, that every mouth  
 may be shut and all the world  
 20 made answerable to God; for *no*  
*person will be acquitted in his sight*  
 on the score of obedience to law.

What the Law imparts is the con-  
 21 sciousness of sin. But now we have  
 a righteousness of God disclosed  
 apart from law altogether; it is  
 attested by the Law and the

22 prophets, but it is a righteous-  
 ness of God which comes by be-  
 lieving in Jesus Christ. And it is  
 meant for all who have faith. No

23 distinctions are drawn. All have  
 sinned, all come short of the glory

24 of God, but they are justified for  
 nothing by his grace through the  
 ransom provided in Christ Jesus,

25 whom God put forward as the  
 means of propitiation by his blood,  
 to be received by faith. This was  
 to demonstrate the justice of God  
 in view of the fact that sins pre-  
 viously committed during the  
 time of God's forbearance had

26 been passed over; it was to  
 demonstrate his justice at the  
 present epoch, showing that God  
 is just himself and that he justi-  
 fies man on the score of faith in  
 Jesus.

27 Then what becomes of our boast-  
 ing? It is ruled out absolutely.  
 On what principle? On the prin-  
 ciple of doing deeds? No, on the

28 principle of faith. We hold a man  
 is justified by faith apart from  
 29 deeds of the Law altogether. Or

is God only the God of Jews? Is  
 he not the God of the Gentiles as  
 well? Surely he is. Well then, 30  
 there is one God, a God who will  
 justify the circumcised as they be-  
 lieve and the uncircumcised on the  
 score of faith. Then 'by this 31  
 faith' we 'cancel the Law'? Not  
 for one moment! We uphold the  
 Law.

CHAP.

BUT if so, what can we say 4  
 about Abraham,\* our forefather  
 by natural descent? This, that 2  
 if 'Abraham was justified on the  
 score of what he did,' he has some-  
 thing to be proud of. But not to  
 be proud of before God. For what 3  
 does scripture say? *Abraham be-*  
*lieved God and this was counted*  
*to him as righteousness.* Now a 4  
 worker has his wage counted to  
 him as a due, not as a favour; but 5  
 a man who instead of 'working'  
 believes in Him who justifies the  
 ungodly, has his faith counted as  
 righteousness. Just as David him- 6  
 self describes the bliss of the man  
 who has righteousness counted to  
 him by God apart from what he  
 does—

*Blessed are they whose breaches of* 7  
*the Law are forgiven,*  
*whose sins are covered!*

*Blessed is the man whose sin the* 8  
*Lord will not count to him.*

Now is that description of bliss 9  
 meant for the circumcised, or for  
 the uncircumcised as well? *Abra-*  
*ham's faith,* I repeat, *was counted*  
*to him as righteousness.* In what 10  
 way? When he was a circum-  
 cised man or an uncircumcised  
 man? Not when he was circum-  
 cised, but when he was uncircum-

\* Omitting, with B, 1908\* and Origen,  
 ἐυθύνεσθαι.



11 cised. He only got circumcision  
as a sign or seal of the righteousness which belonged to his faith as an uncircumcised man. The object of this was to make him the father of all who believe as uncircumcised persons and thus have righteousness counted to them,  
12 as well as a father of those circumcised persons who not only share circumcision but walk in the steps of the faith which our father Abraham had as an uncircumcised man.  
13 The promise made to Abraham and his offspring that he should inherit the world, did not reach him through the Law, but through  
14 the righteousness of faith. For if it is adherents of the Law who are heirs, then faith is empty of all meaning and the promise is void.  
15 (What the Law produces is the Wrath, not the promise of God; where there is no law, there is no  
16 transgression either.) That is why all turns upon faith; it is to make the promise a matter of favour, to make it secure for all the offspring, not simply for those who are adherents of the Law but also for those who share the faith of Abraham—of Abraham who is the  
17 father of us all (as it is written, *I have made you a father of many nations*). Such a faith implies the presence of the God in whom he believed, a God who makes the dead live and calls into being what  
18 does not exist. For Abraham, when hope was gone, hoped on in faith, and thus became *the father of many nations*—even as he was told, *So numberless shall your offspring be*. His faith never quailed even when he noted the utter impotence of his own body (for he was about a hundred years old)

or the impotence of Sara's womb; no unbelief made him waver about 20 God's promise; his faith won strength as he gave glory to God and felt convinced that He was 21 able to do what He had promised. Hence his faith *was counted to him* 22 *as righteousness*. And these words 23 *counted to him* have not been written for him alone but for our sakes as 24 well; faith will be *counted to us* as we believe in Him who raised Jesus our Lord from the dead, Jesus who was *delivered up for our* 25 *trespasses* and raised that we might be justified.

CHAP.

As we are justified by faith, 5 then, let us enjoy the peace we have with God through our Lord Jesus Christ. Through him we 2 have got access\* to this grace where we have our standing, and triumph in the hope of God's glory. Not only so, but we 3 triumph even in our troubles, knowing that trouble produces endurance, endurance produces 4 character, and character produces hope—a *hope* which *never dis-* 5 *appoints* us, since God's love floods our hearts through the holy Spirit which has been given to us. For 6 when we were still in weakness, Christ died in due time for the ungodly. For the ungodly! Why, 7 a man will hardly die for the just—though one might bring oneself to die, if need be, for a good man. But God proves his love for us by 8 this, that Christ died for us when we were still sinners. Much more 9 then, now that we are justified by his blood, shall we be saved by him from Wrath. If we were 10

\* Omitting τῇ πλὴρει with B D G, the Old Latin, and Origen.

- reconciled to God by the death of his Son when we were enemies, much more, now that we are reconciled, shall we be saved by his life.
- 11 Not only so, but we triumph in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we now enjoy our reconciliation.
- 12 Thus, then, sin came into the world by one man, and death came in by sin; and so death spread to all men, inasmuch as all men
- 13 sinned. Sin was indeed in the world before the Law, but sin is never counted in the absence of
- 14 law. Nevertheless, from Adam to Moses death reigned even over those whose sins were not like Adam's transgression. Adam pre-
- 15 figured Him who was to come, but the gift is very different from the trespass. For while the rest of men died by the trespass of one man, the grace of God and the free gift which comes by the grace of the one man Jesus Christ overflowed far more richly upon the rest of men.
- 16 Nor is the free gift like the effect of the one man's sin; for while the sentence ensuing on a single sin resulted in doom, the free gift ensuing on many trespasses issues
- 17 in acquittal. For if the trespass of one man allowed death to reign through that one man, much more shall those who receive the overflowing grace and free gift of righteousness reign in life through One,
- 18 through Jesus Christ. Well then, as one man's trespass issued in doom for all,  
so one man's act of redress issues in acquittal and life for all.
- 19 Just as one man's disobedience made all the rest sinners,  
so one man's obedience will make all the rest righteous.

Law slipped in to aggravate the 20  
trespass; sin increased, but grace surpassed it far, so that, while sin 21  
had reigned the reign of death, grace might also reign with a righteousness that ends in life eternal through Jesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP.

Now what are we to infer from 6  
this? That we are to 'remain on in sin, so that there may be all the more grace'? Never! 2  
How can we live in sin any longer when we died to sin? Surely you 3  
know that all of us who have been baptized into Christ Jesus have been baptized into his death! Our baptism into his death made 4  
us share his burial, so that, as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, we too might live and move in the new sphere 5  
of Life. For if we have grown into him by a death like his, we shall grow into him by a resurrection like his, knowing as we do 6  
that our old self has been crucified with him in order to crush the sinful body and free us from any further slavery to sin (for once dead, a man 7  
is absolved from the claims of sin). We believe that as we have died 8  
with Christ we shall also live with him; for we know that Christ 9  
never dies after his resurrection from the dead—death has no more hold over him; the death he died 10  
was for sin, once for all, but the life he lives is for God. So you 11  
must consider yourselves dead to sin and alive to God in Christ Jesus our Lord. Sin is not to 12  
reign, then, over your mortal bodies and make you obey their passions; you must not let sin 13  
have your members for the service



of vice, you must dedicate yourselves to God as men who have been brought from death to life, dedicating your members to God for the service of righteousness.

14 Sin must have no hold over you, for you live under grace, not under law.

15 What follows, then? Are we 'to sin, because we live under grace,

16 not under law'? Never! Do you not know you are the servants of the master you obey, of the master to whom you yield yourselves obedient, whether it is Sin, whose service ends in death, or Obedience, whose service ends in

17 righteousness? Thank God, though you did serve sin, you have rendered whole-hearted obedience to what you were taught under

18 the rule of faith; set free from sin, you have passed into the service of

19 righteousness. (I use this human analogy to bring the truth home to your weak nature.) As you once dedicated your members to the service of vice and lawlessness,\* so now dedicate them to the service of righteousness that means

20 consecration. When you served sin, you were free of righteousness.

21 Well, what did you gain then by it all? Nothing but what you are now ashamed of! The end of

22 all that is death; but now that you are set free from sin, now that you have passed into the service of God, your gain is consecration, and the end of that is life eternal.

23 Sin's wage is death, but God's gift is life eternal in Christ Jesus our Lord.

SURELY you know, my brothers 7 —for I am speaking to men who know what law means—that the law has hold over a person only during his lifetime! Thus a 2

married woman is bound by law to her husband while he is alive; but if the husband dies, she is done with the law of 'the husband.'

Accordingly, she will be termed an 3 adulteress if she becomes another man's while her husband is alive;

but if her husband dies, she is freed from the law of 'the husband,' so that she is no adulteress if she becomes another man's. It is the 4 same in your case, my brothers. The crucified body of Christ made

you dead to the Law, so that you might belong to another, to him who was raised from the dead that we might be fruitful to God. For 5

when we were unspiritual, the sinful cravings excited by the Law were active in our members and made us fruitful to Death; but now we 6

are done with the Law, we have died to what once held us, so that we can serve in a new way, not under the written code as of old but in the Spirit.

What follows, then? That 'the 7 Law is equivalent to sin'? Never!

Why, had it not been for the Law, I would never have known what sin meant! Thus I would never have known what it is to covet, unless the Law had said, *You must not covet.* The command gave an 8

impulse to sin, and sin resulted for me in all manner of covetous desire —for sin, apart from law, is lifeless.

I lived at one time without law 9 myself, but when the command came home to me, sin sprang to

life and I died; the command 10 that meant life proved death for me. The command gave an im- 11

\* Omitting *eis τὴν ἀνομίαν*, which Hort brackets, as a gloss introduced to complete the parallel of *eis ἁγιασμόν*.

pulse to sin, sin beguiled me and used the command to kill me.  
 12 So the Law at any rate is holy, the command is holy, just, and for  
 13 our good. Then did what was meant for my good prove fatal to me? Never! It was sin; sin resulted in death for me by making use of this good thing. This was how sin was to be revealed in its true nature; it was to use the command to become sinful  
 14 in the extreme. The Law is spiritual; we know that. But then I am a creature of the flesh,  
 15 in the thralldom of sin. I cannot understand my own actions; I do not act as I want to act; on the  
 16 contrary, I do what I detest. Now, when I act against my wishes, that means I agree that the Law is  
 17 right. That being so, it is not I who do the deed but sin that  
 18 dwells within me. For in me (that is, in my flesh) no good dwells, I know; the wish is there, but not the power of doing what is right.  
 19 I cannot be good as I want to be, and I do wrong against my wishes.  
 20 Well, if I act against my wishes, it is not I who do the deed but  
 21 sin that dwells within me. So this is my experience of the Law: I want to do what is right, but wrong  
 22 is all I can manage; I cordially agree with God's law, so far as my  
 23 inner self is concerned, but then I find quite another law in my members which conflicts with the law of my mind and makes me a prisoner to sin's law that resides  
 25 in my members. (Thus, left to myself, I serve the law of God with my mind, but with my flesh I  
 24 serve the law of sin.)\* Miserable

wretch that I am! Who will rescue me from this body of death? God will! Thanks be 25 to him through Jesus Christ our Lord!

CHAP  
 Thus there is no doom now for 8 those who are in Christ Jesus; the 2 law of the Spirit brings the life which is in Christ Jesus, and that law has set me free from the law of sin and death. For God has done 3 what the Law, weakened here by the flesh, could not do; by sending his own Son in the guise of sinful flesh, to deal with sin, he condemned sin in the flesh, in order 4 to secure the fulfilment of the Law's requirements in our lives, as we live and move not by the flesh but by the Spirit.

For those who follow the flesh 5 have their interests in the flesh, and those who follow the Spirit have their interests in the Spirit.

The interests of the flesh mean 6 death, the interests of the Spirit mean life and peace.

For the interests of the flesh are 7 hostile to God; they do not yield to the law of God (indeed they cannot). Those who are in the 8 flesh cannot satisfy God. But you 9 are not in the flesh, you are in the Spirit, since the Spirit of God dwells within you. Anyone who does not possess the Spirit of Christ does not belong to Him. On the other hand, 10 if Christ is within you, though the body is a dead thing owing to Adam's sin, the spirit is living as the result of righteousness. And if the Spirit 11 of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells within you, then He

\* Restoring the second part of ver. 25 to what seems its original and logical position before the climax of ver. 24.



who raised Christ from the dead will also make your mortal bodies live by his indwelling Spirit in your lives.

- 12 Well then, my brothers, we owe a duty—but it is not to the flesh ! It is not to live by the flesh ! If you live by the flesh, you are on the  
13 road to death ; but if by the Spirit you put the actions of the body  
14 to death, you will live. For the sons of God are those who are  
15 guided by the Spirit of God. You have received no slavish spirit that would make you relapse into fear ; you have received the Spirit of sonship. And when we cry, “ Abba !  
16 Father ! ”, it is this Spirit testifying along with our own spirit  
17 that we are children of God ; and if children, heirs as well, heirs of God, heirs along with Christ—for we share his sufferings in order to share his glory.  
18 Present suffering, I hold, is a mere nothing compared to the glory that we are to have revealed.  
19 Even the creation waits with eager longing for the sons of God  
20 to be revealed. For creation was not rendered futile by its own choice, but by the will of Him who thus made it subject, the  
21 hope being that creation as well as man would one day be freed from its thralldom to decay and gain the glorious freedom of the children  
22 of God. To this day, we know, the entire creation sighs and throbs  
23 with pain ; and not only so, but even we ourselves, who have the Spirit as a foretaste of the future, even we sigh to ourselves as we wait for the redemption of the body that means our full sonship.  
24 We were saved with this hope in view. Now when an object of hope is seen, there is no further need to

hope. Who ever hopes for what he sees already ? But if we hope for 25 something that we do not see, we wait for it patiently.

So too the Spirit assists us in 26 our weakness ; for we do not know how to pray aright, but the Spirit pleads for us with sighs that are beyond words, and He who 27 searches the human heart knows what is in the mind of the Spirit, since the Spirit pleads before God for the saints.

We know also that those who 28 love God, those who have been called in terms of his purpose, have his aid and interest in everything. For he decreed of old that 29 those whom he predestined should share the likeness of his Son—that he might be the firstborn of a great brotherhood. Then he calls those 30 whom he has thus decreed ; then he justifies those whom he has called ; then he glorifies those whom he has justified.

Now what follows from all this ? 31 If God is for us, who can be against us ? The God who did not spare 32 his own Son but gave him up for us all, surely He will give us everything besides ! Who is to accuse 33 the elect of God ? When God *acquits, who shall condemn ?* Will 34 Christ ?—the Christ who died, yes and rose from the dead ! the Christ who is at God’s right hand, who actually pleads for us ! What can 35 ever part us from Christ’s love ? Can anguish or calamity or persecution or famine or nakedness or danger or the sword ? (*Because, as 36 it is written,*

*For thy sake we are being killed all the day long,  
we are counted as sheep to be slaughtered.*)

No, in all this we are more than 37

conquerors through him who loved  
 38 us. For I am certain neither  
 death nor life, neither angels nor  
 principalities, neither the present  
 39 nor the future, no powers of the  
 Height or of the Depth, nor anything  
 else in all creation will be able to  
 part us from God's love in Christ  
 Jesus our Lord.

CHAP.

9 I AM telling the truth in Christ—  
 it is no lie, my conscience bears  
 2 me out in the holy Spirit when I  
 say that I am in sore pain. I suffer  
 3 endless anguish of heart. I could  
 have wished myself accursed and  
 banished from Christ for the sake  
 of my brothers, my natural kins-  
 4 men; for they are Israelites, theirs  
 is the Sonship, the Glory, the  
 covenants, the divine legislation,  
 the Worship, and the promises;  
 5 the patriarchs are theirs, and theirs  
 too (so far as natural descent goes)  
 is the Christ. (Blessed for ever-  
 more be the God who is over all!  
 Amen.)

6 It is not, of course, as if God's  
 word had failed! Far from it!  
 'Israel' does not mean everyone  
 who belongs to Israel; they are  
 7 not all children of Abraham be-  
 cause they are descended from  
 Abraham. No, *it is through Isaac*  
*that your offspring shall be reckoned*  
 8 —meaning that instead of God's  
 children being the children born to  
 him by natural descent, it is the  
 children of the Promise who are  
 reckoned as his true offspring.  
 9 For when God said, *I will come*  
*about this time and Sara shall have*  
*a son*, that was a word of promise.  
 10 And further, when Rebecca be-  
 came pregnant by our father Isaac,  
 though one man was the father of  
 11 both children, and though the

children were still unborn and  
 had done nothing either good or  
 bad (to confirm the divine purpose  
 in election which depends upon the  
 call of God, not on anything man  
 does), she was told that *the elder 12*  
*will serve the younger*. As it is 13  
 written, *Jacob I loved but Esau I*  
*hated*.

Then are we to infer that there 14  
 is injustice in God? Never! God  
 says to Moses,

*I will have mercy on whom I 15*  
*choose to have mercy,*

*I will have compassion on whom*  
*I choose to have compassion.*

You see, it is not a question of 16  
 human will or effort but of the  
 divine mercy. Why, scripture says 17  
 to Pharaoh,

*It was for this that I raised you*  
*up,*  
*to display my power in you,*  
*and to spread news of my name*  
*over all the earth.*

Thus God has mercy on anyone 18  
 just as he pleases,  
 and he makes anyone stubborn  
 just as he pleases.

"Then," you will retort, "why 19  
 does He go on finding fault? Who  
 can oppose his will?" But who 20  
 are you, my man, to speak back to  
 God? *Is something a man has*  
*moulded to ask him who has moulded*  
*it*, "Why did you make me like  
 this?" What! has the potter no 21  
 right over the clay? Has he no  
 right to make out of the same  
 lump one vessel for a noble purpose  
 and another for a menial? What 22  
 if God, though desirous to display  
 his anger and show his might, has  
 tolerated most patiently the objects  
 of his anger, ripe and ready to be  
 destroyed? What if he means 23  
 to show the wealth that lies in his  
 glory for the objects of his mercy,



whom he has made ready before-  
 24 hand to 'receive glory—that is,  
 for us whom he has called from  
 among the Gentiles as well as  
 25 the Jews? As indeed he says in  
 Hosea,

*Those who were no people of mine,  
 I will call 'my People,'  
 and her 'beloved' who was not  
 beloved;*

26 *on the very spot where they were  
 told, 'You are no people of  
 mine,'*

*there shall they be called 'sons  
 of the living God.'*

27 And Isaiah exclaims, with regard  
 to Israel, *Though the number of the  
 sons of Israel be like the sand of the  
 sea, only a remnant of them shall be  
 28 saved; for the Lord will carry out  
 his sentence on earth with rigour  
 29 and despatch. Indeed, as Isaiah  
 foretold,*

*Had not the Lord of hosts left us  
 with some descendants,  
 we would have fared like Sodom,  
 we would have been like Gomorra.*

30 What are we to conclude, then?  
 That Gentiles who never aimed  
 at righteousness have attained  
 righteousness, that is, righteous-  
 31 ness by faith; whereas Israel who  
 did aim at the law of righteousness  
 32 have failed to reach that law. And  
 why? Simply because Israel has  
 relied not on faith but on what they  
 could do. They have stumbled  
 over the stone that makes men stumble  
 33—as it is written,

*Here I lay a stone in Sion that  
 will make men stumble,  
 even a rock to trip them up;  
 but he who believes in Him will  
 never be disappointed.*

CHAP.

10 OH for their salvation, brothers!  
 That is my heart's desire and

prayer to God! I can vouch for 2  
 their zeal for God; only, it is not  
 zeal with knowledge. They would 3  
 not surrender to the righteousness  
 of God, because they were ignorant  
 of his righteousness and therefore  
 essayed to set up a righteousness of  
 their own. Now Christ is an end to 4  
 law, so as to let every believer have  
 righteousness. Moses writes of 5  
 law-righteousness, *Anyone who can  
 perform it, shall live by it.* But here 6  
 is what faith-righteousness says:—  
*Say not in your heart, 'Who will go  
 up to heaven?'* (that is, to bring  
 Christ down). Or, *'who will go 7  
 down to the abyss?'* (that is, to bring  
 Christ from the dead). No, what 8  
 it does say is this:—*The word is  
 close to you, in your very mouth and  
 in your heart* (that is, the word of  
 faith which we preach). Confess 9  
*with your mouth* that 'Jesus is  
 Lord,' believe *in your heart* that  
 God raised him from the dead, and  
 you will be saved; for 10  
 with his heart man believes and  
 is justified,  
 with his mouth he confesses and  
 is saved.

*No one who believes in him, the 11  
 scripture says, will ever be dis-  
 appointed. No one—for there is 12  
 no distinction of Jew and Greek,  
 the same Lord is Lord of them all,  
 with ample for all who invoke him.  
 Everyone who invokes the name of 13  
 the Lord shall be saved. But how 14  
 are they to invoke One in whom  
 they do not believe? And how  
 are they to believe in One of whom  
 they have never heard? And how  
 are they ever to hear, without  
 a preacher? And how can men 15  
 preach unless they are sent?—  
 as it is written, *How pleasant is  
 the coming of men with glad, good  
 news!**

- 16 But they have not all given in to the gospel of glad news? No, Isaiah says, *Lord, who has believed what they heard from us?* (You see, faith must come from what is heard, and what is heard comes from word of Christ.) But, I ask, "Have they never heard?" Indeed they have.

*Their voice carried over all the earth,  
and their words to the end of the world.*

- 19 Then, I ask, "Did Israel not understand?" Why, first of all Moses declares,

*I will make you jealous of a nation that is no nation,  
I will provoke you to anger over a nation devoid of understanding.*

- 20 And then Isaiah dares to say,  
*I have been found by those who never sought me,  
I have shown myself to those who never inquired of me.*

- 21 He also says of Israel, *All the day long I have held out my hands to a disobedient and contrary people.*

- 11 Then, I ask, *has God repudiated his People?* Never! Why, I am an Israelite myself, a descendant of Abraham, a member of the tribe of

- 2 Benjamin! *God has not repudiated his People*, his predestined People! Surely you know what scripture says in the passage called 'Elijah'?

- You know how he pleads with God

- 3 against Israel: *Lord, they have killed thy prophets, they have demolished thine altars; I alone am*

- 4 *left, and they seek my life.* Yet what is the divine answer? *I have left myself seven thousand men*

- 5 *who have not knelt to Baal.* Well, at the present day there is also a remnant, selected by grace.

- 6 Selected by grace, and therefore not for anything they have done;

otherwise grace would cease to be grace.\*

Now what are we to infer from this? That Israel has failed to secure the object of its quest; the elect have secured it, and the rest of men have been rendered insensible to it—as it is written,

*God has given them a spirit of torpor,  
eyes that see not, ears that hear not—*

*down to this very day.* And David says,

*Let their table prove a snare and a trap,  
a pitfall and a retribution for them;*

*let their eyes be darkened, that they cannot see,  
bow down their backs for ever.*

Now I ask, have they stumbled to their ruin? Never! The truth is, that by their lapse salvation has passed to the Gentiles, so as to make them jealous. Well, if their lapse has enriched the world, if their defection is the gain of the Gentiles, what will it mean when they all come in? I tell you this, you Gentiles, that as an apostle to the Gentiles I lay great stress on my office, in the hope of being able to make my fellow-Jews jealous and of managing thus to save some of them. For if their exclusion means that the world is reconciled to God, what will their admission mean? Why, it will be life from the dead!

If the first handful of dough is consecrated, so is the rest of the lump;

if the root is consecrated, so are the branches.

\* Omitting [*εἰ δὲ ἐξ ἔργων, οὐκ ἐστὶν χάρις, ἐπεὶ τὸ ἔργον οὐκ ἐστὶν ἔργον*] with the Latin version and most MSS.



17 Supposing some of the branches have been broken off, while you have been grafted in like a shoot of wild olive to share the rich growth of the olive-stem, do not pride yourself at the expense of these branches. Remember, in your pride, the stem supports you, 19 not you the stem. You will say, "But branches were broken off to let me be grafted in!" Granted. They were broken off—for their lack of faith. And you owe your position to your faith. You should feel awed instead of being uplifted. 21 For if God did not spare the natural branches, he will not spare you either. Consider both the kindness and the severity of God; those who fall come under his severity, but you come under the divine kindness, provided you adhere to that kindness. Otherwise, you will be cut away too. And even the others will be grafted in, if they do not adhere to their unbelief; God can graft them in again. For if you have been cut from an olive which is naturally wild, and grafted, contrary to nature, upon a garden olive, how much more will the natural branches be grafted into their proper olive? 25 To prevent you from being self-conceited, brothers, I would like you to understand this secret: it is only a partial insensibility that has come over Israel, until the full number of the Gentiles come in. 26 This done, all Israel will be saved—as it is written,

*The deliverer will come from Sion,  
he will banish all godlessness  
from Jacob:*

27 *this is my covenant with them,  
when I take their sins away.*

28 So far as the gospel goes, they are enemies of God—which is to your

advantage; but so far as election goes, they are beloved for their fathers' sake. For God never goes back upon his gifts and call.

Once you disobeyed God, 30 and now you enjoy his mercy thanks to their disobedience; in the same way they at present are disobedient, so that they in turn may enjoy 31 the same mercy as yourselves.

For God has consigned all men 32 to disobedience, that he may have mercy upon all.

What a fathomless wealth lies 33 in the wisdom and knowledge of God! How inscrutable his judgments! How mysterious his methods!

*Whoever understood the thoughts of 34 the Lord?*

*Who has ever been his counsellor?*

*Who has first given to him and has 35 to be repaid?* All comes from him, 36 all lives by him, all ends in him. Glory to him for ever, Amen!

CHAP.

WELL then, my brothers, I appeal 12 to you by all the mercy of God to dedicate your bodies as a living sacrifice, consecrated and acceptable to God; that is your cult, a spiritual rite. Instead of being 2 moulded to this world, have your mind renewed, and so be transformed in nature, able to make out what the will of God is, namely, what is good and acceptable to him and perfect.

In virtue of my office, I tell every- 3 one of your number who is self-important,\* that he is not to think

\* I accept the ingenious conjecture that τι has fallen out after ὅτι.

more of himself than he ought to think; he must take a sane view of himself, corresponding to the degree of faith which God has assigned to each. In our one body we have a number of members, and the members have not all the same function; so too, for all our numbers, we form one Body in Christ and we are severally members one of another. Our talents differ with the grace that is given us; if the talent is that of prophecy, let us employ it in proportion to our faith; if it is practical service, let us mind our service; the teacher must mind his teaching, the speaker his words of counsel; the contributor must be liberal, the superintendent must be in earnest, the sick visitor must be cheerful. Let your love be a real thing, with a loathing for evil and a bent for what is good. Put affection into your love for the brotherhood; be forward to honour one another; never let your zeal flag; maintain the spiritual glow; serve the Lord; let your hope be a joy to you; be stedfast in trouble, attend to prayer, contribute to needy saints, make a practice of hospitality. Bless those who make a practice of persecuting you; bless them instead of cursing them. Rejoice with those who rejoice, and weep with those who weep. Keep in harmony with one another; instead of being ambitious, associate with humble folk; *never be self-conceited*. Never pay back evil for evil to anyone; *aim to be above reproach in the eyes of all*; be at peace with all men, if possible, so far as that depends on you. Never revenge yourselves, beloved, but let the Wrath of God have its way; for it is written, *Vengeance is mine, I*

*will exact a requital*—the Lord has said it. No,

*if your enemy is hungry, feed him, 20  
if he is thirsty, give him drink;  
for in this way you will make him  
feel a burning sense of shame.*

Do not let evil get the better of 21  
you; get the better of evil by doing  
good.

CHAP.

EVERY subject must obey the 13  
government-authorities, for no  
authority exists apart from God;  
the existing authorities have been  
constituted by God. Hence anyone 2  
who resists authority is opposing  
the divine order, and the opposition  
will bring judgment on themselves.  
Magistrates are no terror to an 3  
honest man,\* though they are to  
a bad man. If you want to avoid  
being alarmed at the government-  
authorities, lead an honest life and  
you will be commended for it; the 4  
magistrate is God's servant for your  
benefit. But if you do wrong,  
you may well be alarmed; a magis-  
trate does not wield the power of  
the sword for nothing, he is God's  
servant for the infliction of divine  
vengeance upon evil-doers. You 5  
must be obedient, therefore, not  
only to avoid the divine vengeance  
but as a matter of conscience, for 6  
the same reason as you pay taxes—  
since magistrates are God's officers,  
bent upon the maintenance of  
order and authority. Pay them all 7  
their respective dues, tribute to one,  
taxes to another, respect to this  
man, honour to that. Be in debt 8  
to no man—apart from the debt

\* Reading ἀγαθοεργῶ, Patrick Young's attractive conjecture (confirmed by the Ethiopic version). As Hort points out, "the apparent antithesis to τῶ κακῶ could hardly fail to introduce τῶ ἀγαθῶ."



## ROMANS XIV

of love one to another. He who loves his fellow-man has fulfilled the law. *You must not commit adultery, you must not kill, you must not steal, you must not covet*—these and any other command are summed up in the single word, *You must love your neighbour as yourself*. Love never wrongs a neighbour; that is why love is the fulfilment of the law.

And then you know what this Crisis means, you know it is high time to waken up; for Salvation is nearer to us now than when we first believed. It is far on in the night, the day is almost here; so let us drop the deeds of darkness and put on the armour of the light; let us live decorously as in the open light of day—no revelry or bouts of drinking, no debauchery or sensuality, no quarrelling or jealousy. No, put on the character of the Lord Jesus Christ, and never think how to gratify the cravings of the flesh.

CHAP.

WELCOME a man of weak faith, but not for the purpose of passing judgment on his scruples. While one man has enough confidence to eat any food, the man of weak faith only eats vegetables. The eater must not look down upon the non-eater, and the non-eater must not criticize the eater, for God has welcomed him. Who are you to criticize the servant of Another? It is for his Master to say whether he stands or falls; and stand he will, for the Master has power to make him stand. Then again, this man rates one day above another, while that man rates all days alike. Well, everyone must be convinced in his own mind;

the man who values a particular day does so to the Lord.\*

The eater eats to the Lord, since he thanks God for his food;

the non-eater abstains to the Lord,

and he too thanks God.

For none of us lives to himself, and none of us dies to himself;

if we live, we live to the Lord, and if we die, we die to the Lord.

Thus we are the Lord's whether we live or die; it was for this that Christ died and rose and came to life, to be Lord both of the dead and of the living. So why do you criticize your brother? And you, why do you look down upon your brother? All of us have to stand before the tribunal of God—for it is written,

*As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bend before me, every tongue shall offer praise to God.*

Each of us then will have to answer for himself to God.

So let us stop criticizing one another; rather make up your mind never to put any stumbling-block or hindrance in your brother's way. I know, I am certain in the Lord Jesus, that nothing is in itself unclean; only, anything is unclean for a man who considers it unclean. If your brother is being injured because you eat a certain food, then you are no longer living by the rule of love. Do not let that food of yours ruin the man for whom Christ died. Your rights must not get a bad name. The Reign of God is not a

\* Omitting [καὶ ὁ μὴ φρονῶν τὴν ἡμέραν κυρίῳ οὐ φρονεῖ] with the Latin version and most manuscripts.

matter of eating and drinking, it means righteousness, joy, and peace  
 18 in the holy Spirit; he who serves Christ on these lines, is acceptable to God and esteemed by men.  
 19 Peace, then, and the building up of each other, these are what we  
 20 must aim at. You must not break down God's work for the mere sake of food! Everything may be clean, but it is wrong for a man to prove a stumbling-block by what he eats;  
 21 the right course is to abstain from flesh or wine or indeed anything that your brother feels to be a stumbling-  
 22 block.\* Certainly keep your own conviction on the matter, as between yourself and God; he is a fortunate man who has no misgivings about what he allows himself to eat. But if anyone has doubts about eating and then eats, that condemns him at once; it was not faith that induced him to eat, and any action that is not based on faith is a sin.  
 15 We who are strong ought to bear the burdens that the weak make for themselves and us. We are not  
 2 to please ourselves. Each of us must please his neighbour, doing him good by building up his faith.  
 3 Christ certainly did not please himself, but, as it is written, *The reproaches of those who denounced Thee*  
 4 *have fallen upon me.*—All such words were written of old for our instruction, that by remaining steadfast and drawing encouragement from the scriptures we may cherish hope.  
 5 May the God who inspires steadfastness and encouragement grant you such harmony with one another,  
 6 after Christ Jesus, that you may unite in a chorus of praise and

glory to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! Welcome one 7  
 another, then, as Christ has welcomed yourselves, for the glory of God. Christ, I mean, became a ser- 8  
 vant to the circumcised in order to prove God's honesty by fulfilling His promises to the fathers, and also 9  
 in order that the Gentiles should glorify God for His mercy—as it is written,

*Therefore will I offer praise to Thee among the Gentiles, and sing to thy name ;*

or again, 10

*Rejoice, O Gentiles, with his People ;*

or again, 11

*Extol the Lord, all Gentiles, let all the peoples praise him ;*

or again, as Isaiah says, 12

*Then shall the Scion of Jessai live, he who rises to rule the Gentiles ; on him shall the Gentiles set their hope.*

May the God of your hope so fill 13  
 you with all joy and peace in your faith, that you may be overflowing with hope by the power of the holy Spirit!

Personally I am quite certain, 14  
 my brothers, that even as it is you have ample goodness of heart, you are filled with knowledge of every kind, and you are well able to give advice to one another. Still, by 15  
 way of refreshing your memory, I have written you with a certain freedom, in virtue of my divine commission as a priest of Christ 16  
 Jesus to the Gentiles in the service of God's gospel. My aim is to make the Gentiles an acceptable offering, consecrated by the holy Spirit. Now in Christ Jesus I can be proud 17  
 of my work for God. I will not 18  
 make free to speak of anything except what Christ has accomplished by

\* Omitting [*ἡ σκανδαλίζεται ἡ ἀσθενεί*] with N\* A C, Origen, the Peshitto, etc., as a homiletic gloss.



me in the way of securing the obedience of the Gentiles, by my words  
 19 and by my deeds, by the force of miracles and marvels, by the power of the Spirit of God. Thus from Jerusalem right round to Illyricum, I have been able to complete the preaching of the gospel of Christ—  
 20 my ambition always being to preach it only in places where there had been no mention of Christ's name, that I might not build on foundations laid by others, but that (as it is written)

*They should see who never had learned about him,  
 and they who had never heard of him should understand.*

22 This is why I have been so often prevented from visiting you. But now, as I have no further scope for work in these parts, and as for a number of years I have had a long-  
 24 ing to visit you whenever I went to Spain, I am hoping to see you on my way there, and to be sped forward by you after I have enjoyed your company for a while.  
 25 At the moment I am off to Jerusalem on an errand to the saints.  
 26 For Macedonia and Achaia have decided to make a contribution for the poor among the saints at  
 27 Jerusalem. Such was their decision; and yet this is a debt they owe to these people, for if the Gentiles have shared their spiritual blessings, they owe them a debt of  
 28 aid in material blessings. Well, once I finish this business by putting the proceeds of the collection safely in their hands, I will start for Spain  
 29 and take you on the way. When I do come to you, I know I will bring a full blessing from Christ.  
 30 Brothers, I beg of you, by our Lord Jesus Christ and by the love that the Spirit inspires, rally round

me by praying to God for me; pray 31 that I may be delivered from the unbelievers in Judaea, and also that my mission to Jerusalem may prove acceptable to the saints. Then, by God's will, I shall gladly 32 come to you and rest beside you.

The God of peace be with you 33 all! Amen.

CHAP.

LET me introduce our sister 16 Phoebe, a deaconess of the church at Cenchreae; receive her in the 2 Lord as saints should receive one another, and give her any help she may require. She has been a help herself to many people, including myself.

Salute Prisca and Aquila, my 3 fellow-workers in Christ Jesus, who 4 have risked their lives for me; I thank them, and not only I but all the Gentile churches as well. Also, salute the church that meets 5 in their house. Salute my beloved Epænetus, the first in Asia to be reaped for Christ. Salute Mary, 6 who has worked hard for you. Salute Andronicus and Junias, 7 fellow-countrymen and fellow-prisoners of mine; they are men of note among the apostles, and they have been in Christ longer than I have. Salute Amplias, my beloved 8 in the Lord. Salute Urbanus, 9 our fellow-worker in Christ, and my beloved Stachys. Salute that 10 tried Christian, Apelles. Salute those who belong to the household of Aristobulus. Salute my fel- 11 low-countryman Herodion. Salute such members of the household of Narcissus as are in the Lord. Salute Tryphaena and Tryphosa, 12 who work hard in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis; she has worked

## ROMANS XVI

13 very hard in the Lord. Salute that  
choice Christian, Rufus; also his  
mother, who has been a mother to  
14 me. Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon,  
Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas, and the  
15 brothers of their company. Salute  
Philologus and Julia, Nereus and  
his sister, Olympas too, and all the  
16 saints in their company. Salute  
one another with a holy kiss. All  
the churches of Christ salute you.  
17 Brothers, I beg of you to keep  
your eye on those who stir up dis-  
sensations and put hindrances in your  
way, contrary to the doctrine which  
you have been taught. Avoid them.  
18 Such creatures are no servants of  
Christ our Lord, they are slaves of  
their own base desires; with their  
plausible and pious talk they be-  
guile the hearts of unsuspecting  
people. But surely not of you!  
19 Everyone has heard of your loyalty  
to the gospel; it makes me rejoice  
over you. Still, I want you to be  
experts in good and innocents in

evil. The God of peace will soon 20  
crush Satan under your feet!

The grace of our Lord Jesus  
Christ be with you.

Timotheus my fellow-worker 21  
salutes you; so do my fellow-  
countrymen Lucius, Jason, and  
Sosipater.

I Tertius, who write the letter, 22  
salute you in the Lord.

Gaius, my host and the host of 23  
the church at large, salutes you.  
Erastus the city-treasurer salutes  
you; so does brother Quartus.

[Now to Him who can strengthen 25  
you by my gospel, by the preach-  
ing of Jesus Christ, by revealing  
the secret purpose which after the  
silence of long ages has now been 26  
disclosed and made known on the  
basis of the prophetic scriptures (by  
command of the eternal God) to all  
the Gentiles for their obedience to  
the faith—to the only wise God be 27  
glory through Jesus Christ for ever  
and ever: Amen.]



# THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE CORINTHIANS

CHAP.

1 PAUL, called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God,  
2 with brother Sosthenes, to the church of God at Corinth, to those who are consecrated in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, as well as to all who, wherever they may be, invoke the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, their Lord no less than  
3 ours: grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I always thank my God for the grace of God that has been bestowed on you in Christ Jesus; in him you have received a wealth of all blessing, full power to speak of your faith and full insight into its meaning,  
5 all of which verifies the testimony we bore to Christ when we were  
6 with you. Thus you lack no spiritual endowment during these days of waiting till our Lord Jesus  
7 Christ is revealed; and to the very end he will guarantee that you are vindicated on the day of our Lord  
8 Jesus Christ. Faithful is the God who called you to this fellowship with his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

10 Brothers, for the sake of our Lord Jesus Christ I beg of you all to drop these party-cries. There must be no cliques among you; you must regain your common temper and attitude. For Chloe's people inform  
12 me that you are quarrelling. By 'quarrelling' I mean that each of you has his party-cry, "I belong

to Paul," "And I to Apollos," "And I to Cephas," "And I to Christ." Has Christ been parcelled  
13 out? Was it Paul who was crucified for you? Was it in Paul's name that you were baptized? I am  
14 thankful now that I baptized none of you, except Crispus and Gaius, so that no one can say you  
15 were baptized in my name. (Well, 16 I did baptize the household of Stephanas, but no one else, as far as I remember.) Christ did  
17 not send me to baptize but to preach the gospel.

And to preach it with no fine rhetoric, lest the cross of Christ should lose its power! Those who  
18 are doomed to perish find the story of the cross 'sheer folly,' but it means the power of God for those whom he saves. It is written, 19

*I will destroy the wisdom of the sages,*

*I will confound the insight of the wise. Sage, scribe, critic of this world,* 20  
*where are they all?* Has not God stultified the wisdom of the world? For when the world with all its  
21 wisdom failed to know God in his wisdom, God resolved to save believers by the 'sheer folly' of the Christian message. Jews de-  
22 mand miracles and Greeks want wisdom, but our message is Christ  
23 the crucified—a stumbling-block to the Jews, 'sheer folly' to the Gentiles, but for those who are  
24 called, whether Jews or Greeks, a

## I. CORINTHIANS II

Christ who is the power of God and the wisdom of God.

25 For the 'foolishness' of God is wiser than men, and the 'weakness' of God is stronger than men.

26 Why, look at your own ranks, my brothers; not many wise men (that is, judged by human standards), not many leading men, not many of good birth, have been

27 called! No,

God has chosen what is foolish in the world to shame the wise;

28 God has chosen what is weak in the world

to shame what is strong;

God has chosen what is mean and despised in the world—

things which are not, to put down things that are;

29 that no person may boast in the sight of God. This is the God to whom you owe your being in Christ

30 Jesus, whom God has made our 'Wisdom,' that is, our righteousness and consecration and redemption;

31 so that, as it is written, *let him who boasts boast of the Lord.*

CHAP.

2 THUS when I came to you, my brothers, I did not come to proclaim to you God's secret purpose \* with any elaborate words or wisdom.

2 I determined among you to be ignorant of everything except Jesus Christ, and Jesus Christ the crucified.

3 It was in weakness and fear and with great trembling that I

4 visited you; what I said, what I preached, did not rest on the plausible arguments of 'wisdom'

but on the proof supplied by the Spirit and its power, so that your faith might not rest on any human 'wisdom,' but on the power of God. 5

We do discuss 'wisdom' with those who are mature; only it is not the wisdom of this world or of the dethroned Powers who rule this world, it is the mysterious Wisdom of God that we discuss, that hidden wisdom which God decreed from all eternity for our glory. None of the Powers of this world understands it (if they had, they would never have crucified the Lord of glory). No, as it is written, 6 7 8 9

*what no eye has ever seen,*

*what no ear has ever heard,*

*what never entered the mind of man,*

*God has prepared all that for those who love him.*

And God has revealed it to us by the Spirit, for the Spirit fathoms everything, even the depths of God.

What human being can understand the thoughts of a man, except the man's own inner spirit?

So too no one understands the thoughts of God, except the Spirit of God.

Now we have received the Spirit— not the spirit of the world but the Spirit that comes from God, that we may understand what God bestows upon us. And this is what we discuss, using language taught by no human wisdom but by the Spirit. We interpret what is spiritual in spiritual language. The unspiritual man rejects these truths of the Spirit of God; to him they are 'sheer folly,' he cannot understand them. And the reason is, that they must be read with the spiritual 12 13 14

\* The textual evidence for *μυστήριον* is slightly stronger, but I incline upon the whole to regard it as a secondary reading, due to i. 6, and to adopt *μυστήριον*.



# I. CORINTHIANS III, IV

15 eye. The spiritual man, again, can read the meaning of everything; and yet no one can read what he is. For *who ever understood the thoughts of the Lord, so as to give him instruction?* No one. Well, our thoughts are Christ's thoughts.

CHAP.

3 BUT I could not discuss things with you, my brothers, as spiritual persons; I had to address you as worldlings, as mere babes in Christ.  
2 I fed you with milk, not with solid food. You were not able for solid food, and you are not able even now; you are still worldly. For with jealousy and quarrels in your midst, are you not worldly, are you not behaving like ordinary men?  
4 When one cries, "I belong to Paul," and another, "I belong to Apollos," what are you but men of the world?  
5 Who is Apollos? Who is Paul? They are simply used by God to give you faith, each as the Lord assigns his task.  
6 I did the planting, Apollos did the watering, but it was God who made the seed grow.  
7 So neither planter nor waterer counts, but God alone who makes the seed grow.  
8 Still, though planter and waterer are on the same level, each will get his own wage for the special work that he has done.  
9 We work together in God's service; you are God's field to be planted, God's house to be built.  
10 In virtue of my commission from God, I laid the foundation of the house like an expert master-builder. It remains for another to build on this foundation. Whoever he is, let him be careful how he builds. The

foundation is laid, namely Jesus Christ, and no one can lay any other. On that foundation anyone may build gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, or straw, but in every case the nature of his work will come out; the Day will show what it is, for the Day breaks in fire, and the fire will test the work of each, no matter what that work may be.

If the structure raised by any man survives, he will be rewarded; if a man's work is burnt up, he will be a loser— and though he will be saved himself, he will be snatched from the very flames.

Do you not know you are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells within you? God will destroy any one who would destroy God's temple, for God's temple is sacred—and that is what you are.

Let no one deceive himself about this; whoever of you imagines he is wise with this world's wisdom must become a 'fool,' if he is really to be wise. For God ranks this world's wisdom as 'sheer folly.' It is written, *He seizes the wise in their craftiness*, and again, *The Lord knows the reasoning of the wise is futile*.

So you must not boast about men. For all belongs to you; Paul, Apollos, Cephas, the world, life, death, the present and the future—all belongs to you; and you belong to Christ, and Christ to God.

CHAP.

THIS is how you are to look upon us, as servants of Christ and stewards of God's secret truths. Now in this matter of stewards your first requirement is that they must be trustworthy. It matters very

little to me that you or any human court should cross-question me on this point. I do not even cross-  
 4 question myself; for, although I am not conscious of having anything against me, that does not clear me. It is the Lord who cross-questions  
 5 me on the matter. So do not criticize at all; the hour of reckoning has still to come, when the Lord will come to bring dark secrets to the light and to reveal life's inner aims and motives. Then each of us will get his meed of praise from God.

6 Now I have applied what has been said above to myself and Apollos, to teach you . . . \* that you are not to be puffed up with rivalry over one teacher as against  
 7 another. Who singles you out, my brother? What do you possess that has not been given you? And if it was given you, why do you boast as if it had been gained, not given?

8 You Corinthians have your heart's desire already, have you? You have heaven's rich bliss already! You have come into your kingdom without us! I wish indeed you had come into your kingdom, so that we  
 9 could share it with you! For it seems to me that God means us apostles to come in at the very end, like the doomed gladiators in the arena! We are made a spectacle to the world, to angels and to men!

10 We, for Christ's sake, are 'fools'; you in Christ are sensible. We are weak, you are strong; you are  
 11 honoured, we are in disrepute. To this very hour we hunger and thirst, we are ill-clad and knocked about,  
 12 we are waifs, we work hard for our living; when reviled, we bless;

\* The text and the meaning of the phrase between *μάθητε* and *ἵνα μὴ* are beyond recovery.

when persecuted, we put up with it; when defamed, we try  
 13 to conciliate. To this hour we are treated as the scum of the earth, the very refuse of the world!

I do not write this to make you  
 14 feel ashamed, but to instruct you as beloved children of mine. You may  
 15 have thousands to superintend you in Christ, but you have not more than one father. It was I who in Christ Jesus became your father by means of the gospel. Then imitate  
 16 me, I beg of you. To ensure this, 17 I am sending you Timotheus, my beloved and trustworthy son in the Lord; he will remind you of those methods in Christ Jesus which I teach everywhere in every church. Certain individuals have got puffed  
 18 up, have they, as if I were not coming myself? I will come to you be-  
 19 fore long, if the Lord wills, and then I will find out from these puffed up creatures not what their talk but what their power amounts to. For  
 20 God's Reign does not show itself in talk but in power. Which is 21 it to be? Am I to come to you with a rod of discipline or with love and a spirit of gentleness?

CHAP.

It is actually reported that there  
 5 is immorality among you, and immorality such as is unknown even among pagans—that a man has taken his father's wife! And yet  
 2 you are puffed up! You ought much rather to be mourning the loss of a member! Expel the perpetrator of such a crime! For my  
 3 part, present with you in spirit though absent in body. I have already, as in your presence, passed sentence on such an offender as this, by the authority of our  
 4 Lord Jesus Christ; I have met



## I. CORINTHIANS VI

with you in spirit and by the power  
 5 of our Lord Jesus I have con-  
 signed that individual to Satan  
 for the destruction of his flesh, in  
 order that his spirit may be saved  
 6 on the Day of the Lord Jesus. Your  
 boasting is no credit to you. Do  
 you not know that a morsel of  
 dough will leaven the whole lump?  
 7 Clean out the old dough that you  
 may be a fresh lump. For you are  
 free from the old leaven; *Christ*  
*our paschal lamb has been sacrificed.*  
 8 So let us celebrate our festival,  
 not with any old leaven, not with  
 vice and evil, but with the un-  
 leavened bread of innocence and  
 integrity.  
 9 In my letter I wrote that you were  
 not to associate with the immoral.  
 10 I did not mean you were literally to  
 avoid contact with the immoral in  
 this world, with the lustful and the  
 thievish, or with idolaters; in that  
 case you would have to leave the  
 11 world altogether. What I now  
 write is that you are not to associate  
 with any so-called brother who is  
 immoral or lustful or idolatrous  
 or given to abuse or drink or rob-  
 bery. Associate with him! Do not  
 12 even eat with him! Outsiders it  
 is no business of mine to judge.  
 No, you must judge those who are  
 inside the church, for yourselves;  
 13 as for outsiders, God will judge  
 them. *Expel the wicked from your*  
*company.*

CHAP.

6 WHEN any of you has a grievance  
 against his neighbour, do you dare  
 to go to law in a sinful pagan court,  
 instead of laying the case before  
 2 the saints? Do you not know the  
 saints are to manage the world?  
 If the world is to come under your  
 jurisdiction, are you incompetent

to adjudicate upon trifles? Do you 3  
 not know we are to manage angels,  
 let alone mundane issues? And 4  
 yet, when you have mundane issues  
 to settle, you refer them to the  
 judgment of men who from the point  
 of view of the church are of no ac-  
 count! I say this to put you to 5  
 shame. Has it come to this,  
 that there is not a single wise man  
 among you who could decide a  
 dispute between members of the  
 brotherhood, instead of one brother 6  
 going to law with another—and  
 before unbelievers too! Even to 7  
 have law-suits with one another is  
 in itself evidence of defeat. Why  
 not rather let yourselves be  
 wronged? Why not rather let 8  
 yourselves be defrauded? But  
 instead of that you inflict wrong  
 and practise frauds—and that  
 upon members of the brotherhood!  
 What! do you not know that the 9  
 wicked will not inherit the Realm  
 of God? Make no mistake about  
 it; neither the immoral nor  
 idolaters nor adulterers nor cata-  
 mites nor sodomites nor thieves 10  
 nor the lustful nor the drunken nor  
 the abusive nor robbers will inherit  
 the Realm of God. Some of you 11  
 were once like that; but you washed  
 yourselves clean, you were con-  
 secrated, you were justified in the  
 name of our Lord Jesus Christ and  
 in the Spirit of our God.

‘All things are lawful for me’? 12

Yes, but not all are good for me.

‘All things are lawful for me’?

Yes, but I am not going to let  
 anything master me.

‘Food is meant for the stomach, 13  
 and the stomach for food’?

Yes, and God will do away with  
 the one and the other.

The body is not meant for im-

## I. CORINTHIANS VII

- morality but for the Lord, and the  
 14 Lord is for the body; and the God  
 who raised the Lord will also raise  
 15 us by his power. Do you not know  
 your bodies are members of Christ?  
 Am I to take Christ's members  
 and devote them to a harlot?  
 16 Never! Do you not know that  
 he who joins himself to a harlot  
 is one with her in body  
 (for *the pair*, it is said, *shall*  
*become one flesh*),  
 17 while he who joins himself to the  
 Lord  
 is one with him in spirit.  
 18 Shun immorality! Any other sin  
 that a man commits is outside the  
 body, but the immoral man sins  
 19 against his body. Do you not  
 know your body is the temple of  
 the holy Spirit within you—the  
 Spirit you have received from God?  
 20 You are not your own, you were  
 bought for a price; then glorify  
 God with your body.

CHAP.

- 7 Now about the questions in your  
 letter.

It is an excellent thing for a man  
 to have no intercourse with a  
 2 woman; but there is so much im-  
 morality that every man had better  
 have a wife of his own and every  
 woman a husband of her own.

- 3 The husband must give the wife  
 her conjugal dues,  
 and the wife in the same way  
 must give her husband his;  
 4 the wife cannot do as she pleases  
 with her body—her husband  
 has power,  
 and in the same way the  
 husband cannot do as he  
 pleases with his body—his  
 wife has power.

- 5 Do not withhold sexual intercourse  
 from one another, unless you agree

to do so for a time in order to devote  
 yourselves to prayer. Then come  
 together again. You must not let  
 Satan tempt you through incon-  
 tinence. But what I have just said 6  
 is by way of concession, not com-  
 mand. I would like all men to be 7  
 as I am. However, everyone is  
 endowed by God in his own way;  
 he has a gift for the one life or the  
 other.

To the unmarried and to widows 8  
 I would say this: it is an excellent  
 thing if like me they remain as they 9  
 are. Still, if they cannot restrain  
 themselves, let them marry. Better  
 marry than be aflame with passion!

For married people these are 10  
 my instructions (and they are the  
 Lord's, not mine). A wife is not to  
 separate from her husband—if she 11  
 has separated, she must either re-  
 main single or be reconciled to him  
 —and a husband must not put  
 away his wife.

To other people I would say 12  
 (not the Lord):—

if any brother has a wife who is  
 not a believer,

and if she consents to live with  
 him,

he must not put her away;  
 and if any wife has a husband 13  
 who is not a believer,

and if he consents to live with  
 her,

she must not put her hus-  
 band away.

For the unbelieving husband is 14  
 consecrated in the person  
 of his wife,

and the unbelieving wife is  
 consecrated in the person  
 of the Christian brother  
 she has married;

otherwise, of course, your children  
 would be unholy instead of being  
 consecrated to God. (Should the 15



## I. CORINTHIANS VII

- unbelieving partner be determined to separate, however, separation let it be; in such cases the Christian brother or sister is not tied to marriage.) It is to a life of peace that
- 16 God has called us.\* O wife, how do you know you may not save your husband? O husband, how do you know you may not save your wife?
- 17 Only, everyone must lead the lot assigned him by the Lord; he must go on living the life in which God's call came to him. (Such is the rule I lay down for all the churches).
- 18 Was a man circumcised at the time he was called?  
Then he is not to efface the marks of it.  
Has any man been called when he was uncircumcised?  
Then he is not to get circumcised.
- 19 Circumcision counts for nothing, uncircumcision counts for nothing; obedience to God's commands is
- 20 everything. Everyone must remain in the condition of life where he was
- 21 called. You were a slave when you were called? Never mind. Of course, if you do find it possible to get free, you had better avail
- 22 yourself of the opportunity. But a slave who is called to be in the Lord is a freedman of the Lord. Just as a free man who is called is
- 23 a slave of Christ (for you were bought for a price; you must not
- 24 turn slaves to any man). Brothers, everyone must remain with God in the condition of life where he was called.
- 25 I have no orders from the Lord for unmarried women, but I will give you the opinion of one whom you can trust, after all the Lord's

\* Reading *ἡμᾶς* with B D G, the Latin version, Origen, Chrysostom, etc., instead of *ὁμᾶς*.

mercy to him. Well, what I think 26 is this: that, considering the imminent distress in these days, it would be an excellent plan for you to remain just as you are.

Are you tied to a wife? Never 27 try to untie the knot.

Are you free? Never try to get married.

Of course, if you are actually 28 married, there is no sin in that;

and if a maid marries, there is no sin in that.

(At the same time those who marry will have outward trouble—and I would spare you that.) I mean, 29 brothers,—

the interval has been shortened; so let those who have wives live as if they had none,

let mourners live as if they were 30 not mourning,

let the joyful live as if they had no joy,

let buyers live as if they had no hold on their goods,

let those who mix in the world 31 live as if they were not engrossed in it,

for the present phase of things is passing away.

I want you to be free from all 32 anxieties.

The unmarried man is anxious about the Lord's affairs,

how best to satisfy the Lord;

the married man is anxious about 33 worldly affairs,

how best to satisfy his wife—so he is torn in two directions. 34

The unmarried woman or the maid † is also anxious about the Lord's affairs,

how to be consecrated, body and spirit;

† Reading *ἡ γυνὴ ἢ ἄγαμος καὶ ἡ παρθένος* with p<sup>15</sup> B P, the Vulgate, etc.

# I. CORINTHIANS VIII, IX

once married, she is anxious about worldly affairs,

how best to satisfy her husband.

35 I am saying this in your own interests. Not that I want to restrict your freedom. It is only to secure decorum and concentration upon a life of devotion to the Lord.

36 At the same time, if any man considers he is not behaving properly to the maid who is his spiritual bride, if his passions are strong and if it must be so, then let him do what he wants—let them be married;  
37 it is no sin for him. But the man of firm purpose who has made up his mind, who, instead of being forced against his will, has determined to himself to keep his maid a spiritual bride—that man will  
38 be doing the right thing. Thus both are right alike in marrying and in refraining from marriage, but he who does not marry will be found to have done better.

39 A woman is bound to her husband during his lifetime; but if he dies, she is free to marry anyone she pleases—only, it must be a  
40 Christian. However, she is happier if she remains as she is; that is my opinion—and I suppose I have the Spirit of God as well as other people!

CHAP.

8 WITH regard to food that has been offered to idols. Here, of course, 'we all possess knowledge'! Knowledge puffs up, love builds  
2 up. Whoever imagines he has attained to some degree of knowledge, does not possess the true  
3 knowledge yet; but if anyone loves  
4 God, he is known by Him. Well then, with regard to food that has been offered to idols, I am quite aware that 'there is no such thing as an idol in the world' and that  
212

'there is only the one God.' (So-called gods there may be, in heaven or on earth—as indeed there are plenty of them, both gods and lords)—but for us

there is one God, the Father,  
from whom all comes,  
and for whom we exist;  
one Lord, Jesus Christ,  
by whom all exists,  
and by whom we exist.)

But remember, it is not everyone who has this 'knowledge.' Some who have hitherto been accustomed to idols eat the food as food which has been really offered to an idol, and so their weaker conscience is contaminated. Now mere food will not bring us any nearer to God; if we abstain we do not lose anything,  
and if we eat we do not gain anything.

But see that the exercise of your right does not prove any stumbling-block to the weak. Suppose any one sees you, a person of enlightened mind, reclining at meat inside an idol's temple; will that really 'fortify his weak conscience'? Will it not embolden him to violate his scruples of conscience by eating food that has been offered to idols? He is ruined, this weak man, ruined by your 'enlightened mind,' this brother for whose sake Christ died! By sinning against the brotherhood in this way and wounding their weaker consciences, you are sinning against Christ. Therefore if food is any hindrance to my brother's welfare, sooner than injure him I will never eat flesh as long as I live. never!

CHAP.

AM I not free? Am I not an apostle? Have I not seen Jesus our



## I. CORINTHIANS IX

Lord? Are you not the work I have accomplished in the Lord?  
 2 To other people I may be no apostle, but to you I am, for you are the seal set upon my apostleship in the  
 3 Lord. Here is my reply to my  
 4 inquisitors. Have we no right to eat and drink at the expense of  
 5 the churches? Have we no right to travel with a Christian wife, like the rest of the apostles, like the brothers of the Lord, like Cephas  
 6 himself? What! are we the only ones, myself and Barnabas, who are denied the right of abstaining  
 7 from work for our living? Does a soldier provide his own supplies? Does a man plant a vineyard without eating its produce? Does a shepherd get no drink from the milk  
 8 of the flock? Human arguments, you say? But does not Scripture  
 9 urge the very same? It is written in the law of Moses, *You must not muzzle an ox when he is treading the grain.* Is God thinking here about  
 10 cattle? Or is he speaking purely for our sakes? Assuredly for our sakes. This word was written for us, because the ploughman needs to plough in hope, and the thresher to thresh in the hope of getting a share  
 11 in the crop. If we sowed you the seeds of spiritual good, is it a great matter if we reap your worldly  
 12 goods? If others share this right over you, why not we all the more? We did not avail ourselves of it, you say? No, we do not mind any privations if we can only avoid putting any obstacle in the way of the gospel of Christ. Do you not  
 13 know that as men who perform temple-rites get their food from the temple, and as attendants at the altar get their share of the sacrifices, so the Lord's instructions were  
 14 that those who proclaim the gospel

are to get their living by the gospel? Only, I have not availed myself of 15 any of these rights, and I am not writing in order to secure any such provision for myself. I would die sooner than let anyone deprive me of this, my source of pride. What I am 16 proud of is not the mere preaching of the gospel; that I am constrained to do. Woe to me if I do not preach the gospel! I get a reward if I do 17 it of my own accord, whereas to do it otherwise is no more than for a steward to discharge his trust. And 18 my reward? This, that I can preach the gospel free of charge, that I can refrain from insisting on all my rights as a preacher of the gospel. Why, 19  
     free as I am from all, I have made myself the slave of all,  
     to win over as many as I could.  
 To Jews I have become like a 20 Jew,  
     to win over Jews;  
 to those under the Law I have become as one of themselves—  
 though I am not under the Law myself—  
     to win over those under the Law;  
 to those outside the Law I have 21 become like one of themselves—  
 though I am under Christ's law, not outside God's Law—  
     to win over those outside the Law;  
 to the weak I have become as 22 weak myself,  
     to win over the weak.  
 To all men I have become all things,  
     to save some by all and every means.  
 And I do it all for the sake of 23

# I. CORINTHIANS X

the gospel, to secure my own share  
 24 in it. Do you not know that in a  
 race, though all run, only one man  
 gains the prize? Run so as to win  
 25 the prize. Every athlete practices  
 self-restraint all round; but while  
 they do it to win a fading wreath,  
 26 we do it for an unfading. Well, I  
 run without swerving; I do not  
 plant my blows upon the empty  
 27 air—no, I maul and master my  
 body, in case, after preaching to  
 other people, I am disqualified my-  
 self.

CHAP.

10 For I would have you know this,  
 my brothers, that while our fathers  
 all lived under the cloud, all crossed  
 2 through the sea, all were baptized  
 into Moses by the cloud and by the  
 3 sea, all ate the same supernatural  
 4 food, and all drank the same super-  
 natural drink (drinking from the  
 supernatural Rock which accom-  
 5 panied them—and that Rock was  
 Christ), still with most of them God  
 was not satisfied; *they were laid low*  
 6 *in the desert*. Now this took place  
 as a warning for us, to keep us from  
 7 *craving* for evil as *they craved*. And  
 you must not be idolaters, like some  
 of them; as it is written,

*the people sat down to eat and  
 drink,*

*and they rose up to make sport.*

8 Nor must we commit immorality,  
 as some of them did—and in a single  
 day twenty-three thousand of them  
 9 fell. Nor must we presume upon  
 the Lord as some of them did—  
 only to be destroyed by serpents.  
 10 And you must not murmur, as some  
 of them did—only to be destroyed  
 11 by the Destroying angel. It all  
 happened to them by way of warn-  
 ing for others, and it was written  
 down for the purpose of instructing

us whose lot has been cast in the  
 closing hours of the world. So let 12  
 anyone who thinks he stands secure,  
 take care in case he falls. No 13  
 temptation has waylaid you that  
 is beyond man's power; trust God,  
 he will never let you be tempted  
 beyond what you can stand, but  
 when temptation comes, he will  
 provide the way out of it, so that  
 you can bear up under it.

Shun idolatry, then, my beloved. 14  
 I am speaking to sensible people; 15  
 weigh my words for yourselves.

The cup of blessing, which we 16  
 bless,

is that not participating in the  
 blood of Christ?

The bread we break,

is that not participating in the  
 body of Christ?

(for many as we are, we are one 17  
 Bread, one Body, since we all par-  
 take of the one Bread). Look at 18  
 the rites of Israel. Do not those  
 who eat the sacrifices participate in  
 the altar? Do I imply, you ask, 19  
 that 'food offered to an idol has  
 any meaning, or that an idol itself  
 means anything'? No, what I 20  
 imply is that anything people  
 sacrifice is *sacrificed to daemons, not*  
*to God*. And I do not want you to  
 participate in daemons! You can- 21  
 not drink the cup of the Lord and  
 also the cup of daemons; you can-  
 not partake of the table of the  
 Lord and also of the table of  
 daemons. *What! do we intend to* 22  
*rouse the Lord's jealousy?* Are we  
 stronger than he is?

'All things are lawful'? 23

Yes, but not all are good for  
 us.

'All things are lawful'?

Yes, but not all are edifying.

Each of us must consult his neigh- 24  
 bour's interests, not his own. Eat 25



any food that has been sold in the market, instead of letting scruples of conscience oblige you to ask any 26 questions about it; *the earth and all* 27 *its contents belong to the Lord.* When an unbeliever invites you to dinner and you agree to go, eat whatever is put before you, instead of letting scruples of conscience induce you to 28 ask any questions about it. But if someone tells you, 'This was sacrificial meat,' then do not eat it; you must consider the man who told you, and also take conscience into 29 account—his conscience, I mean, not your own; for why should one's own freedom be called in question 30 by someone else's conscience? If one partakes of food after saying a blessing over it, why should one be denounced for eating what one has 31 given thanks to God for? So whether you eat or drink, or whatever you do, let it be all done for 32 the glory of God. Put no stumbling-block in the way of Jews or Greeks or the church of God. Such is my 33 own rule, to satisfy all men in all points, aiming not at my own advantage but at the advantage of the greater number—at their salvation. 11 Copy me, as I copy Christ.

2 I commend you for always bearing me in mind and for maintaining the traditions I passed on to you. 3 But I would like you to understand this: Christ is the head of every man, man is the head of woman, 4 and God is the head of Christ. Any man who prays or prophesies with a veil on his head dishonours his 5 head, while any woman who prays or prophesies without a veil on her head dishonours her head; she is no better than a shaven woman. 6 If a woman will not veil herself, she should cut off her hair as well. But she ought to veil herself; for it

is disgraceful that a woman should have her hair cut off or be shaven. Man does not require to have a veil 7 on his head, for he represents *the likeness and supremacy of God*; but woman represents the supremacy of man. (Man was not made from 8 woman, woman was made from man; and man was not created 9 for woman, but woman for man.) Therefore, in view of the angels, 10 woman must wear a symbol of subjection on her head. (Of course, in 11 the Lord, woman does not exist apart from man, any more than man apart from woman; for as woman 12 was made from man, so man is now made from woman, while both, like all things, come from God.) Judge 13 for yourselves; is it proper for an unveiled woman to pray to God? Surely nature herself teaches you 14 that while long hair is disgraceful for a man, for a woman long hair 15 is a glory? Her hair is given her as a covering. If anyone pre- 16 sumes to raise objections on this point—well, I acknowledge no other mode of worship, and neither do the churches of God.

But in giving you the following 17 injunction I cannot commend you; for you are the worse, not the better, for assembling together. First of 18 all, in your church-meetings I am told that cliques prevail. And I partly believe it. There must be 19 parties among you, if genuine Christians are to be recognized. But this makes it impossible for 20 you to eat the 'Lord's' supper when you hold your gatherings. As you eat, everyone takes his 21 own supper; one goes hungry while another gets drunk. What! have 22 you no houses to eat and drink in? Do you think you can show disrespect to the church of God and

# I. CORINTHIANS XII

put the poor to shame? What can I say to you? Commend  
 28 you? Not for this. I passed on to you what I received from the Lord himself, namely, that on the night he was betrayed the Lord  
 24 Jesus took a loaf, and after thanking God he broke it, saying, 'This means my body broken\* for  
 25 you; do this in memory of me.' In the same way he took the cup after supper, saying, 'This cup means the new covenant ratified by my blood; as often as you drink it, do  
 26 it in memory of me.' For as often as you eat this loaf and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord's death  
 27 until he comes. Hence anyone who eats the loaf or drinks the cup of the Lord carelessly, will have to answer for a sin against the body  
 28 and the blood of the Lord. Let a man test himself; then he can eat from the loaf and drink from the  
 29 cup. For he who eats and drinks without a proper sense of the Body, eats and drinks to his own condemnation. That is why many of  
 30 you are ill and infirm, and a number  
 31 even dead. If we only judged our own lives truly, we would not come under the Lord's judgment. As it is, we are chastened when we are judged by him, so that we may not be condemned along with the world.  
 33 Well then, my brothers, when you gather for a meal, wait for  
 34 one another; and if anyone is hungry let him eat at home. You must not gather, only to incur condemnation.

\* Von Soden brackets κλάμενον, but it must be read with N° C, two correctors of D (which originally read θρυπτόμενον), G, the Old Latin and Syriac Vulgate, Chrysostom, etc. If it is a gloss, it is a correct one, unless the Lucan διδόμενον be preferred.

I will give you my instructions upon the other matters when I come.

CHAP.

BUT I want you to understand 12 about spiritual gifts, brothers. You 2 know, when you were pagans, how your impulses led you to dumb idols; so I tell you now, that no one 3 is speaking in the Spirit of God when he cries, 'Cursed be Jesus,' and that no one can say, 'Jesus is Lord,' except in the holy Spirit.

There are varieties of talents, 4 but the same Spirit; varieties of service, 5 but the same Lord; varieties of effects, 6 but the same God who effects everything in everyone.

Each receives his manifestation of 7 the Spirit for the common good. One man is granted words of wis- 8 dom by the Spirit, another words of knowledge by the same Spirit; 9 one man in the same Spirit has the gift of faith, another in the one Spirit has gifts of healing; one has 10 prophecy, another the gift of distinguishing spirits, another the gift of 'tongues' in their variety, another the gift of interpreting 'tongues.' But all these effects 11 are produced by one and the same Spirit, apportioning them severally to each individual as he pleases.

As the human body is one and 12 has many members, all the members of the body forming one body for all their number, so is it with Christ. For by one Spirit we have 13 all been baptized into one Body, Jews or Greeks, slaves or freemen; we have all been imbued with one Spirit. Why, even the body con- 14 sists not of one member but of many. If the foot were to say, 15



# I. CORINTHIANS XIII

‘Because I am not the hand, I do not belong to the body,’ that does not make it no part of the body.  
 16 If the ear were to say, ‘Because I am not the eye, I do not belong to the body,’ that does not make it  
 17 no part of the body. If the body were all eye, where would hearing be? If the body were all ear, where  
 18 would smell be? As it is, God has set the members in the body, each  
 19 as it pleased him. If they all made up one member, what would become  
 20 of the body? As it is, there are  
 21 many members and one body. The eye cannot say to the hand, ‘I have no need of you,’ nor again the head to the feet, ‘I have no need of you.’  
 22 Quite the contrary. We cannot do without those very members of the body which are considered rather  
 23 delicate, just as the parts we consider rather dishonourable are the very parts we invest with special honour; our indecorous parts get  
 24 a special care and attention which does not need to be paid to our more decorous parts. Yes, God has tempered the body together, with a special dignity for the  
 25 inferior parts, so that there may be no disunion in the body, but that the various members should have a common concern for one  
 26 another. Thus  
     if one member suffers,  
         all the members share its suffering;  
     if one member is honoured,  
         all the members share its honour.  
 27 Now you are Christ’s Body, and  
 28 severally members of it. That is to say, God has set people within the church to be first of all apostles, secondly prophets, thirdly teachers, then workers of miracles, then healers, helpers, administrators,

and speakers in ‘tongues’ of various kinds. Are all apostles? Are 29 all prophets? Are all teachers? Are all workers of miracles? Are 30 all endowed with the gifts of healing? Are all able to speak in ‘tongues’? Are all able to interpret?

Set your hearts on the higher 31 talents. And yet I will go on to show you a still higher path. Thus,

I may speak with the tongues of 13 men and of angels,

but if I have no love,

I am a noisy gong or a clanging cymbal;

I may prophesy, fathom all 2 mysteries and secret lore,

I may have such absolute faith that I can move hills from their place,

but if I have no love,

I count for nothing;

I may distribute all I possess in 3 charity,

I may give up my body to be burnt,

but if I have no love,

I make nothing of it.

Love is very patient, very kind. 4 Love knows no jealousy; love makes no parade, gives itself no airs, is never rude, never selfish, 5 never irritated, *never resentful*; love is never glad when others go 6 wrong, love is gladdened by goodness, always slow to expose, always 7 eager to believe the best, always hopeful, always patient. Love 8 never disappears. As for prophesying, it will be superseded; as for ‘tongues,’ they will cease; as for knowledge, it will be superseded. For we only know bit by bit, and 9 we only prophesy bit by bit; but 10 when the perfect comes, the imperfect will be superseded. When 11 I was a child, I talked like a child,

# I. CORINTHIANS XIV

I thought like a child, I argued like a child; now that I am a man, I am done with childish ways.

12 At present we only see the baffling reflections in a mirror, but then it will be face to face; at present I am learning bit by bit, but then I shall understand, as all along I have myself been understood.

13 Thus 'faith and hope and love last on, these three,' but the 14 greatest of all is love. Make

love your aim, and then set your heart on the spiritual gifts—especially upon prophecy. For he who speaks in a 'tongue' addresses God not men; no one understands him; he is talking of divine secrets in the Spirit. On the other hand, he who prophesies addresses men in words that edify, encourage, and console them. He who speaks in a 'tongue' edifies himself, whereas he who prophesies edifies the church. Now I would like you all to speak with 'tongues,' but I would prefer you to prophesy. The man who prophesies is higher than the man who speaks with 'tongues'—unless indeed the latter interprets, so that the church may get edification. Suppose now I were to come to you speaking with 'tongues,' my brothers; what good could I do you, unless I had some revelation or knowledge or prophecy or teaching to lay before you? Inanimate instruments, such as the flute or the harp, may give a sound, but if no intervals occur in their music, how can one make out the air that is being played either on flute or on harp? If the trumpet sounds indistinct, who will get ready for the fray? Well, it is the same

with yourselves. Unless your tongue utters language that is readily understood, how can people make out what you say? You will be pouring words into the empty air! There are ever so many kinds of language in the world, every one of them meaning something. Well, unless I understand the meaning of what is said to me, I shall appear to the speaker to be talking gibberish, and to my mind he will be talking gibberish himself. So with yourselves; since your heart is set on possessing 'spirits,' make the edification of the church your aim in this desire to excel. Thus a man who speaks in a 'tongue' must pray for the gift of interpreting it. For if I pray with a 'tongue,' my spirit prays, no doubt, but my mind is no use to anyone. Very well then, I will pray in the Spirit, but I will also pray with my mind; I will sing praise in the Spirit, but I will also sing praise with my mind. Otherwise, suppose you are blessing God in the Spirit, how is the outsider to say 'Amen' to your thanksgiving? The man does not understand what you are saying! Your thanksgiving may be all right, but then—the other man is not edified! Thank God, I speak in 'tongues' more than any of you; but in church I would rather say five words with my own mind for the instruction of other people than ten thousand words in a 'tongue.'

Brothers, do not be children in the sphere of intelligence; in evil be mere infants, but be mature in your intelligence. It is written the Law, *By men of alien tongues and by the lips of aliens I will speak to this People; but even so, they will not listen to me, saith the Lord.*



# I. CORINTHIANS XV

22 Thus 'tongues' are intended as a sign, not for believers but for unbelievers; whereas prophesying is meant for believers, not for 23 unbelievers. Hence if at a gathering of the whole church everybody speaks with 'tongues,' and if outsiders or unbelievers come in, will they not say you are insane? 24 Whereas, if everybody prophesies, and some unbeliever or outsider comes in, he is exposed by all, 25 brought to book by all; the secrets of his heart are brought to light, and so, falling on his face, *he will worship God*, declaring, '*God is really among you.*' 26 Very well then, brothers; when you meet together, each contributes something—a song of praise, a lesson, a revelation, a 'tongue,' an interpretation? Good, but let 27 everything be for edification. As for speaking in a 'tongue,' let only two or at most three speak at one meeting, and that in turn. Also, 28 let someone interpret; if there is no interpreter, let the speaker keep quiet in church and address 29 himself and God. Let only two or three prophets speak, while the rest exercise their judgment upon what 30 is said. Should a revelation come to one who is seated, the first 31 speaker must be quiet. You can all prophesy quite well, one after another, so as to let all learn and 32 all be encouraged. Prophets can control their own prophetic spirits, 33 for God is a God not of disorder but 37 of harmony.\* If anyone considers himself a prophet or gifted with the Spirit, let him understand that

\* Transposing vers. 33b-36 to the end of the chapter, in order to preserve the sequence of thought. There is some early textual evidence for reading 34-35 after 40.

what I write to you is a command of the Lord. Anyone who disregards 38 this will be himself disregarded.

To sum up, my brothers. Set 39 your heart on the prophetic gift, and do not put any check upon speaking in 'tongues'; but let 40 everything be done decorously and in order.

As is the rule in all churches of 33 the saints, women must keep quiet 34 at gatherings of the church. They are not allowed to speak; they must take a subordinate place, as the Law enjoins. If they want any 35 information, let them ask their husbands at home; it is disgraceful for a woman to speak in church. You challenge this rule? Pray, 36 did God's word start from you? Are you the only people it has reached?

CHAP.

Now, brothers, I would have you 15 know the gospel I once preached to you, the gospel you received, the gospel in which you have your footing, the gospel by which you 2 are saved—provided you adhere to my statement of it—unless indeed your faith was all haphazard.

First and foremost, I passed on 3 to you what I had myself received, namely, that Christ died for our sins as the scriptures had said, that he 4 was buried, that he rose on the third day as the scriptures had said, and 5 that he was seen by Cephas, then by the twelve; after that, he was seen 6 by over five hundred brothers all at once, the majority of whom survive to this day, though some have died; after that, he was seen 7 by James, then by all the apostles, and finally he was seen by myself, 8 by this so-called 'abortion' of an apostle. For I am the very least 9

# I. CORINTHIANS XV

of the apostles, unfit to bear the name of apostle, since I persecuted the church of God. But by God's grace I am what I am. The grace he showed me did not go for nothing; no, I have done far more work than all of them—though it was not I but God's grace at my side. At any rate, whether I or they have done most, such is what we preach, such is what you believed.

Now if we preach that Christ rose from the dead, how can certain individuals among you assert that 'there is no such thing as a resurrection of the dead'? If 'there is no such thing as a resurrection from the dead,' then even Christ did not rise; and if Christ did not rise, then our preaching has gone for nothing, and your faith has gone for nothing too. Besides, we are detected bearing false witness to God by affirming of him that he raised Christ—whom he did not raise, if after all dead men never rise. For if dead men never rise, Christ did not rise either; and if Christ did not rise, your faith is futile, you are still in your sins. More than that: those who have slept the sleep of death in Christ have perished after all. Ah, if in this life we have nothing but a mere hope in Christ, we are of all men to be pitied most!

But it is not so! Christ did rise from the dead, he was the first to be reaped of those who sleep in death. For since death came by man, by man came also resurrection from the dead; as all die in Adam, so shall all be made alive in Christ.

But each in his own division:—Christ the first to be reaped; after

that, all who belong to Christ, at his arrival. Then comes the end, when he hands over his royal power to God the Father, after putting down all other rulers, all other authorities and powers. For he must reign until all his foes are put under his feet. (Death is the last foe to be put down.) For God has put everything under his feet. When it is said that everything has been put under him, plainly that excludes Him who put everything under him; and when everything is put under him, then the Son himself will be put under Him who put everything under him, so that God may be everything to everyone.

Otherwise, if there is no such thing as a resurrection, what is the meaning of people getting baptized on behalf of their dead? If dead men do not rise at all, why do people get baptized on their behalf? Yes, and why am I myself in danger every hour? (Not a day but I am at death's door! I swear it by my pride in you, brothers, through Christ Jesus our Lord.) What would it avail me that, humanly speaking, I 'fought with wild beasts' at Ephesus? If dead men do not rise, let us eat and drink, for we will be dead to-morrow!

Make no mistake about this: 'bad company is the ruin of good character.' Get back to your sober senses and avoid sin, for some of you—and I say this to your shame—some of you are insensible to God.

But, someone will ask, 'how do the dead rise? What kind of body have they when they come?' Foolish man! What you sow never comes to life unless it dies. And what you sow is not the body that is to be; it is a mere grain of wheat, for example, or some other seed.



# I. CORINTHIANS XVI

38 God gives it a body as he pleases,  
gives each kind of seed a body of its  
39 own. Flesh is not all the same;  
there is human flesh, there is flesh  
40 of beasts, flesh of birds, and flesh  
of fish. There are heavenly bodies  
and also earthly bodies, but the  
splendour of the heavenly is one  
thing and the splendour of the  
41 earthly is another. There is a  
splendour of the sun and a splen-  
dour of the moon and a splendour  
of the stars—for one star differs  
42 from another in splendour. So with  
the resurrection of the dead :

what is sown is mortal,  
what rises is immortal;  
43 sown inglorious,  
it rises in glory;  
sown in weakness,  
it rises in power;  
44 sown an animate body,  
it rises a spiritual body.

As there is an animate body, so  
45 there is a spiritual body. Thus it  
is written,

*'The first man, Adam, became an  
animate being,  
the last Adam a life-giving  
Spirit';*

46 but the animate, not the spiritual,  
comes first,  
and only then the spiritual.

47 *Man the first is from the earth,  
material;*

Man the second is from heaven.

48 As Man the material is, so are the  
material;

as Man the heavenly is, so are  
the heavenly.

49 Thus, as we have borne the like-  
ness of material Man,  
so we are to bear \* the likeness  
of the heavenly Man.

50 I tell you this, my brothers, flesh

\* Reading *φορέσωμεν* with B 181 arm  
aeth, etc., instead of the strongly sup-  
ported *φορέσσωμεν*.

and blood cannot inherit the Realm  
of God, nor can the perishing  
inherit the imperishable. Here is 51  
a secret truth for you : not all of  
us are to die, but all of us are to be  
changed—changed in a moment, 52  
in the twinkling of an eye, at the  
last trumpet-call. The trumpet will  
sound, the dead will rise imperish-  
able, and we shall be changed.  
For this perishing body must be 53  
invested with the imperishable,  
and this mortal body invested with  
immortality; and when this mortal 54  
body has been invested with im-  
mortality,† then the saying of  
Scripture will be realized,

*Death is swallowed up in victory.*

*O Death, where is your victory?* 55

*O Death, where is your sting? †*

The victory is ours, thank God! 57  
He makes it ours by our Lord Jesus  
Christ. Well then, my beloved 58  
brothers, hold your ground, im-  
movable; abound in work for the  
Lord at all times, for you may be  
sure that in the Lord your labour  
is never thrown away.

CHAP.

WITH regard to the collection for 16  
the saints, you must carry out the  
same arrangements as I made for  
the churches of Galatia. On the first 2  
day of the week let each of you  
put aside a sum from his weekly  
gains, so that the money may not  
have to be collected when I come.  
On my arrival I will furnish 3

† Omitting *τὸ φθαρτὸν τοῦτο ἐνδύσεται  
ἀφθαρσίαν, καὶ* with N\* C\* and most of the  
versions. The phrase was probably in-  
serted for the sake of completing the  
parallel.

‡ After this verse, the words "The  
sting of sin is death, and the strength of  
sin is the Law" have been added either  
as a gloss by some editor or perhaps as a  
marginal note by Paul himself.

## I. CORINTHIANS XVI

- credentials for those whom you select, and send them to convey  
 4 your bounty to Jerusalem; if the sum makes it worth my while to go too, they shall accompany me.  
 5 I mean to visit you after my tour in Macedonia, for I am going to make a tour through Macedonia.  
 6 The chances are, I shall spend some time with you, possibly even pass the winter with you, so that you may speed me forward on any  
 7 journey that lies before me. I do not care about seeing you at this moment merely in the by-going; my hope is to stay among you for some time, with the Lord's permission. I am staying on for the  
 8 present at Ephesus till Pentecost,  
 9 for I have wide opportunities here for active service—and there are many to thwart me.  
 10 If Timotheus arrives, see that you make him feel quite at home with you; he carries on the work of the  
 11 Lord as I do. So let no one disparage him. When he leaves to rejoin me, speed him cordially on his journey, for I am expecting him along with the other brothers.  
 12 As for our brother Apollos, I urged him to accompany the other brothers on a visit to you; he will come as soon as he has time, but

for the present it is not the will of God that he should visit you.

Watch, stand firm in the faith, 13 play the man, be strong! Let all 14 you do be done in love.

I ask this favour of you, my bro- 15 thers. The household of Stephanas, you know, was the first to be reaped in Achaia, and they have laid themselves out to serve the saints. Well, 16 I want you to put yourselves under people like that, under everyone who sets his hand to the work.

I am glad that Stephanas and 17 Fortunatus and Achaicus have arrived, for they have made up for your absence. They refresh my 18 spirit as they do your own. You should appreciate men like that.

The churches of Asia salute you. 19 Aquila and Prisca, with the church that meets in their house, salute you warmly in the Lord. All the 20 brotherhood salutes you. Salute one another with a holy kiss.

I Paul write this salutation with 21 my own hand. 'If anyone has no 22 love for the Lord, God's curse be on him! Maran atha!\*' The 23 grace of the Lord Jesus be with you. My love be with you all in 24 Christ Jesus.' [Amen.]

\* An Aramaic phrase, probably meaning "Lord, come" (see Rev. xxii. 20).



## THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE CORINTHIANS

CHAP.

1 PAUL an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, and brother Timotheus, to the church of God at Corinth as well as to all the saints throughout the whole of Achaia: grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of tender mercies and the God of all comfort, who comforts me in all my distress, so that I am able to comfort people who are in any distress by the comfort with which I myself am comforted by God. For as the sufferings of Christ are abundant in my case, so my comfort is also abundant through Christ. If I am in distress, it is in the interests of your comfort and salvation; if I am comforted, it is in the interests of your comfort, which is effective as it nerves you to endure the same sufferings as I suffer myself. Hence my hope for you is well-founded, since I know that as you share the sufferings you share the comfort also.

8 Now I would like you to know about the distress which befell me in Asia, brothers. I was crushed, crushed far more than I could stand, so much so that I despaired even of life; in fact I told myself it was the sentence of death. But that was to make me rely not on myself but on the God who raises the dead; he rescued me from so terrible a death, he rescues still, and

I rely upon him for the hope that he will continue to rescue me. Let me have your co-operation in prayer, so that many a soul may render thanks to him on my behalf for the boon which many have been the means of him bestowing on myself.

My proud boast is the testimony of my conscience that holiness and godly sincerity, not worldly cunning but the grace of God, have marked my conduct in the outside world and in particular my relations with you. You don't have to read between the lines of my letters; you can understand them. Yes, I trust you will understand the full meaning of my letters as you have partly understood the meaning of my life, namely that I am your source of pride (as you are mine) on the Day of our Lord Jesus. Relying on this I meant to visit you first, to let you have a double delight; I intended to take you on my way to Macedonia, and to visit you again on my way back from Macedonia, so as to be sped by you on my journey to Judaea. Such was my intention. Now, have I shown myself 'fickle'? When I propose some plan, do I propose it in a worldly way, ready to mean 'no' as well as 'yes'? By the good faith of God, my word to you was not 'yes and no'; for the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was proclaimed among you by us (by myself and Silvanus and Timotheus) was not 'yes and no'—the divine 'yes' has at last sounded

## II. CORINTHIANS II, III

20 in him, for in him is the 'yes' that affirms all the promises of God. Hence it is through him that we affirm our 'amen' in worship, to the glory of God. And it is God who confirms me along with you in Christ, who consecrated me, who stamped me with his seal and gave me the Spirit as a pledge in my heart. I call God to witness against my soul, it was to spare you that I refrained from revisiting Corinth. (Not that we lord it over your faith—no, we co-operate for your joy: you have a standing of your own in the faith.) I decided I would not pay you another painful visit. For if I pain you, then who is to give me pleasure? None but the very people I am paining! So the very reason I wrote was that I might not come only to be pained by those who ought to give me joy; I relied on you all, I felt sure that my joy would be a joy for every one of you. For I wrote you in sore distress and misery of heart, with many a tear—not to pain you but to convince you of my love, my special love for you. If a certain individual has been causing pain, he has been causing pain not so much to me as to all of you—at anyrate (for I am not going to overstate the case) to a section of you. This censure from the majority is severe enough for the individual in question, so that instead of censuring you should now forgive him and comfort him, in case the man is overwhelmed by excessive remorse. So I beg you to reinstate him in your love. For my aim in writing was simply to test you, to see if you were absolutely obedient. If you forgive the man, I forgive him too; anything I had to forgive him has been forgiven

in the presence of Christ for your sakes, in case Satan should take 11 advantage of our position—for I know his manœuvres!

Well, when I reached Troas to 12 preach the gospel of Christ, though I had a wide opportunity in the Lord, my spirit could not rest, because I did not find Titus my brother there; so I said goodbye and went off to Macedonia. Wherever I go, 14 thank God, he makes my life a constant pageant of triumph in Christ, diffusing the perfume of his knowledge everywhere by me. I live for God as the fragrance of 15 Christ breathed alike on those who are being saved and on those who are perishing, to the one a deadly 16 fragrance that makes for death, to the other a vital fragrance that makes for life. And who is qualified for this career? I am, for I 17 am not like most, adulterating the word of God; like a man of sincerity, like a man of God, I speak the word in Christ before the very presence of God.

CHAP.

AM I beginning again to 'commend' myself? Do I need, like some people, to be commended by written certificates either to you or from you? Why, you are my 2 certificate yourselves, written on my heart, recognized and read by all men; you make it obvious that 3 you are a letter of Christ which I have been employed to inscribe, *written* not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, not *on tablets of stone* but *on tablets of the human heart*. Such is the confidence I possess through Christ in my service of God. It is not that I 4 am personally qualified to form 5 any judgment by myself; my



## II. CORINTHIANS IV

6 qualifications come from God, and he has further qualified me to be the minister of a new covenant—a covenant not of written law but of spirit; for the written law kills but 7 the Spirit makes alive. Now if the administration of death which was engraved in letters of stone, was invested with glory—so much so, that the children of Israel could not gaze at the face of *Moses* on account of the *dazzling glory* that was fading 8 from *his face*; surely the administration of the Spirit must be invested with still greater glory. If 9 there was glory in the administration that condemned, then the administration that acquits abounds 10 far more in glory (indeed, in view of the transcendent glory, *what was glorious has thus no glory* at all); 11 if what faded had its glory, then what lasts will be invested with far 12 greater glory. Such being my hope 13 then, I am quite frank and open—not like *Moses*, who *used to hang a veil over his face* to keep the children of Israel from gazing at the last rays 14 of a fading glory. Besides, their minds were dulled, for to this very day, when the Old Testament is read aloud, the same veil hangs. Veiled from them the fact that the 15 glory fades in Christ! Yes, down to this day, whenever *Moses* is read aloud, the veil rests on their heart; 16 though *whenever they turn to the Lord, the veil is removed*. (The Lord means the Spirit, and wherever the Spirit of the Lord is, there is 17 open freedom.) But we all mirror *the glory of the Lord* with face unveiled, and so we are being transformed into the same likeness as himself, passing from one glory to another—for this comes of the 4 Lord the Spirit. Hence, as I hold this ministry by God's mercy

to me, I never lose heart in it; I disown those practices which 2 very shame conceals from view; I do not go about it craftily; I do not falsify the word of God; I state the truth openly and so commend myself to every man's conscience before God. Even if 3 my gospel is veiled, it is only veiled in the case of the perishing; there the god of this world has 4 blinded the minds of unbelievers, to prevent them seeing the light thrown by the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the likeness of God. (It is Christ Jesus as Lord, not myself, that I proclaim; I am simply 5 a servant of yours for Jesus' sake.) For God who said, "Light shall 6 shine out of darkness," has shone within my heart to illuminate men with the knowledge of God's glory in the face of Christ.

But I possess this treasure in a 7 frail vessel of earth, to show that the transcending power belongs to God, not to myself; on every side I am 8 harried but not hemmed in, perplexed but not despairing, persecuted but not abandoned, struck 9 down but not destroyed—

wherever I go, I am being killed 10 in the body as Jesus was, so that the life of Jesus may come out in my body : every day of my life I am being 11 given over to death for Jesus' sake, so that the life of Jesus may come out within my mortal flesh.

In me then death is active, in 12 you life. But since our spirit of 13 faith is the same, therefore—as it is written *I believed and so I spoke*—I too believe and so I speak, sure that 14 He who raised the Lord Jesus will raise me too with Jesus and set me

## II. CORINTHIANS V, VI

15 at your side in his presence. \* It is all in your interests, so that the more grace abounds, the more thanksgiving may rise and redound 16 to the glory of God. Hence I never lose heart; though my outward man decays, my inner man is renewed day after day. The slight trouble of the passing hour \* results in a solid glory past all comparison, 18 for those of us whose eyes are on the unseen, not on the seen; for the seen is transient, the unseen eternal.

5 I know that if this earthly tent of mine is taken down, I get a home from God, made by no human 2 hands, eternal in the heavens. It makes me sigh indeed, this yearning to be under the cover of my heavenly 3 habitation, since I am sure that once so covered I shall not be 4 'naked' at the hour of death. I do sigh within this tent of mine with heavy anxiety—not that I want to be stripped, no, but to be under the cover of the other, to have my mortal element absorbed 5 by life. I am prepared for this change by God, who has given me the Spirit as its pledge and instal- 6 ment. Come what may, then, I am confident; I know that while I reside in the body I am away from 7 the Lord (for I have to lead my life 8 in faith, without seeing him): and in this confidence I would fain get away from the body and re- 9 side with the Lord. Hence also I am eager to satisfy him, whether in 10 the body or away from it; for we have all to appear without disguise before the tribunal of Christ, each to be requited for what he has done with his body, well or ill.

11 If I 'appeal to the interests of men,' then, it is with the fear of the Lord before my mind. What I am

is plain to God without disguise, plain also, I trust, to your own conscience. This is not 'recommending 12 myself to you again'; it is giving you an incentive to be proud of me, which you can use against men who are proud of externals instead of the inward reality. 'I am beside my- 13 self,' am I? Well, that is between myself and God. I am 'sane,' am I? Well, that is in your interests; for 14 I am controlled by the love of Christ, convinced that as One has died for all, then all have died, and 15 that he died for all in order to have the living live no longer for themselves but for him who died and rose for them. Once convinced of this, 16 then, I estimate no one by what is external; even though I once 17 estimated Christ by what is external, I no longer estimate him thus. There is a new creation 17 whenever a man comes to be in Christ; what is old is gone, the new has come. It is all the doing 18 of the God who has reconciled me to himself through Christ and has permitted me to be a minister of his reconciliation. For in Christ God 19 reconciled the world to himself instead of counting men's trespasses against them; and he entrusted me with the message of his reconciliation. So I am an envoy for Christ, 20 God appealing by me, as it were— be reconciled to God, I entreat you on behalf of Christ. For our sakes 21 He made him to be sin who himself knew nothing of sin, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God. I appeal to you too, as 6 a worker with God, do not receive the grace of God in vain. (He saith, 2

*I have heard you in the time of favour,  
and helped you on the day of salvation.*

\* Omitting ἡμῶν.



## II. CORINTHIANS VII

Well, here is *the time of favour*, here  
 3 is *the day of salvation*.) I put no  
 obstacle in the path of any, so that  
 my ministry may not be discredited;  
 4 I prove myself at all points a true  
 minister of God, by great endurance,  
 by suffering, by troubles, by calam-  
 5 ities, by lashes, by imprisonment;  
 mobbed, toiling, sleepless, starving;  
 6 with innocence, insight, patience,  
 kindness, the holy Spirit, unaffected  
 7 love, true words, the power of  
 God; with the weapons of integrity  
 8 for attack or for defence, amid  
 honour and dishonour, amid evil  
 report and good report, an 'im-  
 9 postor' but honest, 'unknown'  
 but well-known, *dying* but here I  
 am *alive*, *chastened* but *not killed*,  
 10 grieved but always glad, a 'pauper',  
 but the means of wealth to many,  
 without a penny but possessed of all.

11 O Corinthians, I am keeping  
 nothing back from you; my *heart*  
 12 is *wide open* for you. 'Restraint'?  
 13 —that lies with you, not me. A  
 fair exchange now, as the children  
 say! Open your hearts wide to me.

✓ 14 [Keep out of all incongruous ties  
 with unbelievers.

→ What have righteousness and  
 iniquity in common,  
 or how can light associate with  
 darkness?

15 What harmony can there be be-  
 tween Christ and Beliar,

→ or what business has a believer  
 with an unbeliever?

16 What compact can there be be-  
 tween God's temple and  
 idols?

→ For we are the temple of the living  
 God—as God has said,

*I will dwell and move among  
 them,*

*I will be their God and they shall  
 be my people.*

→ 17 Therefore come away from them,

*separate, saith the Lord,  
 touch not what is unclean;  
 then I will receive you,  
 I will be a Father to you, 18  
 and you shall be my sons and  
 daughters,  
 saith the Lord almighty.*

As these great promises are ours, 7  
 beloved, let us cleanse ourselves  
 from everything that contaminates  
 either flesh or spirit; let us be  
 fully consecrated by reverence  
 for God].\* Make a place for me 2  
 in your hearts; I have wronged  
 no one, ruined no one, taken  
 advantage of no one.

I am not saying this to condemn 3  
 you. Condemn you? Why, I re-  
 peat, you are in my very heart, and  
 you will be there in death and life  
 alike. I have absolute confidence 4  
 in you, I am indeed proud of you,  
 you are a perfect comfort to me, I  
 am overflowing with delight, for all  
 the trouble I have to bear. For 5  
 I got no relief from the strain of  
 things, even when I reached Mace-  
 donia; it was trouble at every turn,  
 wrangling all round me, fears in  
 my own mind. But the God who 6  
 comforts the dejected comforted  
 me by the arrival of Titus. Yes, 7  
 and by more than his arrival, by  
 the comfort which you had been  
 to him; for he gave me such a report  
 of how you longed for me, how  
 sorry you were, and how eagerly  
 you took my part, that it added to  
 my delight. In fact, if I did pain 8  
 you by that letter, I do not regret  
 it. I did regret it when I dis-  
 covered † that my letter had pained

\* This bracketed paragraph (vi. 14-  
 vii. 1) belongs to some other part of Paul's  
 correspondence with the Corinthian  
 church.

† Reading βλέπων with the Vulgate,  
 which "alone has preserved the true read-  
 ing, ω being read as ω" (Hort).

## II. CORINTHIANS VIII

9 you even for the time being, but I am glad now—not glad that you were pained but glad that your pain induced you to repent. For you were pained as God meant you to be pained, and so you got no harm from what I did; the pain God is allowed to guide ends in a saving repentance never to be regretted, whereas the world's pain ends in death. See what this pain divine has done for you, how serious it has made you, how keen to clear yourselves, how indignant, how alarmed, how eager for me, how determined, how relentless! You have shown in every way that you were honest in the business. So my letter was written to you, not on account of the offender nor for the sake of the injured party, but in order to let you realize before God how seriously you do care for me. That is what comforts me. And over and above my personal comfort, I was specially delighted at the delight of Titus. You have all set his mind at rest. I told him of my pride in you, and I have not been disappointed. No, just as all I have had to say to you has been true, so all I said about you to Titus, all my pride in you, has also proved true. His own heart goes out to you all the more when he remembers how you all obeyed him, and how you received him with reverence and trembling. I am glad to have full confidence in you.

CHAP.

8 Now, brothers, I have to tell you about the grace God has given to the churches of Macedonia. Amid a severe ordeal of trouble, their overflowing joy and their deep poverty together have poured out a flood of rich generosity; I can

testify that up to their means, aye and beyond their means, they have given—begging me of their own accord, most urgently, for the favour of contributing to the support of the saints. They have done more than I expected; they gave themselves to the Lord, to begin with, and then (for so God willed it) they put themselves at my disposal. This has led me to ask Titus to complete the arrangements for the same gracious contribution among yourselves, as it was he who started it. Now then, you are to the front in everything, in faith, in utterance, in knowledge, in all zeal, and in love for us\*—do come to the front in this gracious enterprise as well. I am not issuing any orders, only using the zeal of others to prove how sterling your own love is. (You know how gracious our Lord Jesus Christ was; rich though he was, he became poor for the sake of you, that by his poverty you might be rich.) But I will tell you what I think about it; it is to your interest to go on with this enterprise, for you started it last year, you were the first not merely to do anything but to want to do anything. Now, carry it through, so that your readiness to take it up may be equalled by the way you carry it through—so far as your means allow. If only one is ready to give, according to his means, it is acceptable; he is not asked to give what he has not got. This does not mean that other people are to be relieved and you to suffer: it is a matter of give and take; at the present moment your surplus goes to make up what they

\* Reading ἐξ ὧν ἐν ἡμῖν with N C D G, almost all the evidence of the Latin and Syriac versions, etc.



## II. CORINTHIANS IX

lack, in order that their surplus may go to make up what you lack.

15 Thus it is to be give and take—as it is written,

*He who got much had nothing over,*

*and he who got little had not too little.*

16 Thanks be to God who has inspired Titus with an interest in

17 you equal to my own; he has indeed responded to my request, but he is off to you by his own choice,

18 so keen is his interest in you. Along with him I am sending that brother whose services to the gospel are

19 praised by all the churches; besides, he has been appointed by the churches to travel with me on the business of administering this fund

to the glory of the Lord. His appointment has my full consent,

20 for I want to take precautions against any risk of suspicion in connection with the administration

21 of this charity; I aim at being above reproach not only from God

22 but also from men. Along with them I am also sending our brother: I have had ample proof of his keen

interest on many occasions, and it is specially keen on this occasion, as he has absolute confidence in

23 you. Titus is my colleague, he shares my work for you, and these brothers of mine are apostles of

24 the church, a credit to Christ. So let them have proof of how you can love, and of my reasons for being proud of you; it will be a proof

9 read by the churches. Indeed it is quite superfluous for me to be writing to you about this charit-

2 able service to the saints; I know how willing you are, I am proud of it, I have boasted of you to the Macedonians: "Achaia,"

I tell them, "was all ready last

year." And your zeal has been a stimulus to the majority of them. At the same time I am sending these

brothers just in case my pride in you should prove an empty boast in this particular instance; I want

you to be "all ready," as I have been telling them that you would be, in case any Macedonians accom-

4 pany me and find you are not ready—which would make me (not to speak of yourselves) ashamed of

5 having been so sure. That is why I have thought it necessary to ask these brothers to go on in advance

and get your promised contribution ready in good time. I want it to be forthcoming as a generous

gift, not as money wrung out of you. Mark this: he who sows

6 sparingly will reap sparingly, and he who sows generously will reap a generous harvest. Everyone is

7 to give what he has made up his mind to give; there is to be no grudging or compulsion about it, for God loves the giver who

gives cheerfully. God is able to 8 bless you with ample means, so that you may always have quite

enough for any emergency of your own and ample besides for any kind act to others; as it is written, 9

*He scatters his gifts to the poor broadcast,*

*his charity lasts for ever.*

He who furnishes the sower with 10 seed and with bread to eat will supply seed for you and multiply

it; he will increase the crop of your charities—you will be enriched on 11

all hands, so that you can be generous on all occasions, and your generosity, of which I am the

agent, will make men give thanks to God; for the service rendered 12 by this fund does more than supply the wants of the saints, it overflows

## II. CORINTHIANS X, XI

with many a cry of thanks to God.

- 13 This service shows what you are, it makes men praise God for the way you have come under the gospel of Christ which you confess, and for the generosity of your contributions to themselves and to all; 14 they are drawn to you and pray for you, on account of the surpassing grace which God has shown to 15 you. Thanks be to God for his unspeakable gift !

CHAP.

- 10 I APPEAL to you myself by the gentleness and consideration of Christ—the Paul who is ‘humble enough to your face when he is with you, but outspoken enough 2 when he gets away from you.’ I beg of you that when I do come I may not have to speak out and be peremptory; but my mind is made up to tackle certain people who have made up their minds that I move on the low level of the flesh. 3 I do live in the flesh, but I do not 4 make war as the flesh does; the weapons of my warfare are not weapons of the flesh, but divinely 5 strong to demolish fortresses—I demolish theories and any rampart thrown up to resist the knowledge of God, I take every project prisoner to make it obey Christ, I 6 am prepared to court-martial anyone who remains insubordinate, once your submission is complete. 7 Look at this obvious fact. So-and-so is perfectly sure he ‘belongs to Christ’? Well then, let him understand, on second thoughts, that I ‘belong to Christ’ as much 8 as he does. Even supposing I were to speak somewhat freely of my authority (and the Lord gave it to me for building you up, not for demolishing you), I would feel

quite justified. But I am not going 9 to seem as if I were ‘overawing you with a letter,’ so to speak. My opponent says, ‘Paul’s letters 10 are weighty and telling, but his personality is weak and his delivery is beneath contempt.’ Let him 11 understand that I will act when I arrive, as forcibly as I express myself by letter when I am absent. I do not venture to class myself 12 or to compare myself with certain exalted individuals ! They belong to the class of self-praisers; while I limit myself to my own sphere,\* I compare myself with my own standard, and so my boasting never 13 goes beyond the limit—it is determined by the limits of the sphere marked out for me by God. That sphere stretches to include yourselves; I am not overstepping the 14 limit, as if you lay beyond my sphere; I was the very first to reach you with the gospel of Christ. I do not boast beyond my limits 15 in a sphere where other men have done the work; my hope rather is that the growth of your faith will allow me to enlarge the range of my appointed sphere and preach 16 the gospel in the lands that lie beyond you, instead of boasting within another’s province over work that is already done. How- 17 ever, *let him who boasts boast of the Lord*; for it is not the self-praiser 18 with his own recommendations who is accepted, it is the man whom the Lord recommends.

CHAP.

I WISH you would put up with 11 a little ‘folly’ from me. Do put up with me, for I feel a divine 2 jealousy on your behalf; I be-

\* Omitting οὐ συνιοῦσιν ἡμεῖς δὲ with D\*, etc.



## II. CORINTHIANS XI

trothed you as a chaste maiden to  
 present you to your one husband  
 3 Christ, but I am afraid of your  
 thoughts getting seduced from a  
 single devotion to Christ, just as  
*the serpent beguiled Eve* with his  
 4 cunning. You put up with it all  
 right, whensome interloper preaches  
 a second Jesus (not the Jesus I  
 preached), or when you are treated  
 to a Spirit different from the Spirit  
 you once received, and to a different  
 gospel from what I gave you! Why  
 5 not put up with me? I hold I  
 am not one whit inferior to these  
 6 precious 'apostles'! I am no  
 speaker, perhaps, but knowledge  
 I do possess; I never failed to make  
 myself intelligible to you.

7 But perhaps I did wrong in  
 taking a humble place that you  
 might have a high one—I mean,  
 in preaching the gospel of God to  
 8 you for nothing! I made a levy  
 on other churches, I took pay from  
 9 them so as to minister to you; even  
 when I ran short, during my stay  
 with you, I was no encumbrance  
 to anybody, for the brothers who  
 came from Macedonia supplied my  
 wants. Thus I kept myself, as I  
 intend to keep myself, from being  
 10 a burden to you in any way. By  
 the truth of Christ within me, I am  
 going to make this my pride and  
 boast unchecked throughout the  
 11 regions of Achaia! Why? Because  
 I do not love you? God knows I  
 12 do. No, I intend to go on as I am  
 doing, in order to checkmate those  
 who would fain make out that  
 in the apostolate of which they  
 boast they work on the same terms  
 13 as I do. 'Apostles'? They are  
 spurious apostles, false workmen—  
 they are masquerading as 'apostles  
 14 of Christ.' No wonder they do, for  
 Satan himself masquerades as an

angel of light. So it is no surprise 15  
 if his ministers also masquerade  
 as ministers of righteousness. Their  
 doom will answer to their deeds.

I repeat, no one is to think me a 16  
 fool; but even so, pray bear with  
 me, fool as I am, that I may have  
 my little boast as well as others!  
 (What I am now going to say is not 17  
 inspired by the Lord: I am in the  
 rôle of a 'fool,' now, on this busi-  
 ness of boasting. Since many boast 18  
 on the score of the flesh, I will do  
 the same.) You put up with fools 19  
 so readily, you who know so much!  
 You put up with a man who 20  
 assumes control of your souls, with  
 a man who spends your money,  
 with a man who dupes you, with  
 a man who gives himself airs, with  
 a man who flies in your face. I  
 am quite ashamed to say I was 21  
 not equal to that sort of thing!  
 But let them vaunt as they please,  
 I am equal to them (mind, this is  
 the rôle of a fool!). Are they 22  
 Hebrews? so am I. Israelites?  
 so am I. Descended from Abra-  
 ham? so am I. Ministers of 23  
 Christ? yes perhaps, but not as  
 much as I am (I am mad to talk  
 like this!), with all my labours,  
 with all my lashes, with all my  
 time in prison—a record longer  
 far than theirs. I have been often  
 at the point of death; five times 24  
 have I got forty lashes (all but one)  
 from the Jews, three times I have 25  
 been beaten by the Romans, once  
 pelted with stones, three times ship-  
 wrecked, adrift at sea for a whole  
 night and day; I have been often on 26  
 my travels, I have been in danger  
 from rivers and robbers, in danger  
 from Jews and Gentiles, through dan-  
 gers of town and of desert, through  
 dangers on the sea, through dangers  
 among false brothers—through 27

## II. CORINTHIANS XII

labour and hardship, through many a sleepless night, through hunger and thirst, starving many a time, cold and ill-clad, and all the rest  
 28 of it. And then there is the pressing business of each day, the care  
 29 of all the churches. Who is weak, and I do not feel his weakness? Whose faith is hurt, and I am not  
 30 aglow with indignation? If there is to be any boasting, I will boast of what I am weak enough to  
 31 suffer! The God and Father of the Lord Jesus, He who is blessed for ever, He knows I am telling the  
 32 truth! (At Damascus the ethnarch of king Aretas had patrols out in the city of the Damascenes to arrest me, but I was lowered in a basket from a loophole in the wall, and so managed to escape his  
 12 clutches.) There is nothing to be gained by this sort of thing, but as I am obliged to boast, I will go on to visions and revelations of the Lord.  
 2 I know a man in Christ who fourteen years ago was caught up to the third heaven. In the body or out of the body? That I do not  
 3 know: God knows. I simply know that in the body or out of the body  
 4 (God knows which) this man was caught up to paradise and heard sacred secrets which no human lips  
 5 can repeat. Of an experience like that I am prepared to boast, but not of myself personally—not except as regards my weaknesses.  
 6 (If I did care to boast of other things, I would be no 'fool,' for I would have a true tale to tell; however, I abstain from that—I want no one to take me for more than he can see in me or make out  
 7 from me.) My wealth of visions might have puffed me up, so I was given a thorn in the flesh, an angel of Satan to rack me and keep me

from being puffed up; three times 8  
 over I prayed the Lord to make it leave me, but he told me, "It is 9  
 enough for you to have my grace: it is in weakness that [my] power is fully felt." So I am proud to boast of all my weakness, and thus to have the power of Christ resting on my life. It makes me satisfied, 10  
 for Christ's sake, with weakness, insults, trouble, persecution, and calamity; for I am strong just when I am weak.

Now this is playing the fool! 11  
 But you forced me to it, instead of coming forward yourselves and vouching for me. That was what I deserved; for, 'nobody' as I am, I am not one whit inferior to these precious 'apostles.' You had all 12  
 the miracles that mark an apostle done for you fully and patiently—miracles, wonders, and deeds of power. Where were you inferior 13  
 to the rest of the churches?—unless in this, that your apostle did not choose to make himself a burden to you. Pray pardon me this terrible wrong!

Here am I all ready to pay you 14  
 my third visit. And I will not be a burden to you; I want yourselves and not your money. Children have not to put money by for their parents; that is what parents do for their children. And for your 15  
 souls I will gladly spend my all and be spent myself. Am I to be loved the less because I love you more than others?

But let that pass, you say; I was 16  
 not a burden to you, no, but I was clever enough to dupe you with my tricks? Was I? Did I make 17  
 something out of you by any of my messengers? I asked Titus to go, 18  
 and with him I sent our brother. Titus did not make anything out of



you, did he? And did not I act in the same spirit as he did? Did I not take the very same steps?

- 19 You think all this time I am defending myself to you? No, I am speaking in Christ before the presence of God, and speaking every word, beloved, in order to  
20 build you up. For I am afraid I may perhaps come and find you are not what I could wish, while you may find I am not what you could wish; I am afraid of finding quarrels, jealousy, temper, rivalry, slanders, gossiping, arrogance, and  
21 disorder—afraid that when I come back to you, my God may humiliate me before you, and I may have to mourn for many who sinned some time ago and yet have never repented of the impurity, the sexual vice, and the sensuality which they have practised.

- 13 This will be my third visit to you: *every case is to be decided on the evidence of two or of three witnesses*. I warned you already, on my second visit, and I warn you now before I come, both you who sinned some time ago and the rest of you as well, that I will spare no one  
3 if I come back. That will prove to you that I am indeed a spokesman of Christ. It is no weak Christ you have to do with, but a Christ  
4 of power. For though he was crucified in his weakness, he lives

by the power of God; and though I am weak as he was weak, you will find I am alive as he is alive by the power of God. Put yourselves to the proof, not me; test yourselves, to see if you are in the faith. Do you not understand that Christ Jesus is within you? Otherwise you must be failures. But I trust you will find I am no failure, and I pray to God that you may not go wrong—not to prove I am a success, that is not the point, but that you should come right, even if I seemed to be a failure. (Fail or succeed, I cannot work against the truth but for it!) I am glad to be weak if you are strong; mend your ways, that is all I ask. I am writing thus to you in absence, so that when I do come I may not have to deal sharply with you; I have the Lord's authority for that, but he gave it to me for building you up, not for demolishing you.

Now brothers, goodbye; mend your ways, listen to what I have told you, live in harmony, keep the peace; then the God of love and peace will be with you.

Salute one another with a holy kiss. All the saints salute you.

The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ and the love of God and the fellowship of the holy Spirit be with you all.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAUL TO THE GALATIANS

CHAP.

- 1 PAUL an apostle—not appointed  
by men nor commissioned by any  
man but by Jesus Christ and God  
the Father who raised him from  
2 the dead,—with all the brothers  
who are beside me, to the churches  
3 of Galatia; grace and peace to you  
from God our Father and the Lord  
4 Jesus Christ who gave himself for  
our sins to rescue us from the  
present evil world—by the will of  
5 our God and Father, to whom be  
glory for ever and ever: Amen.
- 6 I am astonished you are hastily  
shifting like this, deserting Him  
who called you by Christ's grace and  
7 going over to another gospel. It  
simply means that certain indi-  
viduals are unsettling you; they  
want to distort the gospel of  
8 Christ. Now even though it were  
myself or some angel from heaven,  
whoever preaches a gospel that  
contradicts the gospel I preached  
9 to you, God's curse be on him! I  
have said it before and I now repeat  
it: whoever preaches a gospel to  
you that contradicts the gospel you  
have already received, God's curse  
be on him!
- 10 Now is that 'appealing to the  
interests of men' or of God?  
11 Trying to 'satisfy men'? Why, if  
I still tried to give satisfaction to  
human masters, I would be no  
servant of Christ. No, brothers,  
I tell you the gospel that I preach  
12 is not a human affair; no man put  
it into my hands, no man taught  
me what it meant, I had it by a  
revelation of Jesus Christ. You 13  
know the story of my past career  
in Judaism; you know how furi-  
ously I persecuted the church of God  
and harried it, and how I outstripped 14  
many of my own age and race in  
my special ardour for the ancestral  
traditions of my house. But the 15  
God who had set me apart *from  
my very birth called me by his*  
grace, and when he chose to reveal 16  
his Son to me, that I might preach  
him to the Gentiles, instead of  
consulting with any human being,  
instead of going up to Jerusalem 17  
to see those who had been apostles  
before me, I went off at once to  
Arabia, and on my return I came  
back to Damascus. Then, after 18  
three years, I went up to Jeru-  
salem to make the acquaintance of  
Cephas. I stayed a fortnight with  
him. I saw no other apostle, only 19  
James the brother of the Lord.  
(I am writing you the sheer truth, 20  
I swear it before God!) Then I 21  
went to the districts of Syria and  
of Cilicia. Personally I was quite 22  
unknown to the Christian churches  
of Judaea; they merely heard that 23  
'our former persecutor is now  
preaching the faith he once harried,'  
which made them praise God for 24  
me. Then, fourteen years later, I 2  
went up to Jerusalem again, accom-  
panied by Barnabas; I took Titus  
with me also. (It was in consequence 2  
of a revelation that I went up at



all.) I submitted the gospel I am in the habit of preaching to the Gentiles, submitting it privately to the authorities, to make sure that my course of action would be and had been sound. But even my companion Titus, Greek though he was, was not obliged to be circumcised. There were traitors of false brothers, who had crept in to spy out the freedom we enjoy in Christ Jesus; they did aim at enslaving us again. But we refused to yield for a single instant to their claims; we were determined that the truth of the gospel should hold good for you. Besides, the so-called 'authorities' (it makes no difference to me what their status used to be—God pays no regard to the externals of men), these 'authorities' had no additions to make to my gospel. On the contrary, when they saw I had been entrusted with the gospel for the benefit of the uncircumcised, just as Peter had been for the circumcised (for He who equipped Peter to be an apostle of the circumcised equipped me as well for the uncircumcised), and when they recognized the grace I had been given, then the so-called 'pillars' of the church, James and Cephas and John, gave myself and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship. Our sphere was to be the Gentiles, theirs the circumcised. Only, we were to 'remember the poor.' I was quite eager to do that myself. But when Cephas came to Antioch, I opposed him to his face. The man stood self-condemned. Before certain emissaries of James arrived, he ate along with the Gentile Christians; but when they arrived, he began to draw back and hold aloof, because he was afraid

of the circumcision party. The rest of the Jewish Christians also played false along with him, so much so that even Barnabas was carried away by their false play. But I saw they were swerving from the true line of the gospel; so I said to Cephas in presence of them all, "If you live like the Gentiles and not like the Jews, though you are a Jew yourself, why do you oblige the Gentiles to become Jews?"—We may be Jews by birth and not 'Gentile sinners,' but since we know a man is justified simply by faith in Jesus Christ and not by doing what the Law commands, we ourselves have believed in Christ Jesus so as to get justified by faith in Christ and not by doing what the Law commands—for by doing what the law commands *no person shall be justified*. If it is discovered that in our quest for justification in Christ we are 'sinners' as well as the Gentiles, does that make Christ an agent of sin? Never! I really convict myself of transgression when I rebuild what I destroyed. For through the Law I died to the Law that I might live for God; I have been crucified with Christ, and it is no longer I who live, Christ lives in me; the life I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God who loved me and gave himself up for me. I do not annul God's grace; but if righteousness comes by way of the Law, then indeed Christ's death was useless.

CHAP.

O SENSELESS Galatians, who has bewitched you—you who had Jesus Christ the crucified placarded before your very eyes? I simply want to ask you one thing: did you

receive the Spirit by doing what  
 the Law commands or by believing  
 3 the gospel message? Are you such  
 fools? Did you begin with the  
 Spirit only to end now with the  
 4 flesh? Have you had all that  
 experience for nothing (if it has  
 5 really gone for nothing)? When  
 He supplies you with the Spirit  
 and works miracles among you,  
 is it because you do what the  
 Law commands or because you  
 6 believe the gospel message? Why,  
 it is as with Abraham, *he had*  
*faith in God and that was counted*  
 7 *to him as righteousness*. Well then,  
 you see that the real sons of  
 Abraham are those who rely on  
 8 faith. Besides, Scripture antici-  
 pated God's justification of the  
 Gentiles by faith when it an-  
 nounced the gospel beforehand to  
 Abraham in these terms: *All*  
*nations shall be blessed in thee*.  
 9 So that those who rely on faith are  
 blessed along with believing Abra-  
 10 ham. Whereas a curse rests on all  
 who rely upon obedience to the Law;  
 for it is written, *Cursed is everyone*  
*who does not hold by all that is*  
*written in the book of the law, to*  
 11 *perform it*. And because no one  
 is justified on the score of the Law  
 before God (plainly, *the just shall*  
 12 *live by faith*,—and the Law is not  
 based on faith: no, *he who per-*  
*forms these things shall live by them*),  
 13 Christ ransomed us from the curse  
 of the Law by becoming accursed  
 for us (for it is written, *Cursed is*  
 14 *everyone who hangs on a gibbet*), that  
 the blessing of Abraham might  
 reach the Gentiles in Christ Jesus,  
 so that by faith we might receive  
 the promised Spirit.  
 15 To take an illustration from  
 human life, my brothers. Once a  
 man's will is ratified, no one else

annuls it or adds a codicil to it.  
 Now the Promises were made to 16  
 Abraham *and to his offspring*; it  
 is not said, 'and to your offsprings'  
 in the plural, but in the singular  
*and to your offspring*—which is  
 Christ. My point is this: the Law 17  
 which arose four hundred and thirty  
 years later does not repeal a will  
 previously ratified by God, so as  
 to cancel the Promise. If the 18  
 Inheritance is due to law, it ceases  
 to be due to promise. Now it was  
 by a promise that God bestowed  
 it on Abraham. Then what about 19  
 the Law? Well, it was inter-  
 polated for the purpose of pro-  
 ducing transgressions till such time  
 as the Offspring arrived to whom  
 the Promise was made; also, it  
 was transmitted by means of angels  
 through the agency of an inter-  
 mediary (an intermediary implies 20  
 more than one party, but God is  
 one). Then the Law is contrary 21  
 to God's Promises? Never! Had  
 there been any law which had the  
 power of producing life, righteous-  
 ness would really have been due to  
 law, but Scripture has consigned 22  
 all without exception to the  
 custody of sin, in order that the  
 promise due to faith in Jesus Christ  
 might be given to those who have  
 faith. Before this faith came, we 23  
 were confined by the Law and kept  
 in custody, with the prospect of  
 the faith that was to be revealed;  
 the Law thus held us as wards in 24  
 discipline, till such time as Christ  
 came, that we might be justified  
 by faith. But faith has come, and 25  
 we are wards no longer; you are 26  
 all sons of God by your faith in  
 Christ Jesus (for all of you who 27  
 had yourselves baptized into Christ  
 have taken on the character of  
 Christ). There is no room for Jew 28



or Greek, there is no room for  
 slave or freeman, there is no room  
 for male and female; you are all  
 29 one in Christ Jesus. Now if  
 you are Christ's, then you are  
 Abraham's offspring; in virtue of  
 4 the Promise, you are heirs. What  
 I mean is this. As long as an  
 heir is under age, there is no  
 difference between him and a  
 servant, though he is lord of all the  
 2 property; he is under guardians  
 and trustees till the time fixed by  
 3 his father. So with us. When we  
 were under age, we lived under  
 the thralldom of the Elemental  
 4 spirits of the world; but when the  
 time had fully expired, God sent  
 forth his Son, born of a woman,  
 5 born under the Law, to ransom  
 those who were under the Law, that  
 6 we might get our sonship. It is  
 because you are sons that God has  
 sent forth the Spirit of his Son into  
 your hearts crying 'Abba! Father!'  
 7 So you are servant no longer but  
 son, and as son you are also heir,  
 all owing to God.  
 8 In those days, when you were  
 ignorant of God, you were in  
 servitude to gods who are really  
 9 no gods at all; but now that you  
 know God—or rather, are known  
 by God—how is it you are turning  
 back again to the weakness and  
 poverty of the Elemental spirits?  
 Why do you want to be enslaved  
 10 all over again by them? You  
 observe days and months and festal  
 11 seasons and years! Why, you  
 make me afraid I may have spent  
 my labour on you for nothing!  
 12 Do take my line, brothers, I beg of  
 you—just as I once took yours.  
 I have no complaint against you;  
 13 no, although it was because of an  
 illness (you know) that I preached  
 the gospel to you on my former

visit, and though my flesh was a 14  
 trial to you, you did not scoff at  
 me nor spurn me, you welcomed  
 me like an angel of God, like Christ  
 Jesus. You congratulated your- 15  
 selves. Now, what has become of  
 all that? (I can bear witness that  
 you would have torn out your very  
 eyes, if you could, and given me  
 them.) Am I your enemy to-day, 16  
 because I have been honest with  
 you? These men make much of 17  
 you—yes, but for dishonest ends;  
 they want to debar you from us,  
 so that you may make much of  
 them. Now it is fine for you to 18  
 be made much of honestly and all  
 the time—not simply when I can  
 be with you. O my dear children, 19  
 you with whom I am in travail  
 over again till Christ be formed  
 within you, would that I could be 20  
 with you at this moment, and alter  
 my tone, for I am at my wits' end  
 about you! Tell me, you who 21  
 are keen to be under the Law, will  
 you not listen to the Law? Surely 22  
 it is written in the Law that  
 Abraham had two sons, one by  
 the slave-woman and one by the  
 free-woman; but while the son of 23  
 the slave-woman was born by the  
 flesh, the son of the free-woman was  
 born by the promise. Now this 24  
 is an allegory. The women are  
 two covenants. One comes from  
 mount Sinai, bearing children  
 for servitude; that is Hagar, for 25  
 mount Sinai\* is away in Arabia.  
 She corresponds to the present  
 Jerusalem, for the latter is in servi-  
 tude with her children. But the 26  
 Jerusalem on high is free, and  
 she is 'our' mother. For it is 27  
 written,

\* Omitting *Ἄραρ* as a gloss, with the  
 Latin, Sahidic, and Ethiopic versions,  
 N C G, Origen, and many others.

*Rejoice, O thou barren who bearest not,  
break into joy, thou who travailest not;  
for the children of the desolate woman are far more than of the married.*

28 Now you are the children of  
29 the Promise, brothers, like Isaac;  
but just as in the old days the son  
born by the flesh persecuted the  
son born by the Spirit, so it is still  
30 to-day. However, what does the  
scripture say? *Put away the slave-  
woman and her son, for the son of  
the slave-woman shall not be heir  
along with the son of the free-*  
31 *woman.* Hence we are children  
of no slave-woman, my brothers,  
5 but of the free-woman,\* with the  
freedom for which Christ set us  
free. Make a firm stand then,  
do not slip into any yoke of  
servitude.  
2 Here, listen to Paul! I tell you,  
if you get circumcised, Christ will  
3 be no use to you. I insist on this  
again to everyone who gets cir-  
cumcised, that he is obliged to  
carry out the whole of the Law.  
4 You are for justification by the  
Law? Then you are done with  
Christ, you have deserted grace,  
5 for it is by faith that 'we' wait  
in the Spirit for the righteousness  
6 we hope for; in Christ Jesus cir-  
cumcision is not valid, neither is un-  
circumcision, but only faith active

in love. You were doing splen- 7  
didly. Who was it that prevented 8  
you from obeying the Truth? 9  
That sort of suasion does not come 10  
from Him who called you! (A 11  
morsel of dough will leaven the 12  
whole lump.) I feel persuaded 13  
in the Lord that you will not go 14  
wrong. But he who unsettles you 15  
will have to meet his doom, no 16  
matter who he is. I am 'still 17  
preaching circumcision myself,' am 18  
I? Then, brothers, why am I still 19  
being persecuted? And so the 20  
stumbling-block of the cross has 21  
lost its force, forsooth! O that 22  
those who are upsetting you would  
get themselves castrated!

Brothers, you were called to be 13  
free; only, do not make your free- 14  
dom an opening for the flesh, but 15  
serve one another in love. For 16  
the entire Law is summed up in one 17  
word, in *You must love your neigh- 18  
bour as yourself* (whereas, if you 19  
snap at each other and prey upon 20  
each other, take care in case you 21  
destroy one another). I mean, 22  
lead the life of the Spirit; then you  
will never satisfy the passions of  
the flesh. For the passion of the  
flesh—against the Spirit, and  
the passion of the Spirit against  
the flesh—the two are at issue, so  
that you are not free to do as you  
please. If you are under the sway  
of the Spirit, you are not under  
the Law. Now the deeds of the  
flesh are quite obvious, such as  
sexual vice, impurity, sensuality,  
idolatry, magic, 20 quarrels,  
dissension, jealousy, temper,  
rivalry, factions, party-spirit,  
envy, [murder], drinking bouts, 21  
revelry, and the like; I tell you  
beforehand as I have told you  
already, that people who indulge  
in such practices will never inherit  
the Realm of God. But the harvest 22

\* Whether ἡ is read after τῇ ἐλευθερίᾳ or instead of τῇ, the opening words of 5<sup>1</sup> must be connected with the closing words of 4<sup>31</sup>. I think on the whole that this interpretation of the text, which is advocated by modern editors like Lightfoot and Zahn, has the best claim to be regarded as authentic; it goes back to Marcion and has the powerful support of the Latin version, of G, of Origen, Ambrosiaster, Jerome, and others.



of the Spirit is love, joy, peace,  
 good temper, kindness, generosity,  
 23 fidelity, gentleness, self-control:—  
 there is no law against those  
 24 who practice such things. Now  
 those who belong to Christ\* have  
 crucified the flesh with its emotions  
 25 and passions. As we live by the  
 Spirit, let us be guided by the  
 26 Spirit; let us have no vanity, no  
 provoking, no envy of one another.  
 6 Even if anyone is detected in  
 some trespass, brothers, you are  
 spiritual, you must set the offender  
 right in a spirit of gentleness; let  
 each of you look to himself, in case  
 2 he too is tempted. Bear one  
 another's burdens, and so fulfil the  
 3 law of Christ. If anyone imagines  
 he is somebody, he is deceiving  
 4 himself, for he is nobody; let  
 everyone bring his own work to the  
 test—then he will have something  
 to boast about on his own account,  
 and not in comparison with his  
 5 fellows. For everyone will have to  
 bear his own load of responsibility.  
 6 Those who are taught must share  
 all the blessings of life with those  
 7 who teach them the Word. Make  
 no mistake—God is not to be  
 mocked—a man will reap just  
 8 what he sows; he who sows for  
 his flesh will reap destruction from  
 the flesh, and he who sows for the

Spirit will reap life eternal from  
 the Spirit. Never let us grow tired 9  
 of doing what is right, for if we do  
 not faint we shall reap our harvest  
 at the opportune season. So then, 10  
 as we have opportunity, let us do  
 good to all men and in particular  
 to the household of the faith.

See what big letters I make, 11  
 when I write you in my own  
 hand!

These men who are keen upon 12  
 you getting circumcised are just  
 men who want to make a grand  
 display in the flesh—it is simply to  
 avoid being persecuted for the cross  
 of Christ. Why, even the circum- 13  
 cision party do not observe the Law  
 themselves! They merely want  
 you to get circumcised, so as to  
 boast over your flesh! But no 14  
 boasting for me, none except in  
 the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ,  
 by which the world has been cruci-  
 fied to me and I crucified to the  
 world. For what counts is neither 15  
 circumcision nor uncircumcision,  
 it is the new creation. On all who 16  
 will be guided by this rule, may  
 peace and mercy rest, even upon  
 the Israel of God.

Let no one interfere with me 17  
 after this, for I bear branded on  
 my body the owner's stamp of  
 Jesus.

The grace of our Lord Jesus 18  
 Christ be with your spirit, brothers.  
 Amen.

\* Omitting Ἰησοῦ with D G, the Latin,  
 Gothic, and Armenian versions, Marcion,  
 Chrysostom, and others.

# THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE EPHESIANS

CHAP.

1 PAUL, by the will of God an  
apostle of Jesus Christ, to the  
saints who are faithful \* in Jesus  
2 Christ: grace and peace to you  
from God our Father and the Lord  
Jesus Christ.  
3 Blessed be the God and Father  
of our Lord Jesus Christ who in  
Christ has blessed us with every  
4 spiritual blessing! He chose us  
in him ere the world was founded,  
to be consecrated and unblemished  
5 in his sight, destining us in love to  
be his sons through Jesus Christ.  
6 Such was the purpose of his will,  
redounding to the praise of his  
glorious grace bestowed on us in  
7 the Beloved, in whom we enjoy our  
redemption, the forgiveness of our  
trespasses, by the blood he shed.  
8 So richly has God lavished his grace  
9 upon us! He has granted us com-  
plete insight and understanding of  
the open secret of his will, showing  
us how it was the purpose of his  
10 design so to order it in the fulness of  
the ages that all things in heaven  
and earth alike should be gathered  
11 up in Christ—in the Christ in whom  
we have had our heritage allotted  
us (as was decreed in the design  
of him who carries out everything  
according to the counsel of his  
12 will), to make us redound to the  
praise of his glory by being the  
first to put our hope in Christ.  
13 You also have heard the message  
of the truth, the gospel of your  
salvation, and in him you also by

your faith have been stamped with  
the seal of the long-promised holy  
Spirit which is the pledge and instal- 14  
ment of our common heritage, that  
we may obtain our divine posses-  
sion and so redound to the praise  
of his glory.

Hence, as I have heard of your 15  
faith in the Lord Jesus and your  
love for all the saints, I never cease 16  
to give thanks for you, when I  
mention you in my prayers. May 17  
the God of our Lord Jesus Christ,  
the glorious Father, grant you the  
Spirit of wisdom and revelation  
for the knowledge of himself,  
illuminating the eyes of your heart 18  
so that you can understand the  
hope to which He calls us, the  
wealth of his glorious heritage in  
the saints, and the surpassing 19  
greatness of his power over us  
believers—a power which operates  
with the strength of the might  
which he exerted in raising Christ 20  
from the dead and *seating him at  
his right hand* in the heavenly  
sphere, above all the angelic Rulers, 21  
Authorities, Powers, and Lords,  
above every Name that is to be  
named not only in this age but in  
the age to come—he *has put every-* 22  
*thing under his feet* and set him  
as head over everything for the  
church, the church which is his 23  
Body, filled by him who fills the  
universe entirely. And as with us 2  
so with you. You were dead in  
the trespasses and sins in which you 2  
moved as you followed the course

\* Omitting [ἐν Ἐφέσῳ].



of this world, under the sway of the prince of the air—the spirit which is at present active within those sons  
 3 of disobedience among whom all of us lived, we as well as you, when we obeyed the passions of our flesh, carrying out the dictates of the flesh and its impulses, when we were objects of God's anger by  
 4 nature, like the rest of men. But, dead in trespasses as we were, God was so rich in mercy that for his  
 5 great love to us he made us live together with Christ (it is by grace  
 6 you have been saved); together with Christ he raised and seated us within the heavenly sphere in  
 7 Christ Jesus, to display throughout ages to come his surpassing wealth of grace and goodness toward us in  
 8 Christ Jesus. For it is by grace you have been saved, as you had faith; it is not your doing but God's gift,  
 9 not the outcome of what you have done—lest anyone should pride  
 10 himself on that; God has made us what we are, creating us in Christ Jesus for the good deeds which are prepared beforehand by God as our sphere of action.  
 11 Remember, then, that once upon a time you Gentiles in the flesh, who are called 'the Uncircumcision' by that so-called 'Circumcision' which is itself the product of human hands in the flesh—re-  
 12 member you were in those days outside Christ, aliens to the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers to the covenants of the Promise, devoid of hope and God within  
 13 the world. Whereas now, within Christ Jesus, you who once were *far away* have been brought *near*  
 14 by the blood of Christ. For he is our *peace*, he who has made both of us a unity and destroyed the barrier which kept us apart; in

his own flesh he put an end to the 15  
 feud of the Law with its code of commands, so as to make peace by the creation of a new Man in himself out of both parties, so as him- 16  
 self to give the death-blow to that feud by reconciling them both to God in one Body through the cross; he came *with a gospel of peace for* 17  
*those far away* (that is, for you) *and for those who were near*, for it is 18  
 through him that we both enjoy our access to the Father in one Spirit. Thus you are strangers 19  
 and foreigners no longer, you share the membership of the saints, you belong to God's own household, you are a building that rests on 20  
 the apostles and prophets as its foundation, with Christ Jesus as the cornerstone; in him the whole 21  
 structure is welded together and rises into a sacred temple in the Lord, and in him you are yourselves built into this to form a habitation for God in the Spirit.

CHAP.

FOR this reason I Paul, I whom 3  
 Jesus has made a prisoner for the sake of you Gentiles—for surely 2  
 you have heard how the grace of God which was vouchsafed me in your interests has ordered it, how 3  
 the divine secret was disclosed to me by a revelation (if you read what I have already written briefly about this, you can understand 4  
 my insight into that secret of Christ which was not disclosed to the 5  
 sons of men in other generations as it has now been revealed to his sacred apostles and prophets by the Spirit), namely, that in Christ 6  
 Jesus the Gentiles are co-heirs, companions, and co-partners in the \* Promise. Such is the gospel

\* Omitting [*αὐτοῦ*].

7 which I was called to serve by the  
 8 endowment of God's grace which  
 9 was vouchsafed me, by the energy  
 10 of his power; less than the least of  
 11 all saints as I am, this grace was  
 12 vouchsafed me, that I should bring  
 13 the Gentiles the gospel of the  
 14 fathomless wealth of Christ and  
 15 enlighten all men upon the new  
 16 order of that divine secret which  
 17 God the Creator of all concealed  
 18 from eternity—intending to let the  
 19 full sweep of the divine wisdom be  
 20 disclosed now by the church to the  
 21 angelic Rulers and Authorities in  
 the heavenly sphere, in terms of  
 the eternal purpose which he has  
 realized in Christ Jesus our Lord,  
 through whom, as we have faith in  
 him, we enjoy our confidence of free  
 access.

So I beg of you not to lose heart  
 over what I am suffering on your  
 behalf; my sufferings are an honour  
 to you.

For this reason, then, I kneel  
 before the Father from whom every  
 family in heaven and on earth de-  
 rives its name and nature, praying  
 Him out of the wealth of his glory to  
 grant you a mighty increase of  
 strength by his Spirit in the inner  
 man. May Christ dwell in your  
 hearts as you have faith! May you  
 be so fixed and founded in love that  
 you can grasp with all the saints  
 what is the meaning of 'the  
 Breadth,' 'the Length,' 'the Depth'  
 and 'the Height,' by knowing the  
 love of Christ which surpasses all  
 knowledge! May you be filled with  
 the entire fulness of God! Now to  
 him who by the action of his power  
 within us can do all things, aye far  
 more than we ever ask or imagine,  
 to him be glory in the church and  
 in Christ Jesus throughout all gene-  
 rations for ever and ever: Amen.

As the Lord's prisoner, then, I 4  
 beg of you to live a life worthy of 2  
 your calling, with perfect modesty  
 and gentleness, showing forbear- 3  
 ance to one another patiently, 4  
 zealous in love to preserve the  
 unity of the Spirit by binding 5  
 peace upon yourselves. For there 6  
 is one Body and one Spirit—as you  
 were called for the one hope that  
 belongs to your call—one Lord, one 7  
 faith, one baptism, one God and 8  
 Father of all, who is over us all,  
 who pervades us all, who is within  
 us all. But each one of us is  
 granted his own grace, as deter-  
 mined by the full measure of  
 Christ's gift. Thus it is said,

*When he ascended on high he led  
 a host captive  
 and granted gifts to men.*

What does *he ascended* mean, ex- 9  
 cept that he first descended to the 10  
 nether regions of the earth? He  
 who descended is he who ascended  
 above all the heavens to fill the  
 universe; he *granted* some men to 11  
 be apostles, some to be prophets,  
 some to be evangelists, some to 12  
 shepherd and teach, for the equip-  
 ment of the saints, for the business  
 of the ministry, for the upbuilding  
 of the Body of Christ, till we should 13  
 all attain the unity of the faith and  
 knowledge of God's Son, reaching  
 maturity, reaching the full measure  
 of development which belongs to  
 the fulness of Christ—instead of 14  
 remaining immature, blown from  
 our course and swayed by every  
 passing wind of doctrine, by the  
 adroitness of men who are dexterous  
 in devising error; we are to hold 15  
 by the truth, and by our love to  
 grow up wholly into Him. For He,  
 Christ, is the head and under him, 16  
 as the entire Body is welded to-



gether and compacted by every joint with which it is supplied, the due activity of each part enables the Body to grow and build itself up in love.

- 17 Now in the Lord I insist and protest that you must give up living like pagans; for their purposes are futile, their intelligence is darkened, they are estranged from the life of God by the ignorance which their dulness of heart has produced in them—men who have recklessly \* abandoned themselves to sensuality, with a lust for the business of impurity in every shape and form. That is not how you have understood the meaning of Christ (for it is Christ whom you have been taught, it is in Christ that you have been instructed—the real Christ who is in Jesus); you must lay aside the old nature which belonged to your former course of life, that nature which crumbles to ruin under the passions of moral deceit, and be renewed in the spirit of your mind, putting on the new nature, that divine pattern which has been created in the upright and pious character of the Truth. Lay aside falsehood, then, *let each tell his neighbour the truth*, for we are members one of another. 26 *Be angry but do not sin*; never let the sun set upon your exasperation, give the devil no chance. Let the thief steal no more; rather let him work and put his hands to an honest task, so as to have something to contribute to the needy. 29 Let no bad word pass your lips, but only such speech as is good for edification, as occasion may require, words that are gracious and a means of grace to those who hear

them. And do not vex God's holy Spirit, by whom you have been sealed for the day of redemption. Drop all bitter feeling and passion and anger and clamouring and insults, together with all malice; be kind to each other, be tenderhearted, be generous to each other as God has been generous to you in Christ. Copy God, then, as his beloved children, and lead lives of love, just as Christ loved you and gave himself up for you to be *a fragrant offering and sacrifice* to God. Never let any sexual vice or impurity or lust be so much as mentioned by you—that is the proper course for saints to take; no, nor indecent, silly, or scurrilous talk—all that is improper. Rather, voice your thanks to God. Be sure of this, that no one guilty of sexual vice or impurity or lust (that is, an idolater) possesses any inheritance in the realm of Christ and God. Let no one deceive you with specious arguments; these are the vices that bring down God's anger on the sons of disobedience. So avoid the company of such men. For while once upon a time you were darkness, now in the Lord you are light; lead the life of those who are children of the light (for the fruit of light consists in all that is good and right and true), verifying what pleases the Lord. Have nothing to do with the fruitless enterprises of the darkness; rather expose them. One is indeed ashamed even to speak about what such men do in secret; still, whatever the light exposes becomes illuminated—for anything that is illuminated turns into light. Thus it is said,

'Wake up, O sleeper, and rise from the dead;  
so Christ will shine upon you.'

\* Reading ἀπηλκότες with D G, the Latin version, the Syriac Vulgate, Irenaeus, Victorinus, etc.

15 Be strictly\* careful then about  
the life you lead; act like sensible  
16 men, not like thoughtless; make  
the very most of your time, for  
17 these are evil days. So do not be  
senseless, but understand what is  
18 the Lord's will; and do not get  
drunk with wine—that means pro-  
fligacy—but be filled with the  
19 Spirit, converse with one another  
in the music of psalms, in hymns,  
and in songs of the spiritual life,  
praise the Lord heartily with words  
20 and music, and render thanks to  
God the Father in the name of our  
Lord Jesus Christ at all times and  
for all things.

21 Be subject to one another out of  
22 reverence for Christ. Wives, be  
subject to your husbands as to the  
23 Lord, for the husband is the head  
of the wife as Christ also (though  
he is the saviour of the Body) is the  
24 head of the church; as the church  
is subject to Christ, so wives are  
to be subject to their husbands  
25 in every respect. Husbands, love  
your wives, just as Christ loved the  
church and gave himself up for her  
26 to consecrate her by cleansing her  
in the bath of baptism as she utters  
27 her confession, in order to have the  
church as his very own, standing  
before him in all her glory, with  
never a spot or wrinkle or any such  
flaw, but consecrated and un-  
28 blemished. So ought husbands to  
love their wives—to love them as  
their own bodies (he who loves his  
29 wife loves himself). For no one  
ever hates his flesh; no, he nour-  
ishes and cherishes it (just as Christ  
30 does the church, for we are members  
31 of his Body).† *Therefore shall a*

*man leave father and mother and  
cleave to his wife, and the pair shall  
be one flesh.* This is a profound 32  
symbol, I mean as regards Christ  
and the church. However, let 33  
every man of you love his wife as  
himself, and let the wife reverence  
her husband. Children, obey your 6  
parents in the Lord, for this is  
right; *honour your father and mother* 2  
(it is the first command with a  
promise), *that it may be well with* 3  
*you and that you may live long on*  
*earth.* As for you fathers, do not 4  
exasperate your children, but bring  
them up in *the discipline* and on  
*the admonitions of the Lord.*

Servants, be obedient to those 5  
who are your masters here below  
with reverence and trembling, with  
singleness of heart as to Christ  
himself; instead of merely working 6  
when their eye is on you, like those  
who court human favour, do God's  
will from the heart like servants of 7  
Christ, by rendering service with  
goodwill as to the Lord and Master,  
not to men. Be sure that everyone, 8  
slave or free, will be paid back by  
the Lord and Master for the good he  
has done. And as for you masters, 9  
act by your servants in the same  
way, and stop threatening them;  
be sure that they and you have a  
Lord and Master in heaven, and  
there is no partiality about him.

To conclude. Be strong in the 10  
Lord and in the strength of his  
might; put on God's armour so 11  
as to be able to stand against the  
stratagems of the devil. For we 12  
have to struggle, not with blood and  
flesh but with the angelic Rulers,  
the angelic Authorities, the poten-  
tates of the dark present, the spirit-  
forces of evil in the heavenly  
sphere. So take God's armour, 13  
that you may be able to make a

\* Reading ἀκριβῶς πῶς with N\*, B, Origen, etc.

† Omitting [ἐκ τῆς σαρκὸς αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐκ τῶν ὀστέων αὐτοῦ] with N\*, A B, Origen, etc.



## EPHESIANS VI

stand upon the evil day and hold  
your ground by overcoming all  
14 the foe. Hold your ground, *tighten  
the belt of truth about your loins,  
wear integrity as your coat of mail,*  
15 and have your feet shod with the  
*stability of the gospel of peace;*  
16 above all, take faith as your shield,  
to enable you to quench all the  
fire-tipped darts flung by the evil  
17 one, put on *salvation as your hel-*  
*met,* and take *the Spirit as your*  
*sword* (that is, *the word of God*),  
18 praying at all times in the Spirit  
with all manner of prayer and en-  
treaty—be alive to that, attend to  
it unceasingly, interceding on be-  
19 half of all the saints and on my  
behalf also, that I may be allowed

to speak and open my lips in order  
to expound fully and freely that  
open secret of the gospel for the 20  
sake of which I am in custody as  
its envoy. Pray that I may have  
freedom to declare it as I should.

Our beloved brother Tychicus, a 21  
faithful minister in the Lord, will  
give you all information about me,  
so that you may know how I  
am; that is why I am sending 22  
him to you, to let you know  
how I am and to encourage your  
hearts.

Peace and love with faith be to 23  
the brothers from God the Father  
and the Lord Jesus Christ. Grace 24  
be with all who have an undying  
love for our Lord Jesus Christ.

# THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE PHILIPPIANS

CHAP.

1 PAUL and Timotheus, servants  
of Christ Jesus, to all the saints in  
Christ Jesus who are at Philippi, as  
well as to the bishops and deacons :  
2 grace and peace to you from God  
our Father and the Lord Jesus  
Christ.  
3 I thank my God for all your  
4 remembrance of me; in all my  
prayers for you all I always pray  
5 with a sense of joy for what you  
have contributed to the gospel from  
the very first day down to this  
6 moment; of this I am confident,  
that he who has begun the good  
work in you will go on completing  
7 it until the day of Jesus Christ. It  
is only natural for me to be think-  
ing of you all in this way, for alike  
in my prison and as I defend and  
vindicate the gospel, I bear in mind  
how you all share with me in the  
8 grace divine. God is my witness  
that I yearn for you all with the  
affection of Christ Jesus himself !  
9 And it is my prayer that your love  
may be more and more rich in  
knowledge and all manner of in-  
sight, enabling you to have a sense  
10 of what is vital, so that you may  
be transparent and no harm to  
anyone in view of the day of Christ,  
11 your life covered with that harvest  
of righteousness which Jesus Christ  
produces to the glory and the  
praise of God.  
12 I would have you understand,  
my brothers, that my affairs have  
really tended to advance the gos-  
13 pel; throughout the whole of the

praetorian guard and everywhere  
else it is recognized that I am im-  
prisoned on account of my con-  
nexion with Christ, and my im- 14  
prisonment has given the majority  
of the brotherhood greater con-  
fidence in the Lord to venture on  
speaking the word of God without  
being afraid. Some of them, it is 15  
true, are actually preaching Christ  
from envy and rivalry, others from  
goodwill; the latter do it from love 16  
to me, knowing that I am set here  
to defend the gospel, but the former 17  
proclaim Christ for their own ends,  
with mixed motives, intending to  
annoy me as I lie in prison. What 18  
does it matter? Anyhow, for ul-  
terior ends or honestly, Christ is  
being proclaimed, and I rejoice over  
that; yes and I will rejoice over it.

*The outcome of all this, I know, 19*  
*will be my release, as you continue*  
*to pray for me, and as I am pro-*  
*vided with the Spirit of Jesus*  
*Christ—my eager desire and hope 20*  
*being that I may never feel*  
*ashamed but that now as ever I*  
*may do honour to Christ in my*  
*own person by fearless courage.*  
*Whether that means life or death,*  
*no matter ! As life means Christ 21*  
*to me, so death means gain. But 22*  
*then, if it is to be life here below,*  
*that means fruitful work. So—well,*  
*I cannot tell which to choose; I 23*  
*am in a dilemma between the two.*  
*My strong desire is to depart and*  
*be with Christ, for that is far the*  
*best. But for your sakes it is 24*



## PHILIPPIANS II

necessary I should live on here below. I am sure it is, and so I know I shall remain alive and serve you all by forwarding your progress and fostering the joy of your faith. Thus you will have ample cause to glory in Christ Jesus over me—over my return to you.

Only, do lead a life that is worthy of the gospel of Christ. Whether I come and see you or only hear of you in absence, let me know you are standing firm in a common spirit, fighting side by side like one man for the faith of the gospel. Never be scared for a second by your opponents; your fearlessness is a clear omen of ruin for them and of your own salvation—at the hands of God. For on behalf of Christ you have the favour of suffering no less than of believing in him, by waging the same conflict that, as once you saw and now you hear, I wage myself. So by all the stimulus of Christ, by every incentive of love, by all your participation in the Spirit, by all your affectionate tenderness, I pray you to give me the utter joy of knowing you are living in harmony, with the same feelings of love, with one heart and soul, never acting for private ends or from vanity, but humbly considering each other the better man, and each with an eye to the interests of others as well as to his own. Treat one another with the same spirit as you experience in Christ Jesus. Though he was divine by nature, he did not snatch at equality with God but emptied himself by taking the nature of a servant; born in human guise and appearing in human form, he humbly stooped in his obedience even to die, and to die upon the cross.

Therefore God raised him high and conferred on him a Name above all names, so that before the Name of Jesus *every knee should bend* in heaven, on earth, and underneath the earth, *and every tongue confess* that 'Jesus Christ is Lord,' to the glory of God the Father.

Therefore, my beloved, as you have been obedient always and not simply when I was present, so, now that I am absent, work all the more strenuously at your salvation with reverence and trembling, for it is God who in his goodwill enables you to will this and to achieve it. In all that you do, avoid grumbling and disputing, so as to be blameless and innocent, *faultless children of God in a crooked and perverse generation* where you shine like stars in a dark world; hold fast the word of life, so that I can be proud of you on the Day of Christ, because I have not run or *worked for nothing*. Even if my life-blood has to be poured as a libation on the sacred sacrifice of faith you are offering to God, I rejoice, I congratulate you all—and you in turn must rejoice and congratulate me.

I hope in the Lord Jesus to send you Timotheus before long, that I may be heartened by news of you. I have no one like him, for genuine interest in your welfare. Everybody is selfish, instead of caring for Jesus Christ. But you know how he has stood the test, how he has served with me in the gospel, like a son helping his father. I hope to send him then, as soon as ever I see how it will go with me—though I am confident in the Lord that I shall be coming myself before long. As for Epaphroditus, however, my brother, my

fellow-worker, my fellow-soldier,  
and your messenger to meet my  
wants, I think it necessary to send  
26 you him at once, for he has been  
yearning for you all. He has been  
greatly concerned because you  
27 heard he was ill. And he was ill,  
nearly dead with illness. But God  
had mercy on him, and not only  
on him but on me, to save me from  
having one sorrow upon another.  
28 So I am specially eager to send him,  
that you may be glad when you  
see him again, and thus my own  
29 anxiety may be lightened. Give  
him a welcome in the Lord,  
then, with your hearts full of joy.  
30 Value men like that, for he nearly  
died in the service of Christ by  
risking his life to make up for the  
services you were not here to  
render me.

CHAP.

3 WELL then, my brothers, rejoice  
in the Lord. I am repeating this  
word 'rejoice' in my letter, but  
that does not tire me and it is the  
2 safe course for you.—Beware of  
these dogs, these wicked workmen,  
3 the incision-party! We are the true  
Circumcision, we who worship God  
in spirit, we who pride ourselves  
on Christ Jesus, we who rely upon  
4 no outward privilege. Though I  
could rely on outward privilege, if  
I chose. Whoever thinks he can  
5 rely on that, I can outdo him. I  
was circumcised on the eighth day  
after birth; I belonged to the race  
of Israel, to the tribe of Benjamin;  
I was the Hebrew son of Hebrew  
parents, a Pharisee as regards the  
6 Law, in point of ardour a persecutor  
of the church, immaculate by the  
standard of legal righteousness.  
7 But for Christ's sake I have learned  
to count my former gains a loss;

indeed I count anything a loss, 8  
compared to the supreme value of  
knowing Christ Jesus my Lord.  
For his sake I have lost everything  
(I count it all the veriest refuse)  
in order to gain Christ and be 9  
found at death in him, possessing  
no legal righteousness of my own  
but the righteousness of faith in  
Christ, the divine righteousness  
that rests on faith. I would know 10  
him in the power of his resurrection  
and the fellowship of his sufferings,  
with my nature transformed to  
die as he died, to see if I too can 11  
attain the resurrection from the  
dead. Not that I have already 12  
attained this or am already perfect,  
but I press forward to appropriate  
it, because I have been appropriated  
myself by Christ Jesus. Brothers, 13  
I for one do not consider myself  
to have appropriated this; my one  
thought is, by forgetting what lies  
behind me and straining to what  
lies before me, to press on to the 14  
goal for the prize of God's high call  
in Christ Jesus. For all those of 15  
our number who are mature, this  
must be the point of view; God  
will reveal that to any of you who  
look at things differently. Only, 16  
we must let our steps be guided by  
such truth as we have attained.

Copy me, brothers, one and all 17  
of you, and notice those who live  
by the example you get from me.  
For many—as I have often told 18  
you and tell you now with tears—  
many live as enemies of the cross  
of Christ. Destruction is their fate, 19  
the belly is their god, they glory  
in their shame, these men of earthly  
mind! But we are a colony of 20  
heaven, and we wait for the Saviour  
who comes from heaven, the Lord  
Jesus Christ, who will transform 21  
the body that belongs to our low



estate till it resembles the body of his Glory, by the same power that enables him to make everything  
 4 subject to himself. So then, my brothers, for whom I cherish love and longing, my joy and crown, this is how you must stand firm in the Lord, O my beloved.  
 2 I entreat Euodia and I entreat Syntyche to agree in the Lord.  
 3 And you, my true comrade, lend a hand to these women, I beg of you; they have fought at my side in the active service of the gospel, along with Clement and the rest of my fellow-workers, whose names are in *the book of life*.  
 4 Rejoice in the Lord always. I  
 5 will say it again, 'rejoice.' Let your forbearance be known to everyone; the Lord is at hand.  
 6 Never be anxious, but always make your requests known to God in prayer and supplication with  
 7 thanksgiving; so shall God's peace, that surpasses all our dreams, keep guard over your hearts and minds in Christ Jesus.  
 8 Finally, brothers, keep in mind whatever is true, whatever is worthy, whatever is just, whatever is pure, whatever is attractive, whatever is high-toned, all  
 9 excellence, all merit. Practise also what you have learned and received from me, what you heard me say and what you saw me do; then the God of peace will be with you.  
 10 It was a great joy to me in the Lord that your care for me could revive again; for what you lacked

was never the care but the chance of showing it. Not that I com- 11 plain of want, for I have learned how to be content wherever I am. I know how to live humbly; I 12 also know how to live in prosperity. I have been initiated into the secret for all sorts and conditions of life, for plenty and for hunger, for prosperity and for privations. In him who strengthens me I am 13 able for anything. But you were 14 kind enough to take your share in my trouble. You Philippians 15 are well aware that in the early days of the gospel, when I had left Macedonia, no church but yourselves had any financial dealings with me; even when I was in 16 Thessalonica, you sent money more than once for my needs. It is 17 not the money I am anxious for; what I am anxious for is the interest that accumulates in this way to your divine credit! Your debt 18 to me is fully paid and more than paid! I am amply supplied with what you have sent by Epaphroditus, *a fragrant perfume*, the sort of sacrifice that God approves and welcomes. My God will supply all 19 your own needs from his wealth in Glory in Christ Jesus. Glory to 20 God our Father for ever and ever: Amen.

Salute every saint in Christ 21 Jesus. The brothers beside me salute you. All the saints salute 22 you, especially the Imperial slaves.

The grace of the Lord Jesus 23 Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

# THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE COLOSSIANS

CHAP.

1 PAUL, by God's will an apostle  
of Christ Jesus, and brother Timo-  
2 theus, to the consecrated and faith-  
ful brothers in Christ at Colossae :  
grace and peace to you from God  
our Father.

3 We always thank the God and  
Father of our Lord Jesus Christ  
4 when we pray for you, since we  
have heard of your faith in Christ  
Jesus and your love for all the  
5 saints, due to the hope which is  
laid up for you in heaven. You  
heard of this hope originally in  
the message of the Truth, in  
6 that gospel which has reached you  
as it spreads over all the world  
with fruit and increase. Such has  
been your life from the day  
you learned to know what God's  
7 grace really is. You got that  
lesson from our beloved fellow-  
servant Epaphras, a minister of  
Christ who is faithful to your in-  
8 terests; and it is he who has in-  
formed us of your love in the Spirit.  
9 Hence, from the day we heard of it,  
we have never ceased to pray for  
you, asking God to fill you with  
the knowledge of his will in all  
10 spiritual wisdom and insight, so  
that you may lead a life that is  
worthy of the Lord and give him  
entire satisfaction. May you be  
fruitful and increase in the doing of  
all good, as you thus know God !  
11 May his glorious might nerve you  
with full power to endure and to be  
patient cheerfully, whatever comes,  
12 thanking the Father who has quali-

fied us to share the lot of the  
saints in the Light, rescuing us 13  
from the power of the Darkness  
and transferring us to the realm of  
his beloved Son ! In him we enjoy 14  
our redemption, that is, the forgive-  
ness of sins. He is the likeness of 15  
the unseen God, born first before  
all the creation—for it was by him 16  
that all things were created both in  
heaven and on earth, both the seen  
and the unseen, including Thrones,  
angelic Lords, celestial Powers and  
Rulers; all things have been created  
by him and for him; he is prior to 17  
all, and all coheres in him. Also, 18  
he is the head of the Body, that  
is, of the church, in virtue of his  
primacy as the first to be born from  
the dead—that gives him pre-  
eminence over all. For it was in 19  
him that the divine Fulness willed  
to settle without limit, and by him it 20  
willed to reconcile in his own person  
all on earth and in heaven alike, in  
a peace made by the blood of his  
cross. Once you were estranged 21  
yourselves, your hearts hostile to  
him in evil-doing; but now he has  
reconciled you by dying in his  
mortal body, so as to set you conse- 22  
crated and unblemished and irre-  
proachable in his presence—that is, 23  
if you adhere to the foundations and  
stability of the faith, instead of mov-  
ing away from the hope you have  
learned in the gospel, that gospel  
which has been preached to every  
creature under heaven, and of which  
I Paul was made a minister.



## COLOSSIANS II

24 I am suffering now on your behalf, but I rejoice in that; I would make up the full sum of all that Christ has to suffer in my person on behalf of the church, his Body;  
 25 for I am a minister of the church by the divine commission which has been granted me in your interests, to make a full presentation of God's  
 26 message—of that open secret which, though concealed from ages and generations of old, has now been  
 27 disclosed to the saints of God. It is His will that they should understand the glorious wealth which this secret holds for the Gentiles, in the fact of Christ's presence among  
 28 you as your hope of glory. This is the Christ we proclaim; we train everyone and teach everyone the full scope of this knowledge, in order to set everyone before God  
 29 mature in Christ; I labour for that end, striving for it with the divine energy which is a power within me.  
 2 Striving? Yes, I want you to understand my deep concern for you and for those at Laodicea, for all who have never seen my face.  
 2 May their hearts be encouraged! May they learn the meaning of love! May they have all the wealth of conviction that comes from insight! May they learn to know that open secret of God, the  
 3 Father of Christ, in whom all the *treasures of wisdom and knowledge*  
 4 *lie hidden!* I say this to prevent you from being deluded by plausible arguments from anybody; for although I am absent in body I am with you in spirit, and it is a joy to note your steadiness and the solid front of your faith in Christ.  
 6 Since you have had the messiah, even Jesus the Lord, brought to  
 7 you, lead your life in him, fixed and founded in him, confirmed in the

faith as you have been taught it, and overflowing with thankfulness to God. Beware of anyone getting  
 8 hold of you by means of a theosophy which is specious make-believe, on the lines of human tradition, corresponding to the Elemental spirits of the world and not to Christ. It is in Christ that the entire  
 9 Fulness of deity has settled bodily, it is in him that you reach your full  
 10 life, and he is the Head of every angelic Ruler and Power; in him  
 11 you have been circumcised with no material circumcision that cuts flesh from the body, but with Christ's own circumcision, when  
 12 you were buried with him in your baptism and thereby raised with him as you believed in the power of the God who raised him from the dead. For though you were  
 13 dead in your trespasses, your flesh uncircumcised, He made you live with Christ, He forgave us all our trespasses, He cancelled the regu-  
 14 lations that stood against us—all these obligations he set aside when he nailed them to the cross, when  
 15 he cut away the angelic Rulers and Powers from us, exposing them to all the world and triumphing over them in the cross. So let no one  
 16 take you to task on questions of eating and drinking or in connexion with the observance of festivals or new moons or sabbaths. All that  
 17 is the mere shadow of what is to be; the substance belongs to Christ. Let no one lay down rules for you  
 18 as he pleases, with regard to fasting and the cult of angels, presuming on his visions and inflated by his sensuous notions, instead of keeping  
 19 in touch with that Head under whom the entire Body, supplied with joints and sinews and thus compacted, grows with growth divine.

20 As you died with Christ to the  
 Elemental spirits of the world, why  
 live as if you still belonged to the  
 world? Why submit to rules and  
 21 regulations like "Hands off this!"  
 "Taste not that!" "Touch not  
 22 this!"—referring to things that  
 perish by being used? These  
 rules are determined by *human*  
 23 *precepts and tenets*; they get the  
 name of 'wisdom' with their self-  
 imposed devotions, with their fast-  
 ing, with their rigorous discipline of  
 the body, but they are of no value,  
 they simply pamper the flesh!

3 Since then you have been raised  
 with Christ, aim at what is above,  
 where Christ is, *seated at the right*  
 2 *hand of God*; mind what is above,  
 3 not what is on earth, for you died  
 and your life is hidden with Christ  
 4 in God. When Christ, who is our  
 life, appears, then you will appear  
 5 with him in glory. So put to death  
 those members that are on earth:  
 sexual vice, impurity, appetite,  
 evil desire, and lust (which is  
 6 idolatry), things that bring down  
 the anger of God on the sons of  
 7 disobedience. Once you moved  
 among them, when you lived in  
 8 them; but off with them all now,  
 off with anger, rage, malice, slander,  
 9 foul talk! Tell no lies to one  
 another; you have stripped off  
 the old nature with its practices,  
 10 and put on the new nature which is  
 renewed in *the likeness of its Creator*  
 11 for the knowledge of him. In it there  
 is no room for Greek and Jew, cir-  
 cumcised and uncircumcised, bar-  
 barbarian, Scythian, slave, or free man;  
 Christ is everything and everywhere.

12 As God's own chosen, then,  
 as consecrated and beloved, be  
 clothed with compassion, kindness,  
 humility, gentleness. and good  
 13 temper—forbear and forgive each

other in any case of complaint; as  
 Christ forgave you, so must you  
 forgive. And above all you must 14  
 be loving, for love is the link of  
 the perfect life. Also, let the peace 15  
 of Christ be supreme within your  
 hearts—that is why you have been  
 called as members of the one Body.  
 And you must be thankful. Let the 16  
 inspiration of Christ dwell in your  
 midst with all its wealth of wisdom;  
 teach and train one another with  
 the music of psalms, with hymns,  
 and songs of the spiritual life;  
 praise God with thankful hearts.  
 Indeed, whatever you say or do, let 17  
 everything be done in dependence  
 on the Lord Jesus, giving thanks in  
 his name to God the Father.

Wives, be subject to your hus- 18  
 bands; that is your proper duty in  
 the Lord. Husbands, love your 19  
 wives, do not be harsh to them.  
 Children, obey your parents at 20  
 every point, for this pleases the  
 Lord right well. Fathers, avoid 21  
 irritating your children, in case  
 they get dispirited. Servants, obey 22  
 your masters here below at every  
 point; do not work simply when  
 their eye is on you, like those who  
 court human favour, but serve them  
 with a single heart out of reverence  
 for your Lord and Master. What- 23  
 ever be your task, work at it  
 heartily, as servants of the Lord  
 and not of men; remember, you 24  
 will receive from the Lord the in-  
 heritance which is your due; serve  
 Christ your Lord and Master, for 25  
 the wrongdoer will be paid back  
 for his wrongdoing—there will be  
 no favour shown. Masters, treat 4  
 your servants justly and fairly;  
 remember you have a Master of  
 your own in heaven.

Attend to your prayers, maintain 2  
 your zest for prayer by thanks-



3 giving; and pray for me as well,  
 that God may give me an opening  
 for the word, to speak of the open  
 secret of Christ for which I am  
 4 in custody. Pray that I may un-  
 5 fold it as I should. Let Christian  
 wisdom rule your behaviour to  
 the outside world; make the very  
 6 most of your time; let your talk  
 always have a saving salt of grace  
 about it, and learn how to answer  
 any question put to you.  
 7 Tychicus, that beloved brother  
 and faithful minister and fellow-  
 servant in the Lord, will give you  
 8 all information about me. The  
 reason why I am sending him to  
 you is that he may ascertain how  
 you are, and encourage your hearts.  
 9 He is accompanied by that faithful  
 and beloved brother Onesimus, who  
 is one of yourselves. They will in-  
 form you of all that goes on here.  
 10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner  
 salutes you; so does Mark, the cousin  
 of Barnabas, about whom you have  
 got instructions (if he comes to you,  
 11 give him a welcome); and so does  
 Jesus who is called Justus. These

are the only comrades in the work  
 of God's realm, belonging to the  
 circumcised, who have been any  
 comfort to me. Epaphras, who is 12  
 one of yourselves, salutes you—a  
 servant of Christ Jesus who is  
 always earnest in prayer for you,  
 that you may stand firm like mature  
 and convinced Christians, what-  
 ever be the will of God for you. I 13  
 can testify to his exertions on your  
 behalf and on behalf of those at  
 Laodicea and Hierapolis. Our be- 14  
 loved Luke, the doctor, salutes you;  
 so does Demas. Salute the brothers 15  
 at Laodicea, also Nympha and the  
 church which meets at her house.  
 And when this letter has been 16  
 read to you, see that it is also read  
 in the church of the Laodiceans;  
 also, see that you read the letter that  
 reaches you from Laodicea. And 17  
 tell Archippus, 'Attend to the  
 ministry you have received in the  
 Lord; see that you fulfil it.'

This salutation is in my own 18  
 hand, from Paul. 'Remember I  
 am in prison. Grace be with  
 you.'

# THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE THESSALONIANS

CHAP.

1 PAUL and Silvanus and Timotheus, to the church of the Thessalonians in God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ : grace and peace to you.

2 We always thank God for you all when we mention you constantly  
3 in our prayers, as we recall your active faith and labour of love and patient hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, before our God and Father.  
4 O brothers beloved by God, we  
5 know he has chosen you; for our gospel came to you not with mere words but also with power and with the holy Spirit, with ample conviction on our part (you know what we were to you, for your own  
6 good), and you started to copy us and the Lord, welcoming the word, though it brought you heavy trouble, with a joy inspired by the  
7 holy Spirit. Thus you became a pattern to all the believers in Macedonia and in Achaia; for the word of the Lord has resounded from you not only through Macedonia and Achaia—no, your faith in God has reached every place. We never need to speak about it.  
9 People tell us of their own accord about the visit we paid to you, and how you turned to God from idols, to serve a living and a real  
10 God and to wait for the coming of his Son from heaven—the Son whom he raised from the dead, Jesus who rescues us from the Wrath to come.

CHAP.

BUT you remember yourselves, 2  
brothers, that our visit to you was no failure. At Philippi, as 2  
you know, we had been ill-treated and insulted, but we took courage and confidence in our God to tell you the gospel of God in spite of all the strain. For the appeal we 3  
make does not spring from any delusion or from impure motives—it does not work by cunning; no, 4  
God has attested our fitness to be entrusted with the gospel, and so we tell the gospel not to satisfy men but to satisfy the God who tests our hearts. We never resorted to 5  
flattery (you know that), nor to any pretext for self-seeking (God is witness to that); we never sought 6  
honour from men, from you or from anybody else, though as apostles of Christ we had the power of claiming to be men of weight; 7  
no, we behaved gently when we were among you, like a nursing mother cherishing her own children, fain, in our yearning affection for 8  
you, to impart not only the gospel of God to you but our very souls as well—you had so won our love. Brothers, you recollect our hard 9  
labour and toil, how we worked at our trade night and day, when we preached the gospel to you, so as not to be a burden to any of you. You are witnesses, and so is God, 10  
to our behaviour among you believers, how pious and upright and blameless it was, how (as you know) 11



# I. THESSALONIANS III, IV

we treated each of you as a father treats his children, beseeching you, encouraging you, and charging you

12 to lead a life worthy of the God who called you to his own realm and glory.

13 We thank God constantly for this too, that when you received the word of the divine message from us, you took it not as a human word but for what it really is, the word of God. It proves effective in

14 you believers, for you have started, my brothers, to copy the churches of God in Christ Jesus throughout Judaea; you have suffered from your compatriots just as they have suffered from the Jews, who killed the Lord Jesus and the prophets, who harassed ourselves, who offend God and oppose all

15 men by hindering us from speaking words of salvation to the Gentiles. So they would fill up the measure of their sins to the last drop! But the Wrath is on them to the bitter end!

17 Brothers, when we were bereft of you for a little while (out of sight, not out of mind), we were the more eager to see you. We had a keen longing for you. (We did want to reach you—I did, I Paul, more than once—but Satan stopped us.)

19 For who is our hope, our joy, our crown of pride (who but you?) in the presence of our Lord Jesus on his arrival? Why, you, you  
3 are our glory and joy! So, unable to bear it any longer, I made up my mind to be left  
2 behind at Athens all alone; I sent Timotheus our brother, a minister of God in the gospel of Christ, for your strengthening and en-  
3 couragement in the faith, to prevent anyone being disturbed by these troubles. (Troubles are our lot,  
4 you know that well; for we told

you beforehand, when we were with you, that “we Christians are to have trouble”—and, as you know, it has been so.) Well then, unable  
5 to bear it any longer, I sent to find out about your faith, in case the Tempter had tempted you and our labour had been thrown away. But when Timotheus reached me a  
6 moment ago on his return from you, bringing me the good news of your faith and love and of how you always remember me kindly, longing to see me as I long to see you, then, amid all my own distress and trouble, I was cheered—this faith of yours encouraged me. It is life to me now, if you stand  
8 firm in the Lord. How can I  
9 render thanks enough to God for you, for all the joy you make me feel in the presence of our God? Night and day I pray specially  
10 that I may see your faces and supply what is defective in your faith. May our God and Father and our  
11 Lord Jesus direct my way to you! And may the Lord make you in-  
12 crease and excel in love to one another and to all men (as is my love for you), so as to streng-  
13 then your hearts and make them blameless in holiness before our God and Father when our Lord Jesus comes with all his holy ones. [Amen.]

CHAP.

FINALLY, brothers, we beg and  
4 beseech you in the Lord Jesus to follow our instructions about the way you are to live so as to satisfy God; you are leading that life, but you are to excel in it still further. You remember the in-  
2 structions we gave you on the authority of the Lord Jesus. It  
3 is God's will that you should be

## I. THESSALONIANS V

consecrated, that you abstain from  
 4 sexual vice, that each of you should  
 learn to take a wife for himself  
 5 chastely and honourably, not to  
 gratify sensual passion like *the*  
*Gentiles in their ignorance of God—*  
 6 no one is to defraud or overreach  
 his brother in this matter, for *the*  
*Lord avenges* all these sins, as we  
 told you already in our solemn  
 7 protest against them. God did  
 not call us to be impure but to be  
 8 consecrated; hence, he who dis-  
 regards this, disregards not man  
 but the God who gave you his holy  
 9 Spirit. You need no one to write  
 you upon brotherly love, for you  
 are yourselves taught by God to  
 10 love one another, as indeed is your  
 practice towards all the brothers  
 throughout all Macedonia. We be-  
 seech you, brothers, to excel in  
 11 this more and more; also, endea-  
 vour to live quietly, attend to your  
 own business, and—as we charged  
 12 you—work with your hands, so  
 that your life may be correct in the  
 eyes of the outside world and self-  
 supporting.  
 13 We would like you, brothers, to  
 understand about those who are  
 asleep in death. You must not  
 grieve for them, like the rest of men  
 14 who have no hope. Since we be-  
 lieve that Jesus died and rose again,  
 then it follows that by means of  
 Jesus God will bring with him  
 15 those who have fallen asleep. For  
 we tell you, as the Lord has told us,  
 that we the living, who survive till  
 the Lord comes, are by no means  
 to take precedence of those who  
 16 have fallen asleep. The Lord him-  
 self will descend from heaven with  
 a loud summons, when the arch-  
 angel calls and the trumpet of God  
 sounds; the dead in Christ will  
 17 rise first; then we the living, who

survive, will be caught up along  
 with them in the clouds to meet  
 the Lord in the air, and so we shall  
 be with the Lord for ever. Now 18  
 then, encourage one another with  
 these words.

As regards the course and periods 5  
 of time, brothers, you have no need  
 of being written to. You know per- 2  
 fectly well that the day of the Lord  
 comes like a thief in the night;  
 when 'all's well' and 'all is safe' 3  
 are on the lips of men, then all of a  
 sudden Destruction is upon them,  
 like pangs on a pregnant woman—  
 escape there is none. But, brothers, 4  
 you are not in the darkness for the  
 Day to surprise you like thieves;\*  
 you are all sons of the Light and 5  
 sons of the day. We do not belong  
 to the night or the darkness. Well 6  
 then, we must not sleep like the  
 rest of men, but be wakeful and  
 sober; for sleepers sleep by night 7  
 and drunkards are drunk by night,  
 but we must be sober, we who 8  
 belong to the day, *clad in faith* and  
 love as *our coat of mail*, with the  
 hope of *salvation as our helmet—*  
 for God destined us not for Wrath 9  
 but to gain salvation through our  
 Lord Jesus Christ, who died for 10  
 us that waking in life or sleeping  
 in death we should live together  
 with him. Encourage one another, 11  
 therefore, and let each edify the  
 other—as indeed you are doing.

Brothers, we beg you to respect 12  
 those who are working among you,  
 presiding over you in the Lord and  
 maintaining discipline; hold them 13  
 in special esteem and affection,  
 for the sake of their work. Be  
 at peace among yourselves. We 14  
 beseech you, brothers, keep a  
 check upon loafers, encourage the

\* Reading κλέπτας with A B and the  
 Bohairic version.



faint-hearted, sustain weak souls,  
 never lose your temper with any-  
 15 one; see that none of you pays  
 back evil for evil, but always aim  
 at what is kind to one another  
 16 and to all the world; rejoice at  
 17 all times, never give up prayer,  
 18 thank God for everything—such  
 is his will for you in Christ Jesus;  
 19 never quench the fire of the Spirit,  
 20 never disdain prophetic revelations  
 21 but test them all, retaining what  
 22 is good and *abstaining from what-*  
*ever kind is evil.*

May the God of peace consecrate 23  
 you through and through! Spirit,  
 soul, and body, may you be kept  
 without break or blame till the  
 arrival of our Lord Jesus Christ!  
 He who calls you is faithful, he will 24  
 do this.

Pray for us too, brothers. 25

Salute every one of the brothers 26  
 with a holy kiss. I adjure you 27  
 by the Lord to have this letter read  
 aloud to all the [holy] brothers.

The grace of our Lord Jesus 28  
 Christ be with you. [Amen.]

# THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE THESSALONIANS

CHAP.

- 1 PAUL and Silvanus and Timotheus, to the church of the Thessalonians in God our Father and the
- 2 Lord Jesus Christ: grace and peace to you from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 3 We are bound always to thank God for you, brothers—it is proper that we should, because your faith grows apace and your mutual love,
- 4 one and all, is increasing. So much so, that throughout the churches of God we are proud of you, proud of the steadfastness and faith you display through all the persecutions and the troubles in which you are
- 5 involved. They are proof positive of God's equity; you are suffering for the realm of God, and he means
- 6 to make you worthy of it—since God considers it but just  
to repay with trouble those who trouble you,
- 7 and repay you who are troubled (as well as us) with rest and relief,  
when the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven  
together with the angels of his power *in flaming fire,*
- 8 *to inflict punishment on those who ignore God,*  
*even on those who refuse obedience to the gospel of our Lord Jesus,*
- 9 men who will pay the penalty of being destroyed eternally  
*from the presence of the Lord and from the glory of his might,*

*when he comes to be glorified in his saints*

and marvelled at in all believers *on that day* (for our testimony has found confirmation\* in your lives). In view of this we always pray 11 for you, asking our God to make you worthy of his calling and by his power to fulfil every good resolve and every effort of faith, *so that 12 the name of our Lord Jesus may be glorified in you* (and you glorified in him), by the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ.

With regard to the arrival of 2 the † Lord Jesus Christ and our muster before him, I beg you, brothers, not to let your minds 2 get easily unsettled or excited by any spirit of prophecy or any declaration or any letter purporting to come from me, to the effect that the Day of the Lord is already here. Let nobody delude you into 3 this belief, whatever he may say. It will not come till the Rebellion takes place first of all, with the revealing of the Lawless ‡ One, the doomed One, the adversary *who 4 vaunts himself above and against every so-called god or object of worship, actually seating himself in the temple of God with the proclamation that he himself is God.*

\* Reading with Markland and Hort ἐπιστάθην (104 469 Ambrosiaster) for the ἐπιστρέψην of most manuscripts and all versions.

† Omitting ἡμῶν with B Syr<sup>hkl</sup>.

‡ Reading ἀνομίας with B, etc., for the Western paraphrastic ἀμαρτίας.



## II. THESSALONIANS III

- 5 Do you not remember I used to tell you this when I was with you?  
 6 Well, you can recall now what it is that restrains him from being revealed before his appointed time.  
 7 For the secret force of lawlessness is at work already; only, it cannot be revealed till he who at present restrains it is removed.  
 8 Then shall the Lawless One be revealed,  
     whom the Lord Jesus *will destroy with the breath of his lips*  
     and quell by his appearing and arrival—  
 9 that One whose arrival is due to Satan's activity,  
     with the full power, the miracles and portents, of falsehood,  
 10 and with the full deceitfulness of evil for those who are doomed to perish,  
     since they refuse to love the Truth that would save them.  
 11 Therefore God visits them with an active delusion,  
     till they put faith in falsehood,  
 12 so that all may be doomed who refuse faith in the Truth but delight in evil.  
 13 Now we are bound always to thank God for you, brothers *beloved by the Lord*, because God has chosen you as the first to be reaped for salvation, by the consecration of your spirit and by faith in the  
 14 Truth; it was for this that he called you by our gospel, to gain the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.  
 15 Well, 'then, brothers, stand firm and hold to the rules which you have learned from us orally or by  
 16 letter. And may our Lord Jesus Christ himself and God our Father who has loved us and given us

eternal encouragement and good hope, graciously encourage your hearts and strengthen them for all good in deed and word.

CHAP.

FINALLY, brothers, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may speed on and triumph, as in your own case, and that we may be delivered from perverse and evil men—for the faith is not held by all. However, the Lord is faithful; he will be sure to strengthen you and protect you from the Evil one. Now, we rely on you in the Lord, confident that you do and will do what we enjoin. May the Lord direct your hearts towards God's love and towards Christ's patience!

Brothers, we charge you in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ to shun any brother who is loafing, instead of following the rule you got\* from us. For you know quite well how to copy us; we did not loaf in your midst, we did not take free meals from anyone; no, toiling hard at our trade, we worked night and day, so as not to be a burden to any of you. Not that we have no right to such support; it was simply to give you a pattern to copy. We used to charge you even when we were with you, 'If a man will not work, he shall not eat.' But we are informed that some of your number are loafing, busybodies instead of busy. Now in the Lord Jesus Christ we charge and exhort such persons to keep quiet, to do their work and earn their own living. As for yourselves, brothers, never grow tired of doing what is right.

\* Reading *παρελάβετε* with B G, etc., for *παρελάβοσαν*.

## II. THESSALONIANS III

14 Only, if anyone will not obey our orders in this letter, mark that man, do not associate with him—that  
15 will make him feel ashamed ! You are not to treat him as an enemy, but to put him under discipline as a brother.

16 May the Lord of peace himself

grant you peace continually, whatever comes.

The Lord be with you all.

The salutation is in my own hand, 17 Paul's; that is a mark in every letter of mine. This is how I write.

' The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ 18 be with you all.'



# THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO TIMOTHEUS

CHAP.

1 PAUL an apostle of Christ Jesus  
by command of God our Saviour  
2 and Christ Jesus our Hope, to Timotheus his lawful son in the faith: grace, mercy, peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.  
3 As I asked you when I was on my way to Macedonia, stay where you are at Ephesus and warn certain individuals against teaching novel-  
4 ties and studying myths and interminable genealogies; such studies bear upon speculations rather than on the divine order which belongs  
5 to faith. Whereas the aim of the Christian discipline is the love that springs from a pure heart, from a good conscience, and from a sincere  
6 faith. Certain individuals have failed here by turning to empty  
7 argument; doctors of the Law is what they want to be, but they have no idea either of the meaning of the words they use or of the themes  
8 on which they harp. I am quite aware that 'the Law is admirable'—provided that one makes a law-  
9 ful use of it; he must keep in mind that no law is ever made for honest people but for the lawless and the insubordinate, for the impious and the sinful, for the irreverent and the profane, for paricides and matricides, murderers, immoral persons,  
10 sodomites, kidnappers, liars, perjurers, and whatever else is contrary to sound doctrine as laid  
11 down by that glorious gospel of the blessed God with which I have been entrusted.

I render thanks to Christ Jesus 12 our Lord, who has made me able for this; he considered me trustworthy and appointed me to the ministry, though I had formerly 13 been a blasphemer and a persecutor and a wanton aggressor. I obtained mercy because in my unbelief I had acted out of ignorance; and the grace of our Lord 14 flooded my life along with the faith and love that Christ Jesus inspires. It is a sure word, it 15 deserves all praise, that "Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners"; and though I am the foremost of sinners, I obtained 16 mercy, for the purpose of furnishing Christ Jesus with the chief illustration of his utter patience; I was to be the typical instance of all who were to believe in him and gain eternal life. To the King of eter- 17 nity, immortal, invisible, the only God, be honour and glory for ever and ever: Amen.

I transmit these instructions to 18 you, Timotheus my son, in accordance with what the prophets said who first directed me to you; fight the good fight on these lines, keep- 19 ing hold of faith and a good conscience. Certain individuals have scouted the good conscience and thus come to grief over their faith—including Hymenaeus and 20 Alexander, whom I have made over to Satan. That will teach them to stop their blasphemous ongoing!

# I. TIMOTHEUS II, III

CHAP.

- 2 WELL, my very first counsel is that supplications, prayers, petitions, and thanksgiving, are to be offered
- 2 for all men—for kings and all in authority, that we may lead a tranquil life in all piety and gravity;
- 3 it is good to pray thus, it is acceptable to our Saviour, to the God who desires all men to be saved and to attain the knowledge of the Truth.
- 5 For "there is one God" and "one intermediary between God and men,
- 6 the man Christ Jesus who gave himself as a ransom for all":—in due
- 7 time this was attested, and I was appointed to be its herald and apostle (I am not telling a lie, it is quite true), to teach the Gentiles faith and truth.
- 8 Now I want the men to offer prayer at any meeting of the church; and let the hands they lift to heaven be holy—they must be free
- 9 from anger and dissension. Women in turn are to dress modestly and quietly in seemly garb; they are not to adorn themselves with plaits of hair, with gold or pearls or expensive finery, but with good deeds (as befits women who make a religious profession). A woman must listen quietly in church and be
- 12 perfectly submissive; I allow no woman to teach or dictate to men,
- 13 she must keep quiet. For Adam
- 14 was created first, then Eve; and Adam was not deceived, it was Eve who was deceived and who fell
- 15 into sin. However, women will get safely through childbirth if they continue to be faithful and loving and holy as well as unassuming.
- 3 It is a popular\* saying that

\* Reading *ἀνθρώπων* with D, the Old Latin, Ambrosiaster, and Western codices known to Jerome. It is much more easy to understand how it was altered to *πιστὸς* for the sake of uniformity with i. 15, etc., than vice versa.

"whoever aspires to office is set upon an excellent occupation." Well, for the office of a bishop a man must be above reproach; he must be only married once, he must be temperate, master of himself, unruffled, hospitable, a skilled teacher, not a drunkard or violent, but lenient and conciliatory, not a lover of money, able to manage his own household properly and keep his children submissive and perfectly respectful (if a man does not know how to manage his own household, how is he to look after the church of God?); he must not be a new convert, in case he gets conceited and incurs the doom passed on the devil; also, he must have a good reputation among outsiders, in case he incurs slander and is trapped by the devil.

Deacons in turn are to be serious men; they are not to be tale-bearers or addicted to drink or pilfering; they must maintain the divine truth of the faith with a pure conscience. They too must be put on probation; after that, if they are above reproach, they can serve as deacons. Their wives must be serious too; they must not be slanderers but temperate and absolutely trustworthy. Deacons are only to be married once, and they must manage their children and households properly. For those who do good service as deacons win a good position for themselves as well as great freedom in the faith of Christ Jesus.

Though I hope to come to you before long, I am writing to you in this way, in case I am detained, to let you see how people ought to behave within the household of God; it is the church of the living God, the pillar and bulwark of the



## I. TIMOTHEUS IV, V

16 Truth. And who does not admit how profound is the divine truth of our religion?—it is He who was “manifest in the flesh, vindicated by the Spirit, seen by the angels, preached among the nations, believed on throughout the world, taken up to glory.”

4 But in later days, the Spirit distinctly declares, certain people will rebel against the faith; they will listen to spirits of error and to the doctrines that daemons teach 2 through plausible sophists who are 3 seared in conscience—men who prohibit marriage and insist on abstinence from foods which God created for believing men, who understand the Truth, to partake 4 of with thanksgiving. Anything God has created is good, and nothing is to be tabooed—provided 5 it is eaten with thanksgiving, for then it is consecrated by the prayer said over it.

6 Lay this before the brotherhood, and you will be an excellent minister of Christ Jesus, brought up on the truths of the faith and on the lessons of the good doctrine you 7 have already followed. Shut your mind against these profane, drivelling myths; train for the religious 8 life. The training of the body is of small service, but religion is of service in all directions; it contains the promise of life both for 9 the present and for the future. It is a sure word, it deserves all 10 praise, that “we toil and strive \* because our hope is fixed upon the living God, the Saviour of all men”—of believers in particular.

\* Reading ἀγωνίζομεθα with N\* A C G K, etc. The context requires an aggressive, active verb. The “sure words” all have a more or less eschatological outlook.

Give these orders and teach these 11 lessons. Let no one slight you 12 because you are a youth, but set the believers an example of speech, behaviour, love, faith, and purity. Attend to your Scripture-reading, 13 your preaching, and your teaching, till I come. You have a gift that 14 came to you transmitted by the prophets, when the presbytery laid their hands upon you; do not neglect that gift. Attend to these 15 duties, let them absorb you, so that all men may note your progress. Watch yourself and watch your 16 teaching; stick to your work; if you do that, you will save your hearers as well as yourself.

Never censure an older man 5 harshly; appeal to him as a father. Treat younger men like brothers, older women like mothers, younger 2 women like sisters—with perfect propriety.

Widows who really need it must 3 be supported from the funds. (When a widow has children or 4 grandchildren, they must learn that the first duty of religion is to their own household, and that they should make some return to those who have brought them up. In God's sight this is an acceptable thing.) The really forlorn widow 5 has her hope fixed on God, night and day she is at her prayers and supplications; whereas the widow 6 who plunges into dissipation is dead before ever she dies. So lay down 7 the following rules, to prevent any reproach being incurred. Who- 8 ever does not provide for his own relatives and particularly for his own family, has repudiated the faith: he is worse than an infidel. No one under sixty is to be put 9 on the church's list of widows; and she must have been only once

- 10 married, she must have a reputation for good service, as a woman who has brought up children, shown hospitality, washed the feet of the saints, relieved distress, and interested herself in all good works.
- 11 Refuse to put young widows on the list, for when their wanton desires alienate them from Christ, they
- 12 want to marry and thus are guilty of breaking their first troth
- 13 to Him. Besides, they become idle unconsciously \* by gadding about from one house to another—and not merely idle but gossips and busybodies, repeating things they have no right to mention.
- 14 So I prefer young widows to marry again, to bear children, to look after their households, and not to afford our opponents any chance of
- 15 reviling us. As it is, some widows have already turned after Satan.—
- 16 Any believer, man or woman, who has widowed relatives, must give them relief; the church is not to be burdened with them; she has to relieve the widows who really need relief.
- 17 Presbyters who are efficient presidents are to be considered worthy of ample remuneration, particularly those who have the task of preach-
- 18 ing and teaching: Scripture says, *You must not muzzle an ox when he is treading the grain*, and *A workman deserves his wages*.
- 19 Never let any charge be brought against a presbyter, unless it is certified by two or three witnesses.
- 20 Those who are guilty of sin you must expose in public, to overawe the others.
- 21 In the presence of God and the

Lord Jesus Christ and the elect angels, I adjure you to be unprejudiced in carrying out these orders; be absolutely impartial.

Never be in a hurry to ordain a 22 presbyter; do not make yourself responsible for the sins of another man—keep your own life pure.† Some people's sins are notorious 24 and call for judgment, but in some cases sin only comes out afterwards. Good works are equally conspi- 25 cuous; and even when they are not, they cannot escape notice for ever.

Let all servants who are under 6 the yoke of slavery remember that their masters are entitled to perfect respect—otherwise it will be a scandal to the Name of God and to our doctrine. Those who have 2 Christian believers as their masters must not take liberties with them because they are brothers; they must be all the better servants because those who get the good of their service are believers and beloved.

This is what you are to teach 3 and preach. Anyone who teaches novelties and refuses to fall in with the sound words of our Lord Jesus Christ and the doctrine that tallies 4 with piety, is a conceited, ignorant creature, with a morbid passion for controversy and argument which only leads to envy, dissension, insults, insinuations, and constant friction between people who are depraved in mind and deprived of the Truth. They imagine 5 religion is a paying concern. And 6 so it is—provided it goes with a

† The words, "Give up being a total abstainer; take a little wine for the sake of your stomach and your frequent attacks of illness," which follow, are either a marginal gloss or misplaced.

\* I accept the conjecture *λανθάνουσι* for the *μανθάνουσι* of the canonical text, which makes the grammatical construction very awkward.



## I. TIMOTHEUS VI

7 contented spirit; for we bring  
 nothing into the world, and we can  
 8 take nothing out of it. If we have  
 food and clothes, we must be con-  
 9 tent with that. Those who are  
 eager to be rich get tempted and  
 trapped in many senseless and  
 pernicious propensities that drag  
 men down to ruin and destruction.  
 10 For love of money is the root of all  
 mischief; it is by aspiring to be  
 rich that certain individuals have  
 gone astray from the faith and  
 found themselves pierced with many  
 11 a pang of remorse. Shun that,  
 O man of God, aim at integrity,  
 piety, faith, love, steadfastness, and  
 12 suavity; fight in the good fight of  
 the faith, secure that life eternal to  
 which you were called when you  
 voiced the good confession in the  
 13 presence of many witnesses. In  
 the presence of God who is the  
 Life of all, and of Christ Jesus who  
 testified to the good confession be-  
 fore Pontius Pilate; I charge you  
 14 to keep your commission free from  
 stain, free from reproach, till the  
 appearance of our Lord Jesus Christ  
 15 —which will be brought about in  
 due time by that blessed and only

Sovereign, King of kings and Lord  
 of lords, who alone has immortality, 16  
 who dwells in light that none can  
 approach, whom no man has ever  
 seen or can see. To him be honour  
 and eternal dominion : Amen.

Charge the rich of this world not 17  
 to be supercilious, and not to fix  
 their hopes on so uncertain a thing  
 as riches but on the living God who  
 richly provides us with all the  
 enjoyments of life; tell them to be 18  
 bountiful, rich in good works, open-  
 handed and generous, amassing 19  
 right good\* treasure for them-  
 selves in the world to come, in  
 order to secure the life which is life  
 indeed.

O Timotheus, keep the securities 20  
 of the faith intact: avoid the  
 profane jargon and contradictions  
 of what is falsely called 'Know-  
 ledge.' Certain individuals have 21  
 failed in the faith by professing  
 that.

Grace be with you. [Amen.]

\* For θεμέλιον I accept the attractive  
 conjecture θέμα λίαν, in view of the close  
 parallel in Tobit iv. 9-10 (θέμα γὰρ ἀγαθὸν  
 θησαυρίζεις σεαυτῷ εἰς ἡμέραν ἀνάγκης • διότι  
 ἐλεημοσύνη ἐκ θανάτου ῥύεται).

# THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO TIMOTHEUS

CHAP.

1 PAUL an apostle of Christ Jesus  
by the will of God in the service of the Life he has promised in  
2 Christ Jesus—to his beloved son  
Timotheus: grace, mercy, peace,  
from God the Father and Christ  
Jesus our Lord.  
3 I render thanks to God, the God  
of my fathers whom I worship with  
a pure conscience, as I mention you  
4 constantly in my prayers. When  
I recall the tears you shed when  
we parted, I long by night and day  
to see you again. That would fill  
5 me with joy, for I am reminded of  
your sincere faith, a faith which  
dwelt first in your grandmother  
Lois and your mother Eunice, as  
it dwells (I feel sure) in yourself.  
6 Hence I would remind you to re-  
kindle the divine gift which you  
received when my hands were laid  
7 upon you; for God has not given us  
a timid spirit but a spirit of power  
8 and love and discipline. So do not  
be ashamed to testify to our Lord,  
and do not be ashamed of a prisoner  
of the Lord like me; join me in  
bearing suffering for the gospel by  
9 the power of the God who has saved  
us and called us to a life of consecra-  
tion—not for anything we have done  
but because he chose to do it him-  
self, by the grace which he gave us  
10 ages ago in Christ Jesus and has  
now revealed in the appearance of  
our Saviour Jesus Christ, who has  
put down death and brought life  
and immortality to light by the  
11 gospel. Of that gospel I have been

appointed a herald and an apostle  
and a teacher, and this is why I 12  
am suffering. Still, I am not  
ashamed of it; I know whom I  
have trusted and I am certain he  
is able to keep what I have put into  
his hands till the great Day.

Model yourself on the sound 13  
instruction you have had from me  
in the faith and love of Christ Jesus.  
Keep the great securities of your 14  
faith intact, by aid of the holy  
Spirit that dwells within us. You 15  
are aware that all the Asiatics have  
discarded me, including Phygelus  
and Hermogenes. May the Lord 16  
show favour to the household of  
Onesiphorus, for many a time he  
braced me up; he was not ashamed  
of my imprisonment—no, he made 17  
eager search for me when he reached  
Rome, and he found me (may he 18  
find favour with the Lord on the  
great Day! The Lord grant it!).  
And you know very well what a  
help he was to me in Ephesus.

Now, my son, be strong in the 2  
grace of Christ Jesus, and trans- 2  
mit the instructions I gave you in  
presence of many witnesses to  
trustworthy men, that they may  
be competent to teach others. Join 3  
the ranks of those who bear suffer-  
ing, like a loyal soldier of Christ  
Jesus. No soldier gets entangled 4  
in civil pursuits; his aim is to  
satisfy his commander. Again, a 5  
competitor in the games is not  
crowned unless he observes the rules.  
The farmer who has done the work 6



## II. TIMOTHEUS III

must have the first share of the  
7 fruit. Think what I mean! The  
Lord will help you to understand  
perfectly.

8 Never forget "Jesus Christ risen  
from the dead, descended from  
9 David"—that is my gospel, for  
which I have to suffer imprison-  
ment as if I were a criminal. (But  
there is no prison for the word  
10 of God.) All I endure is for the  
sake of the elect, to let them obtain  
their share of the salvation of  
Christ Jesus and also of eternal  
11 glory. It is a sure word, that

"If we have died with him, we  
shall live with him,  
12 if we endure, then we shall reign  
with him,  
if we disown him, then he shall  
disown us,  
13 if we are faithless, he remains  
faithful"—

for he cannot be untrue to himself.

14 Remind men of this: adjure  
them before the Lord not to bandy  
arguments—no good comes out of  
that, it only means the undoing

15 of your audience. Do your utmost  
to let God see that you at least are  
a sound workman, with no need to  
be ashamed of the way you handle

16 the word of the Truth. Avoid  
all that profane jargon, for it  
leads people still further into irre-  
17 ligious, and their doctrine spreads  
like a gangrene. So it is with  
18 Hymenaeus and Philetus; they  
have failed in the Truth by arguing  
that the resurrection has taken  
place already, and they are under-  
19 mining some people's faith. But  
the solid foundation laid by God  
remains, and this is its inscription:

*the Lord knows who are his,*  
and

'let everyone who names the  
name of the Lord give up evil.'

In any great house there are indeed 20  
vessels not only of gold and silver  
but also of wood and clay, some  
for noble, some for menial service.  
If one will only keep clear of the 21  
latter, he will be put to noble use,  
he will be consecrated and useful  
to the Owner of the House, he will  
be set apart for good work of all  
kinds. So shun the lusts of youth 22  
and aim at integrity, faith, love  
and peace, in the company of those  
who invoke the Lord out of a pure  
heart. Shut your mind against 23  
foolish, popular controversy; be  
sure that only breeds strife. And 24  
the Lord's servant must not be a  
man of strife; he must be kind to  
everybody, a skilled teacher, a man  
who will not resent injuries; he 25  
must be gentle in his admonitions  
to the opposition—God may per-  
haps let them change their mind  
and admit the Truth; they may 26  
come to their senses again and  
escape the snare of the devil, as  
they are brought back to life by  
God to do his will.

CHAP.

MARK this, there are hard times 3  
coming in the last days. For men 2  
will be selfish, fond of money, boast-  
ful, haughty, abusive, disobedient  
to their parents, ungrateful, ir- 3  
reverent, callous, relentless, scur-  
rilous, dissolute, and savage; they 4  
will hate goodness, they will be  
treacherous, reckless and conceited,  
preferring pleasure to God—for 5  
though they keep up a form of  
religion, they will have nothing to  
do with it as a force. Avoid all 6  
such. Some of them worm their  
way into families and get hold of  
the women-folk who feel crushed  
by the burden of their sins—way-  
ward creatures of impulse, who are 7

## II. TIMOTHEUS IV

always curious to learn and never able to attain the knowledge of the  
 8 Truth. For these guides of theirs are hostile to the Truth, just as Jannes and Jambres were hostile to Moses; they are depraved in mind and useless for all purposes of faith. However, they will get no further, for their aberration will be detected by everyone, as was the case with these magicians.

10 Now you have followed my teaching, my practice, my aims, my faith, my patience, my love, my steadfastness, my persecutions, my sufferings—all that befell me at Antioch, Iconium and Lystra, all the persecutions I had to undergo, from which  
 12 the Lord rescued me. Yes, and all who want to live the religious life in Christ Jesus will be persecuted.  
 13 Bad characters and impostors will go from bad to worse, deceiving others and deceived themselves;  
 14 but hold you to what you have been taught, hold to your convictions, remember who your teachers were,  
 15 remember you have known from childhood the sacred writings that can impart saving wisdom by faith  
 16 in Christ Jesus. All scripture is inspired by God and profitable for teaching, for reproof, for amendment, and for moral discipline, to make the man of God proficient and equip him for good work of every kind.

4 In the presence of God and of Christ Jesus who will judge the living and the dead, in the light of his appearance and his reign, I adjure you to preach the word; keep at it in season and out of season, refuting, checking, and exhorting men; never lose patience with them, and never give up your teaching, for the time will come when

people will decline to be taught sound doctrine and will accumulate teachers to suit themselves and tickle their own fancies; they will give up listening to the Truth and turn to myths.

Whatever happens, be self-possessed, flinch from no suffering, do your work as an evangelist, and discharge all your duties as a minister.

The last drops of my own sacrifice are falling; my time to go has come. I have fought in the good fight; I have run my course; I have kept the faith. Now the crown of a good life awaits me, with which the Lord, that just Judge, will reward me on the great Day—and not only me but all who have loved and longed for his appearance.

Do your best to come soon to me, for Demas, in his love for this world, has deserted me and gone to Thessalonica; Crescens is off to Gaul, Titus to Dalmatia, Luke 11 is the only one who is with me. Pick up Mark and bring him along with you, for he is of great use in helping me. (I have had to send Tychicus to Ephesus.) When you come, bring the mantle 13 I left at Troas with Carpus, also my books, and particularly my paper.

Alexander the blacksmith has 14 done me a lot of harm: *the Lord will pay him back for what he has done* (beware of him), for he has 15 been bitterly hostile to anything I have said. The first time I had 16 to defend myself, I had no supporters; everyone deserted me. God grant it may not be brought up against them! But the Lord 17 supported me and gave me strength to make a full statement of the



## II. TIMOTHEUS IV

gospel and let all the heathen hear  
it. I was rescued *from the jaws of*  
18 *the lion*. The Lord will rescue me  
from every assault of evil, he will  
bring me safe to his own realm in  
heaven. To him be glory for ever  
and ever! Amen.  
19 Salute Prisca and Aquila and the  
household of Onesiphorus.

Erastus stayed on at Corinth: 20  
I left Trophimus ill at Miletus.  
Do your best to come before winter. 21  
Eubulus salutes you; so do  
Pudens, Linus, Claudia, and all  
the brotherhood.  
The Lord Jesus be with your 22  
spirit.  
Grace be with you all.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAUL TO

# TITUS

### CHAP.

1 PAUL a servant of God and an apostle of Jesus Christ for the faith of God's elect and for their knowledge of the Truth that goes with  
2 a religious life, serving in hope of the life eternal which God, who  
3 never lies, promised ages ago—he gave effect to his word in due time by a proclamation with which I have been entrusted by command  
4 of God our Saviour:—to Titus my lawful son in a faith we hold in common; grace and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Saviour.

5 I left you behind in Crete in order to finish putting things right and to appoint presbyters in every  
6 town as I told you, men who are above reproach, only once married, with children who believe and who are not liable to the charge of being profligate or insubordinate.

7 [For a bishop must be above reproach—he is a steward of God's house—he must not be presumptuous or hot-tempered or a drunkard or violent or addicted to pilfering;  
8 he must be hospitable, a lover of goodness, master of himself, a just man, a religious man, and abstemious; he must hold by the sure truths of doctrine so as to be able to give instruction in sound doctrine and refute objections  
10 raised by any.]\* For there are plenty of insubordinate creatures

\* This passage seems to have been added, rather awkwardly, to the original text.

who impose on people with their empty arguments, particularly those who have come over from Judaism; they must be silenced, for they  
11 are undermining whole families by teaching objectionable doctrine for the base end of making money. It  
12 has been said by one of themselves, by a prophet of their own, that—

“Cretans are always liars, evil beasts, lazy gluttons.”

That is a true statement. So deal  
13 sharply with them, to have them sound in the faith instead of  
14 studying Jewish myths and rules laid down by men who have discarded the Truth. For the pure  
15 all things are pure, but nothing is pure for the polluted and unbelieving; their very mind and conscience are polluted. They profess  
16 to know God, but they deny him by their deeds; they are detestable, disobedient, and useless for good work of any kind.

### CHAP.

You must instruct people in  
2 what is due to sound doctrine. Tell  
2 the older men to be temperate, serious, masters of themselves, sound in faith, in love, and in steadfastness. Tell the older women  
3 also to be reverent in their demeanour and not to be slanderers or slaves to drink; they must give good counsel, so that the  
4 young women may be trained to love their husbands and children,



5 to be mistress of themselves, chaste,  
domestic, kind, and submissive to  
their husbands—otherwise it will  
6 be a scandal to the gospel. Tell  
the young men also to be masters  
7 of themselves at all points; set  
them an example of good conduct;  
be sincere and serious in your teach-  
8 ing, let your words be sound and  
such that no exception can be taken  
to them, so that the opposite side  
may be confounded by finding no-  
thing that they can say to our dis-  
9 credit. Tell servants to be sub-  
missive to their masters and to give  
them satisfaction all round, not to  
10 be refractory, not to embezzle,  
but to prove themselves truly  
faithful at all points, so as to be an  
ornament to the doctrine of God  
11 our Saviour in all respects. For  
the grace of God has appeared to  
12 save all men, and it schools us to  
renounce irreligion and worldly  
passions and to live a life of self-  
mastery, of integrity, and of piety  
13 in this present world, awaiting the  
blessed hope of the appearance of  
the Glory of the great God and  
14 of our Saviour Christ Jesus, who  
gave himself up for us to redeem us  
from all iniquity and secure himself  
a clean people with a zest for good  
works.  
15 Tell them all this, exhort and  
reprove, with full authority; let  
no one slight you.  
3 Remind them to be submissive  
to their rulers and authorities; they  
must obey, they must be ready for  
2 any good work, they must abuse  
no one, they must not quarrel, but  
be conciliatory and display perfect  
3 gentleness to all men. For we our-  
selves were once senseless, disobe-

dient, astray, enslaved to all man-  
ner of passions and pleasures; we  
spent our days in malice and envy,  
we were hateful, and we hated one  
another. But “the goodness and  
affection of God our Saviour ap-  
peared; and he saved us, not for  
anything we had done but from  
his own pity for us, by the water  
that means regeneration and re-  
newal under the holy Spirit which  
he poured upon us richly through  
Jesus Christ our Saviour, that we  
might be justified by his grace  
and become heirs to the hope of  
life eternal.” It is a sure saying. 8

I want you to insist on this,  
that those who have faith in God  
must profess honest occupations.  
Such counsels are right and good  
for men. But avoid foolish con-  
troversy, and let genealogies and  
dissensions and strife over the Law  
alone, for these are fruitless and  
futile.

After a first and a second warning 10  
have no more to do with a factious  
person; you may be sure a man like 11  
that is perverted; he is sinning and  
he knows it.

Whenever I send Artemas or 12  
Tychicus to you, do your best to  
come to me at Nicopolis, for I have  
decided to winter there. Give a 13  
hearty send-off to Zenas the jurist  
and Apollos; see that they want  
for nothing. Our people must 14  
really learn to profess honest occu-  
pations, so as to be able to meet such  
special occasions; they must not  
be idle.

All who are with me salute you. 15  
Salute those who love us in the  
faith.

Grace be with you all.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAUL TO PHILEMON

1 PAUL a prisoner of Christ Jesus  
and brother Timotheus, to our be-  
2 loved fellow-worker Philemon, to  
our sister Apphia, to our fellow-  
soldier Archippus, and to the church  
3 that meets in your house: grace  
and peace to you from God our  
Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.  
4 I always thank my God when I  
5 mention you in my prayers; for  
as I hear of your love and loyalty  
to the Lord Jesus and to all the  
6 saints, I pray that by their partici-  
pation in your loyal faith they  
may have a vivid sense of how  
much good we \* Christians can  
attain.  
7 I have had great joy and en-  
couragement over your love, my  
brother, over the way you have  
refreshed the hearts of the saints.  
8 Hence, although in Christ I would  
feel quite free to order you to do  
9 your duty, I prefer to appeal to you  
on the ground of love. Well then,  
as Paul the old man, who now-a-  
days is a prisoner for Christ Jesus,  
10 I appeal to you on behalf of my  
spiritual son born while I was in  
11 prison. It is Onesimus! Once you  
found him a worthless character, but  
now-a-days he is worth something  
12 to you and me. I am sending him  
back to you, and parting with my

very heart. I would have liked to 13  
keep him beside me, that as your  
deputy he might serve me during my  
imprisonment for the gospel; but 14  
I did not want to do anything with-  
out your consent, so that your good-  
ness to me might come of your own  
free will, without any appearance  
of constraint.

Perhaps this was why you and 15  
he were parted for a while, that you  
might get him back for good, no 16  
longer a mere slave but something  
more than a slave—a beloved  
brother; especially dear to me but  
how much more to you as a man  
and as a Christian! You count me 17  
a partner? Then receive him as  
you would receive me, and if he has 18  
cheated you of any money or owes  
you any sum, put that down to my  
account. This is in my own hand- 19  
writing: 'I Paul promise to refund  
it'—not to mention that you owe  
me, over and above, your very  
soul. Come, brother, let me have 20  
some return from you in the Lord!  
Refresh my heart in Christ.

I send you this letter relying on 21  
your obedience; I know you will  
do even more than I tell you. And 22  
get quarters ready for me, for I am  
hoping that by your prayers I shall  
be restored to you.

Epaphras my fellow-prisoner in 23  
Christ Jesus salutes you. So do 24  
Mark, Aristarchus, Demas and  
Luke, my fellow-workers.

The grace of the Lord Jesus 25  
Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

\* Reading *ἡμῖν* instead of *ὁμῖν*. As Lightfoot observes, "scribes would be strongly tempted to alter *ἡμῖν* into *ὁμῖν* from a misapprehension of the sense, and a wish to apply the words to Philemon and his household."



# THE EPISTLE TO THE HEBREWS

CHAP

1 MANY were the forms and fashions  
in which God spoke of old to  
2 our fathers by the prophets, but  
in these days at the end he has  
spoken to us by a Son—a Son  
whom he appointed heir of the  
universe, as it was by him that  
3 he created the world. He, reflect-  
ing God's bright glory and stamped  
with God's own character, sustains  
the universe with his word of power;  
when he had secured our purifi-  
cation from sins, he sat down at  
the right hand of the Majesty on  
4 high; and thus he is superior to the  
angels, as he has inherited a Name  
5 superior to theirs. For to what  
angel did God ever say,

*'Thou art my son,  
to-day have I become thy father'?*  
Or again,

*'I will be a father to him,  
and he shall be a son to me'?*

6 And further, when introducing the  
Firstborn into the world, he says,

*'Let all God's angels worship him.'*

7 While he says of angels,  
*'Who makes his angels into winds,  
his servants into flames of fire,'*

8 he says of the Son,  
*'God is thy throne for ever and ever,  
thy royal sceptre is the sceptre of  
equity:'*

9 *thou hast loved justice and hated  
lawlessness,\*  
therefore God, thy God, has con-  
secrated thee  
with the oil of rejoicing beyond thy  
comrades'—*

\* Reading ἀνομίαν instead of ἀδικίαν.

and, 10

*'Thou didst found the earth at the  
beginning, O Lord,  
and the heavens are the work of thy  
hands;  
they will perish, but thou re- 11  
mainest,  
they will all be worn out like a  
garment,  
thou wilt roll them up like a mantle 12  
and † they will be changed,  
but thou art the same,  
and thy years will never fail.'*

To what angel did he ever say, 13

*'Sit at my right hand,  
till I make your enemies a footstool  
for your feet'?*

Are not all angels merely spirits in 14  
the divine service, commissioned for  
the benefit of those who are to in-  
herit salvation?

We must therefore pay closer 2  
attention to what we have heard,  
in case we drift away. For if the 2  
divine word spoken by angels held  
good, if transgression and disobedi-  
ence met with due punishment in  
every case, how shall we escape 3  
the penalty for neglecting a salva-  
tion which was originally proclaimed  
by the Lord himself and guaranteed  
to us by those who heard him, while 4  
God corroborated their testimony  
with signs and wonders and a variety  
of miraculous powers, distributing  
the holy Spirit as it pleased him.

For the world to come, of which 5  
I am speaking, was not put under

† Omitting [ὡς ἱουδαίου], which has been  
repeated from the previous line.

6 the control of angels. One writer, as we know, has affirmed,

*What is man, that thou art mindful of him?*

*or the son of man, that thou carest for him?*

7 *For a little while thou hast put him lower than the angels, crowning him with glory and honour,*

8 *putting all things under his feet.\**

Now by *putting all things under him*, the writer meant to leave nothing out of his control. But, as it is, we do not yet see *all things controlled* by

9 man; what we do see is Jesus *who was put lower than the angels for a little while* to suffer death, and who has been *crowned with glory and honour* that by God's grace he might

10 taste death for everyone. In bringing many sons to glory, it was befitting that He for whom and by whom the universe exists, should perfect the Pioneer of their salvation by

11 suffering. For sanctifier and sanctified have all one origin. That is why he is not ashamed to call them

12 brothers, saying,

*'I will proclaim thy name to my brothers,*

*in the midst of the church I will sing of thee,'*

13 and again,

*'I will put my trust in him,'*

and again,

*'Here am I and the children God has given me.'*

14 Since the children then share blood and flesh, he himself participated in their nature, so that by dying he might crush him who wields the power of death (that is to say, the  
15 devil) and release from thralldom those who lay under a life-long  
16 fear of death. (For of course it is

not angels that *he succours*, it is *the offspring of Abraham*.) He had 17 to resemble his brothers in every respect, in order to prove a merciful and faithful high priest in things divine, to expiate the sins of the People. It is as he suffered 18 by his temptations that he is able to help the tempted.

Holy brothers, you who participate in a heavenly calling, look at Jesus then, at the apostle and high priest of our confession; he is faithful to Him who appointed him. For while Moses also was *faithful in every department of God's house*, Jesus has been adjudged greater glory than Moses, inasmuch as the founder of a house enjoys greater honour than the house itself. (Every house is 4 founded by someone, but God is the founder of all.) Besides, while Moses was *faithful in every department of God's house* as an attendant —by way of witness to the coming revelation—Christ is faithful as a 6 Son over God's house.

Now we are this house of God, if we will only keep confident and proud of our hope.\* Therefore, as 7 the holy Spirit says,

*To-day, when you hear his voice, harden not your hearts as at the* 8

*Provocation,*

*on the day of the Temptation in the desert,*

*where your fathers put me to the* 9 *proof,*

*and for forty years felt what I could do.*

*Therefore I grew exasperated with* 10 *that generation,*

*I said, 'They are always astray in their heart':*

*They would not learn my ways;*

\* Omitting μέχρι τέλους βεβαίαν, which has probably been inserted from ver. 14, where the same words occur in a similar connexion.

\* Omitting καὶ κατεστησας αὐτὸν ἐπὶ τὰ ἔργα τῶν χειρῶν σου.



## HEBREWS IV, V

- 11 *so I swore in my anger,*  
*'they shall never enter my Rest.'*
- 12 Brothers, take care in case there is  
 a wicked, unbelieving heart in any  
 of you, moving you to apostatize  
 13 from the living God. Rather admonish  
 one another daily, so long  
 as this word *To-day* is uttered,  
 that none of you may be deceived  
 14 by sin and *hardened*. For we only  
 participate in Christ provided that  
 we keep firm to the very end the  
 confidence with which we started,  
 15 this word ever sounding in our ears,  
*To-day, when you hear his voice,*  
*harden not your hearts as at the*  
*Provocation.*
- 16 Who heard and yet *provoked* him?  
 Was it not all who left Egypt under  
 17 the leadership of Moses? And with  
 whom was he *exasperated for forty*  
*years*? Was it not with those  
 who sinned, whose *corpses fell in the*  
 18 *desert*? And to whom *did he swear*  
*that they would never enter his Rest*?  
 To whom but those who disobeyed?  
 Thus we see it was owing to unbelief  
 4 that they could not enter. Well  
 then, as the promise of entrance  
 is still left to us, let us be afraid  
 of anyone being judged to have  
 2 missed it. For we have had the  
 good news as well as they; only,  
 the message they heard was of no  
 use to them, because it did not  
 meet with \* faith in the hearers.  
 3 For we do *enter the Rest* by our  
 faith: according to his word,  
*As I swore in my anger,*  
*they shall never enter my Rest—*  
 although *his works* were all over by  
 4 the foundation of the world. For he  
 says this somewhere about the  
 seventh day: *And God rested from*  
*all his works on the seventh day.*

\* Reading συγκεκρασμένος or συγκεκρα-  
 μένος with N, the Old Latin, the Peshitto,  
 etc.

And again in this passage, *they shall* 5  
*never enter my Rest.* Since then it 6  
 is reserved for some to *enter it*, and  
 since those who formerly got the  
 good news failed to enter owing to  
 their disobedience, he again fixes 7  
 a day; *To-day*—as he says in  
 'David' after so long an interval,  
 and as has been already quoted—

*To-day, when you hear his voice,*  
*harden not your hearts.*

Thus if Joshua had given them 8  
 Rest, God would not speak later  
 about another day. There is a 9  
 sabbath-Rest, then, reserved still  
 for the People of God (for once a 10  
*man enters his rest, he rests from*  
*work just as God did).*

Let us be eager then to *enter that* 11  
*Rest*, in case anyone falls into the  
 same sort of disobedience. For the 12  
 Logos of God is a living thing,  
 active and more cutting than any  
 sword with double edge, penetrating  
 to the very division of soul and  
 spirit, joints and marrow—scrutin-  
 izing the very thoughts and concep-  
 tions of the heart. And no created 13  
 thing is hidden from him; all things  
 lie open and exposed before the eyes  
 of him with whom we have to  
 reckon.

As we have a great high priest, 14  
 then, who has passed through the  
 heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us  
 hold fast to our confession; for ours 15  
 is no high priest who is incapable of  
 sympathizing with our weaknesses,  
 but one who has been tempted in  
 every respect like ourselves, yet  
 without sinning. So let us approach 16  
 the throne of grace with confidence,  
 that we may receive mercy and  
 find grace to help us in the hour  
 of need.

Every high priest who is selected 5  
 from men and appointed to act on

behalf of men in things divine,  
offering gifts and sacrifices for sins,  
2 can deal gently with those who err  
through ignorance, since he him-  
3 self is beset with weakness—which  
obliges him to present offerings for  
his own sins as well as for those of  
4 the People. Also, it is an office  
which no one elects to take for him-  
self; he is called to it by God, just  
5 as Aaron was. Similarly Christ was  
not raised to the glory of the high  
priesthood by himself but by Him  
who declared to him,

*Thou art my son,  
to-day have I become thy father.*

6 Just as elsewhere he says,

*Thou art a priest for ever, with the  
rank of Melchizedek.*

7 In the days of his flesh, with bitter  
cries and tears, he offered prayers  
and supplications to Him who was  
able to save him from death; and  
he was heard, because of his godly  
8 fear. Thus, Son though he was,  
he learned by all he suffered how  
9 to obey, and by being thus perfected  
he became the source of eternal  
10 salvation for all who obey him, be-  
ing designated by God high priest  
*with the rank of Melchizedek.*

11 On this point I have a great  
deal to say, which it is hard to make  
intelligible to you. For you have  
12 grown dull of hearing. Though by  
this time you should be teaching  
other people, you still need some-  
one to teach you once more the  
rudimentary principles of the divine  
revelation. You are in need of  
13 milk, not of solid food. (For any-  
one who is fed on milk is un-  
skilled in moral truth; he is a  
14 mere babe. Whereas solid food  
is for the mature, for those who  
have their faculties trained by  
exercise to distinguish good and  
evil.)

LET us pass on then to what 6  
is mature, leaving elementary  
Christian doctrine behind, instead  
of laying the foundation over again  
with repentance from dead works,  
with faith in God, with instruction 2  
about ablutions and the laying on  
of hands, about the resurrection of  
the dead and eternal punishment.  
With God's permission, we will take 3  
this step.\* For in the case of people 4  
who have been once enlightened,  
who tasted the heavenly Gift, who  
participated in the holy Spirit, who  
tasted the goodness of God's word  
and the powers of the world to  
come, and then fell away—it is 6  
impossible to make them repent  
afresh, since they crucify the Son  
of God in their own persons and  
hold him up to obloquy. For land 7  
which absorbs the rain that often  
falls on it, and bears *plants* that are  
useful to those for whom it is tilled,  
receives a blessing from God;  
whereas, if it *produces thorns and* 8  
*thistles*, it is reprobate and on the  
verge of being *cursed*—its fate is to  
be burned.

Though I say this, beloved, I feel 9  
sure you will take the better course  
that means salvation. God is not 10  
unfair; he will not forget what you  
have done, or the love you have  
shown for his sake in ministering,  
as you still do, to the saints. It is 11  
my heart's desire that each of you  
would prove equally keen upon real-  
izing your full hope to the very end,  
so that instead of being slack you 12  
may imitate those who inherit the  
promises by their steadfast faith.  
For in making a promise to Abra- 13  
ham God *swore by himself* (since he  
could swear by none greater), *I will* 14  
*indeed bless you and multiply you.*

\* Reading *ποθωμεν* with N B, the Latin  
version, etc., instead of *ποθωμεν*.



15 Thus it was that Abraham by his  
steadfastness obtained what he had  
16 been promised. For as men swear  
by a greater than themselves, and as  
an oath means to them a guarantee  
17 that ends any dispute, God, in his  
desire to afford the heirs of the  
Promise a special proof of the solid  
character of his purpose, interposed  
18 with an oath; so that by these two  
solid facts (the Promise and the  
Oath), where it is impossible for God  
to be false, we refugees might have  
strong encouragement to seize the  
19 hope set before us, anchoring the  
soul to it safe and sure, as *it enters  
the inner Presence behind the veil.*

20 There Jesus entered for us in ad-  
vance, when he became high priest  
*for ever with the rank of Melchizedek.*

7 For Melchizedek, the king of Salem,  
a priest of the Most High God,  
who met Abraham on his return  
from the slaughter of the kings and  
2 blessed him—who had a tenth part  
of everything assigned him by  
Abraham—this Melchizedek is prim-  
arily a king of righteousness (that is  
the meaning of his name); then,  
besides that, king of Salem (which  
3 means, king of peace). He has  
neither father nor mother nor  
genealogy, neither a beginning to  
his days nor an end to his life, but,  
resembling the Son of God, con-  
tinues to be priest permanently.

4 Now mark the dignity of this man.  
The patriarch Abraham paid him a  
5 tenth of the spoils. Those sons of  
Levi who receive the priestly office  
are indeed ordered by law to tithe  
the people (that is, their brothers),  
although the latter are descended  
6 from Abraham; but he who had no  
Levitical genealogy actually tithed  
Abraham and blessed the possessor  
7 of the promises! (And there is no  
question that it is the inferior who

is blessed by the superior.) Again, 8  
it is mortal men in the one case who  
receive *tithes*, while in the other it  
is one of whom the witness is that  
'he lives.' In fact, we might 9  
almost say that even Levi the re-  
ceiver of tithes paid tithes through  
Abraham; for he was still in the 10  
loins of his father when *Melchizedek  
met him.* Further, if the Levitical 11  
priesthood had been the means of  
reaching perfection (for it was on  
the basis of that priesthood that  
the Law was enacted for the  
People), why was it still necessary  
for another sort of priest to emerge  
*with the rank of Melchizedek*, instead  
of simply *with the rank* of Aaron  
(for when the priesthood is changed, 12  
a change of law necessarily follows)?  
He who is thus described belongs 13  
to another tribe, no member of  
which ever devoted himself to the  
altar; for it is evident that our 14  
Lord sprang from Judah, and  
Moses never mentioned priesthood  
in connexion with that tribe. This 15  
becomes all the more plain when  
another priest emerges *resembling  
Melchizedek*, one who has become 16  
a priest by the power of an indis-  
soluble Life and not by the law of an  
external command; for the witness 17  
to him is,

*Thou art priest for ever, with the  
rank of Melchizedek.*

A previous command is set aside 18  
on account of its weakness and  
uselessness (for the Law made 19  
nothing perfect), and there is in-  
troduced a better Hope, by means  
of which we can draw near to  
God. A better Hope, because it 20  
was not promised apart from an  
oath. Previous priests became 21  
priests apart from any oath, but  
he has an oath from Him who said  
to him,

*The Lord has sworn, and he will not change his mind, thou art a priest for ever.*

22 And this makes Jesus surety for a  
23 superior covenant. Also, while they became priests in large numbers, since death prevents them from  
24 continuing to serve, he holds his priesthood without any successor,  
25 since he continues *for ever*. Hence for all time he is able to save those who approach God through him, as he is always living to intercede on their behalf.

26 Such was the high priest for us, saintly, innocent, unstained, lifted high above the heavens, far from  
27 all contact with the sinful, one who has no need, like yonder high priests, day by day to offer sacrifices first for their own sins and then for those of the People—he did that once for all in offering up  
28 himself. For the Law appoints human beings in their weakness to the priesthood; but the word of the Oath appoints a Son who is made perfect *for ever*.

8 The point\* of all this is, we do have such a high priest, one who is seated at the right hand of the throne  
2 of Majesty in the heavens, and who officiates in the sanctuary or true tabernacle set up by the Lord and not  
3 by man. Now, as every high priest is appointed to offer gifts and sacrifices, he too must have something to  
4 offer. Were he on earth, he would not be a priest at all, for there are priests already to offer the gifts  
5 prescribed by Law (men who serve a mere outline and shadow of the heavenly—as Moses was instructed, when he was about to execute the building of the tabernacle: *see, God*

\* Or, as Coverdale translates, "the pith."  
"All this" means "all the previous argument."

said, that you make everything on the pattern shown you upon the mountain). As it is, however, the divine service he has obtained is superior, owing to the fact that he mediates a superior covenant, enacted with superior promises. For if the first covenant had been faultless, there would have been no occasion for a second. Whereas God does find fault with the people of that covenant, when he says:

*The day is coming, saith the Lord, when I will conclude a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah.*

*It will not be on the lines of the covenant I made with their fathers,*

*on the day I took them by the hand to lead out of Egypt's land; for they would not hold to my covenant,*

*so I let them alone,† saith the Lord.*

*This is the covenant I will make with the house of Israel when that day comes, saith the Lord;*

*I will set my laws within their mind,*

*inscribing them upon their hearts; I will be a God to them,*

*and they shall be a People to me; one citizen will no longer teach his fellow,*

*one man will no longer teach his brother,*

*saying, 'Know the Lord,' for all will know me, low and high together.*

*I will be merciful to their iniquities, and remember their sins no more.*

By saying 'a new covenant,' he antiquates the first. And whatever is antiquated and aged is on the verge of vanishing.

† The same Greek word as is translated "neglected" in ii. 3.



CHAP.

9 THE first covenant had indeed its regulations for worship and a  
2 material sanctuary. A tent was set up, the outer tent, containing the lampstand, the table, and the loaves of the Presence; this is called  
3 the Holy place. But behind the second veil was the tent called  
4 the Holy of Holies, containing the golden altar of incense, and also the ark of the covenant covered all over with gold, which held the golden pot of manna, the rod of Aaron that once blossomed, and the  
5 tablets of the covenant; above this were the cherubims of the Glory, overshadowing the mercy seat—matters which it is impossible for me to discuss at present in detail.  
6 Such were the arrangements for worship. The priests constantly enter the first tent, in the discharge  
7 of their ritual duties, but the second tent is entered only once a year by the high priest alone—and it must not be without blood, which he presents on behalf of himself and  
8 the errors of the People. By this the holy Spirit means that the way into the Holiest Presence was not disclosed so long as the first tent  
9 (which foreshadowed the present age) was still standing, with its offerings of gifts and sacrifices which cannot possibly make the conscience of the worshipper per-  
10 fect, since they relate merely to food and drink and a variety of ablutions—outward regulations for the body, that only hold till the  
11 period of the New Order. But when Christ arrived as the high priest of the bliss that was to be, he passed through the greater and more perfect tent which no hands had made (no part, that is to say, of the pre-  
12 sent order), not taking any blood

of goats and oxen but his own blood, and entered once for all into the Holy place. He secured an eternal redemption. For if the blood of 13 goats and bulls and the ashes of a heifer, sprinkled on defiled persons, give them a holiness that bears on bodily purity, how much more shall 14 the blood of Christ, who in the spirit of the eternal offered himself as an unblemished sacrifice to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve a living God? He 15 mediates a new covenant for this reason, that those who have been called may obtain the eternal inheritance they have been promised, now that a death has occurred which redeems them from the transgressions involved in the first covenant. Thus in the case of a will, 16 the death of the testator must be announced. A will only holds in 17 cases of death; it is never valid so long as the testator is alive. Hence even the first covenant of 18 God's will was not inaugurated apart from blood; for after Moses 19 had announced every command in the Law to all the people, he took the blood of calves and goats, together with water, scarlet wool and hyssop, sprinkling the book and all the people, and saying, *This is 20 the blood of that covenant which is God's command for you.* He even 21 sprinkled with blood the tent and all the utensils of worship in the same way. In fact, one might 22 almost say that by Law everything is cleansed with blood. No blood shed, no remission of sins! Now, 23 while the copies of the heavenly things had to be cleansed with sacrifices like these, the heavenly things themselves required nobler sacrifices. For Christ has not en- 24 tered a holy place which human

hands have made (a mere type of the reality !); he has entered heaven itself, now to appear in the presence  
 25 of God on our behalf. Nor was it to offer himself repeatedly, like the high priest entering the holy place every year with blood that was  
 26 not his own:—for in that case he would have had to suffer repeatedly, ever since the world was founded. Nay, once for all, at the end of the world, he has appeared with his  
 27 self-sacrifice to abolish sin. And just as it is appointed for men to die once and after that to be  
 28 judged, so Christ, after being once sacrificed to bear the sins of many, will appear again, not to deal with sin but for the saving of those who look out\* for him.

10 For as the Law has a mere shadow of the bliss that is to be, instead of representing the reality of that bliss, it can never perfect those who draw near with the same annual sacrifices that are perpetually offered. Otherwise, they would surely have ceased to be offered; for the worshippers, once cleansed, would no longer be conscious of  
 3 sins! As it is, they are an annual  
 4 reminder of sins (for the blood of bulls and goats cannot possibly  
 5 remove sins!). Hence, on entering the world he says,

*Thou hast no desire for sacrifice or offering;  
 it is a body thou hast prepared for me—*

6 *In holocausts and sin-offerings thou takest no delight.*

7 *So I said, 'Here I come—in the roll of the book this is written of me—*

*I come to do thy will, O God.'*

\* Paul's word in Phil. iii. 20; but I translate "look out" here, in order to suggest the antithesis in x. 27.

He begins by saying, *thou hast no desire for, thou takest no delight in, sacrifices and offerings and holocausts and sin-offerings* (and these are what are offered in terms of the Law); he then adds, *Here I come to do thy will*. He does away with the first in order to establish the second. And it is by this *will* that 10 we are consecrated, because Jesus Christ once for all has *offered* up his body.

Again, while every priest † stands 11 daily at his service, offering the same sacrifices repeatedly, sacrifices which never can take sins away—He offered a single sacrifice for sins and then *seated himself* for all time *at the right hand of God*, to wait *until his enemies are* 13 *made a footstool for his feet*. For by 14 a single offering he has made the sanctified perfect for all time. Besides, we have the testimony of the holy Spirit; for after saying,

*This is the covenant I will make 16 with them when that day comes, saith the Lord,*

*I will set my laws upon their hearts,*

*inscribing them upon their minds,*

he adds,

*And their sins and breaches of the 17 law I will remember no more.*

Now where these are remitted, an 18 offering for sin exists no longer.

Brothers, since we have confidence to enter the holy Presence in virtue of the blood of Jesus, by 20 the fresh, living way which he has inaugurated for us through the veil (that is, through his flesh), and since 21 we have a great Priest over the house of God, let us draw near with 22 a true heart, in absolute assurance of faith, our hearts sprinkled clean

† Reading *ιερεὺς* instead of *ἀρχιερεὺς*.



from a bad conscience, and our bodies  
 23 washed in pure water; let us hold  
 the hope we avow without wavering  
 (for we can rely on him who gave  
 24 us the Promise); and let us consider  
 how to stir up one another to love  
 25 and good deeds—not ceasing to meet  
 together, as is the habit of some,  
 but admonishing one another, all  
 the more so, as you see the Day com-  
 26 ing near. For if we sin deliberately,  
 after receiving the knowledge of the  
 Truth, there is no longer any sacri-  
 27 fice for sins left, nothing but an  
 awful outlook of doom, of that  
*burning Wrath* which will consume  
 28 the foes of God. Anyone who has  
 rejected the law of Moses *dies*  
 without mercy, *on the evidence of two*  
 29 *or of three witnesses*. How much  
 heavier, do you suppose, will be  
 the punishment assigned to him  
 who has spurned the Son of God,  
 who has profaned the *covenant-*  
*blood* with which he was sanctified,  
 who has insulted the Spirit of grace?  
 30 We know who said, *Vengeance is*  
*mine, I will exact a requital*: and  
 again, *The Lord will pass sentence on*  
 31 *his people*. It is an awful thing to  
 fall into the hands of the living  
 God.  
 32 Recall the former days when,  
 after you were enlightened, you en-  
 dured a hard struggle of suffering,  
 33 partly by being held up yourselves  
 to obloquy and anguish, partly by  
 making common cause with those  
 34 who fared in this way; for you did  
 sympathize with the prisoners, and  
 you took the confiscation of your  
 own belongings cheerfully, con-  
 scious that elsewhere you had higher,  
 35 you had lasting, possessions. Now  
 do not drop that confidence of  
 yours; it carries with it a rich hope  
 36 of reward. Steady patience is  
 what you need, so that after doing

the will of God you may get what  
 you have been promised. For *in a* 37  
*little, a very little* now,

*The Coming One will arrive with-*  
*out delay.*

*Meantime my just man shall live* 38  
*on by his faith;*

*if he shrinks back, my soul takes*  
*no delight in him.*

We are not the men to shrink back 39  
 and be lost, but to have faith and  
 so to win our souls.

Now faith means we are confident 11  
 of what we hope for, convinced of  
 what we do not see. It was for 2  
 this that the men of old won their  
 record. It is by faith we understand 3  
 that the world was fashioned by  
 the word of God, and thus the  
 visible was made out of the in-  
 visible. It was by faith that Abel 4  
 offered God a richer sacrifice than  
 Cain did, and thus won from God  
 the record of being 'just,' on the  
 score of what he gave; he died, but  
 by his faith he is speaking to us  
 still. It was by faith that Enoch 5  
 was taken to heaven, so that he  
 never died (*he was not overtaken by*  
*death, for God had taken him away*).  
 For before he was taken to heaven,  
 his record was that *he had satisfied\**  
 6 *God*; and apart from faith it is im-  
 possible *to satisfy him*, for the man  
 who draws near to God must believe  
 that he exists and that he does  
 reward those who seek him. It 7  
 was by faith that Noah, after being  
 told by God of what was still un-  
 seen, reverently constructed an ark  
 to save his household; thus he con-  
 demned the world and became heir  
 of the righteousness that follows  
 faith. It was by faith that Abra- 8  
 ham obeyed his call to *go forth* to a

\* Here, as elsewhere, "satisfy" is used in  
 the sense of a servant giving satisfaction to  
 his master.

place which he would receive as an inheritance; he went forth, although he did not know where he was to go. It was by faith that he *sojourned* in the promised land, as in a foreign country, residing in tents, as did Isaac and Jacob who were co-heirs with him of the same promise; he was waiting for the City with its fixed foundations, whose builder and maker is God. It was by faith that even Sara got strength to conceive, bearing a son when she was past the age for it—because she considered she could rely on Him who gave the promise. Thus a single man, though he was physically impotent, had issue in number *like the stars in heaven, countless as the sand on the seashore.* (These all died in faith without obtaining the promises; they only saw them far away and hailed them, owning they were ‘*strangers and exiles upon earth.*’ Now people who speak in this way plainly show they are in search of a fatherland. If they thought of the land they have left behind, they would have time to go back, but they really aspire to the better land in heaven. That is why God is not ashamed to be called their God; he has prepared a City for them.) It was by faith, *when Abraham was put to the test, that he sacrificed Isaac;* he was ready to sacrifice *his only son,* although he had received the promises and had been told that *it is through Isaac that your offspring shall be reckoned*—for he considered God was able even to raise men from the dead. Hence he did get him back, by what was a parable of the resurrection. It was by faith that Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau in connection with the future. It was by faith that, when Jacob was dying, he blessed

each of the sons of Joseph, *bending in prayer over the head of his staff.* It was by faith that Joseph at his end thought about the exodus of the sons of Israel, and gave orders about his own bones. It was by faith that Moses *was hidden for three months* after birth by his parents, because *they saw* the child was *beautiful,* and had no fear of the royal decree. It was by faith that Moses refused, *when he had grown up,* to be called the son of Pharaoh’s daughter; ill-treatment with God’s people he preferred to the passing pleasures of sin, considering obloquy with the messiah to be richer wealth than all Egypt’s treasures—for he had an eye to the Reward. It was by faith that he left Egypt, not from any fear of the king’s wrath; like one who saw the King Invisible, he never flinched. It was by faith that he celebrated the *passover* and performed the sprinkling by blood, so that *the destroying angel* might not touch Israel’s first-born. It was by faith that they crossed the Red Sea like dry land—and when the Egyptians attempted it, they were drowned. It was by faith that the walls of Jericho collapsed, after being surrounded for only seven days. It was by faith that Rahab the harlot did not perish along with those who were disobedient, as she had welcomed the scouts peaceably.

And what more shall I say? Time would fail me to tell of Gideon, of Barak and Samson and Jephthah, of David and Samuel and the prophets—men who by faith conquered kingdoms, administered justice, obtained promises, shut the mouth of lions, quenched the power of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, from weakness won to strength, proved valiant in war—



fare, and routed hosts of foreigners.  
 35 Some were given back to their womankind, raised from the very dead; others were broken on the wheel, refusing to accept release, that they might obtain a better  
 36 resurrection; others, again, had to experience scoffs and scourging, aye chains and imprisonment—  
 37 were stoned,\* sawn in two, and cut to pieces; they had to roam about in sheepskins and goatskins,  
 38 forlorn, oppressed, ill-treated (men of whom the world was not worthy), wanderers in the desert and among the hills, in caves and gullies.  
 39 They all won their record for faith, but the Promise they did  
 40 not obtain. God had something better in store for us; he would not have them perfected apart from us.  
 12 Therefore, with all this host of witnesses† encircling us, we must strip off every handicap, strip off sin with its clinging folds, to run our  
 2 appointed course steadily, our eyes fixed upon Jesus as the pioneer and the perfection of faith—upon Jesus who, in order to reach his own appointed joy, steadily endured the cross, thinking nothing of its shame, and is now *seated at the right hand*  
 3 of the throne of God. Compare him who steadily endured all that hostility from sinful men, so as to keep your own hearts from fainting and  
 4 failing. You have not had to shed blood yet in the struggle against  
 5 sin. And have you forgotten the

word of appeal that reasons with you as sons?—

*My son, never make light of the Lord's discipline, never faint under his reproofs; for the Lord disciplines the man he loves, and scourges every son he receives.*  
 It is for discipline that you have to 7 endure. God is treating you as sons; for where is the son who is not disciplined by his father? Dis- 8 cipline is the portion of all; if you get no discipline, then you are not sons but bastards. Why, we had 9 fathers of our flesh to discipline us, and we yielded to them! Shall we not far more submit to the Father of our spirits, and so live? For 10 while their discipline was only for a time, and inflicted at their pleasure, he disciplines us for our good, that we may share in his own holiness. Discipline always seems for 11 the time to be a thing of pain, not of joy; but those who are trained by it reap the fruit of it afterwards in the peace of an upright life. So 12 *up with your listless hands! Strengthen your weak knees! And make 13 straight paths for your feet to walk in.* You must not let the lame get dislocated, but rather make them whole. Aim at peace with all—and 14 at that consecration without which no one will ever see the Lord; see 15 to it that no one misses the grace of God, *that no root of bitterness grows up to be a trouble* by contaminating all the rest of you; that no one 16 turns to sexual vice or to a profane life as Esau did—Esau, who for a single meal *parted with his birthright.* You know how later on, when he 17 wanted to obtain his inheritance of blessing, he was set aside; he got no chance to repent, though he tried for it with tears.

\* The next word, *ἐκτελέσθαι*, is either due to dittography (with the following *ἐκτελέσθαι*) or a corruption of some word like *ἐκτελέσθαι* or *ἐκτελέσθαι*. I have left it untranslated.

† The Greek word is beginning already to hover round the special sense of "martyrs"; but the broader sense is obviously required here.

18 You have not come to what you  
can touch, to *flames of fire, to mist*  
19 and *gloom and stormy blasts, to*  
*the blare of a trumpet and to a*  
*Voice* whose words made those who  
heard it refuse to hear another  
20 syllable (for they could not bear  
the command, *If even a beast touches*  
*the mountain, it must be stoned*)—  
21 indeed, so awful was the sight that  
Moses said, *I am terrified and aghast.*  
22 You have come to mount Sion, the  
city of the living God, the heavenly  
Jerusalem, to myriads of angels in  
23 festal gathering, to the assembly  
of the first-born registered in  
heaven, to the God of all as judge,  
to the spirits of just men made per-  
24 fect, to Jesus who mediates the new  
covenant, and to the sprinkled  
blood whose message is nobler than  
25 Abel's. See that you do not refuse  
to listen to His voice. For if they  
failed to escape, who refused to  
listen to their instructor upon  
earth, much less shall we, if we dis-  
card Him who speaks from heaven.  
26 Then his voice shook the earth, but  
now the assurance is, *once again I will*  
*make heaven as well as earth to quake.*  
27 That phrase, *once again*, denotes the  
removal of what is shaken (as no  
more than created), to leave only  
28 what stands unshaken. Therefore  
let us render thanks\* that we get  
an unshaken realm; and in this  
way let us worship God acceptably  
29 —but with godly fear† and awe,  
for our God is indeed a *consuming*  
*fire.*

CHAP.

13 Let your brotherly love con-  
2 tinue. Never forget to be hospita-  
ble, for by hospitality some have  
3 entertained angels unawares. Re-

\* Reading ἔχωμεν.

† Like Jesus himself (v. 7).

member prisoners as if you were  
in prison yourselves; remember  
those who are being ill-treated,  
since you too are in the body.

Let marriage be held in honour 4  
by all, and keep the marriage-bed  
unstained. God will punish the  
vicious and adulterous.

Keep your life free from the love 5  
of money; be content with what  
you have, for He has said,

*Never will I fail you, never will I*  
*forsake you.*

So that we can say confidently, 6  
*The Lord is my helper, I will not*  
*be afraid.*

*What can men do to me?*

Remember your leaders, the 7  
men who spoke the word of God  
to you; look back upon the close  
of their career, and copy their  
faith.

Jesus Christ is always the same, 8  
yesterday, to-day, and for ever.  
Never let yourselves be carried 9  
away with a variety of novel doc-  
trines; for the right thing is to  
have one's heart strengthened by  
grace, not by the eating of food—  
that has never been any use to  
those who have had recourse to it.  
Our altar is one of which the wor- 10  
shippers have no right to eat. For 11  
the bodies of the animals whose  
*blood is taken into the holy Place*  
by the high priest as a *sin-offer-*  
*ing, are burned outside the camp;*  
and so Jesus also suffered outside 12  
the gate, in order to sanctify the  
people by his own blood. Let us 13  
go to him *outside the camp*, then,  
bearing his obloquy (for we have 14  
no lasting city here below, we seek  
the City to come). And by him let 15  
us constantly offer praise to God  
as our *sacrifice*, that is, *the fruit of*  
*lips* that celebrate his Name. Do 16  
not forget beneficence and charity,



either; these are the kind of sacrifices that are acceptable to God.

17 Obey your leaders, submit to them; for they are alive to the interests of your souls, as men who will have to account for their trust. Let their work be a joy to them and not a grief—which would be a loss to yourselves.

18 Pray for me, for I am sure I have a clean conscience; my desire is in every way to lead an honest life.

19 I urge you to this all the more, that I may get back to you the sooner.

20 May the God of peace *who brought up from the dead our Lord Jesus, the great Shepherd of the sheep, with the blood of the eternal covenant,*

furnish you with everything\* for 21 the doing of his will, creating in your lives by Jesus Christ what is acceptable in his own sight! To him be glory for ever and ever: Amen.

I appeal to you, brothers, to 22 bear with this appeal of mine. It is but a short letter.

You must understand that [our] 23 brother Timotheus is now free. If he comes soon, he and I will see you together.

Salute all your leaders and all the 24 saints. The Italians salute you.

Grace be with you all. Amen.

\* Omitting, with N, D\*, the Latin and Bohairic versions, etc., the homiletic addition of ἀγαθῶν.

## THE EPISTLE OF

# JAMES

CHAP.

1 JAMES, a servant of God and the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes in the Dispersion: greeting.  
 2 Greet it as pure joy, my brothers, when you come across any sort of  
 3 trial, sure that the sterling temper of your faith produces endurance;  
 4 only, let your endurance be a finished product, so that you may be finished and complete, with never a  
 5 defect. Whoever of you is defective in wisdom, let him ask God who gives to all men without question or reproach, and the gift will  
 6 be his. Only, let him ask in faith, with never a doubt; for the doubtful man is like surge of the sea whirled and swayed by the  
 7 wind; that man need not imagine he will get anything from God,  
 8 double-minded creature that he is, wavering at every turn. Let a  
 9 brother of low position exult when  
 10 he is raised; but let one who is rich  
 11 exult in being lowered; for the rich will pass away *like the flower of the grass*—up comes the sun with the scorching wind and *withers the grass, its flower drops off*, and the splendour of it is ruined: so shall the rich fade away amid their pursuits.  
 12 *Blessed is he who endures* under trial; for when he has stood the test, he will gain the crown of life which is promised to all who love  
 13 Him. Let no one who is tried by temptation say, 'My temptation comes from God'; God is incapable of being tempted by evil and  
 14 he tempts no one. Everyone is

tempted as he is beguiled and allured by his own desire; then 15 Desire conceives and breeds Sin, while Sin matures and gives birth to Death. Make no mistake about 16 this, my beloved brothers: all we 17 are given is good, and all our endowments are faultless, descending from above, from the Father of the heavenly lights, who knows no change of rising and setting, who casts no shadow on the earth. It 18 was his own will that we should be born by the Word of the truth, to be a kind of firstfruits among his creatures. Be sure of that, my 19 beloved brothers.

Let everyone be quick to listen, slow to talk, slow to be angry—for 20 human anger does not promote divine righteousness; so clear away 21 all the foul rank growth of malice, and make a soil of modesty for the Word which roots itself inwardly with power to save your souls. Act 22 on the Word, instead of merely listening to it and deluding yourselves. For whoever listens and does no- 23 thing, is like a man who glances at his natural face in a mirror; he 24 glances at himself, goes off, and at once forgets what he was like. Whereas he who gazes into the 25 faultless law of freedom and remains in that position, proving himself to be no forgetful listener but an active agent, he will be blessed in his activity. Whoever considers 26 he is religious, and does not bridle his tongue, but deceives his own



27 heart, his religion is futile. Pure, unsoiled religion in the judgment of God the Father means this: to care for\* orphans and widows in their trouble, and to keep oneself from the stain of the world.

2 My brothers, as you believe in our Lord Jesus Christ, who is the Glory, pay no servile regard to 2 people. Suppose there comes into your meeting a man who wears gold rings and handsome clothes, and 3 also a poor man in dirty clothes; if you attend to the wearer of the handsome clothes and say to him, "Sit here, this is a good place," and tell the poor man, "You can stand," or "Sit there† at my feet,"

4 are you not drawing distinctions in your own minds and proving that you judge people with partiality?

5 Listen, my beloved brothers; has not God chosen the poor of this world to be rich in faith and to inherit the realm which he has promised to those who love him?

6 Now you insult the poor. Is it not the rich who lord it over you and 7 drag you to court? Is it not they who scoff at the noble Name you

8 bear? If you really fulfil the royal law laid down by scripture, *You must love your neighbour as yourself,*

9 well and good; but if you pay servile regard to people, you commit a sin, and the Law convicts

10 you of transgression. For whoever obeys the whole of the Law and only makes a single slip, is guilty of

11 everything. He who said, *Do not commit adultery*, also said, *Do not kill*. Now if you do not commit adultery but if you kill, you have 12 transgressed the Law. Speak, act,

\* As in Matthew xxv. 36, the word implies personal service and help.

† Reading *ἡ καθὼς ἐκεῖ* with B and some evidence from the Latin version.

as those who are to be judged by the law of freedom; for the judg- 13 ment will be merciless to the man who has shown no mercy—whereas the merciful life will triumph in the face of judgment. †Do not 11 defame one another, brothers; he who defames or judges his brother defames and judges the Law; and if you judge the Law, you pass sentence on it instead of obeying it. One alone is the legislator, who 12 passes sentence; it is He who is able to save and to destroy; who are you, to judge your neighbour?

My brothers, what is the use of 14 anyone declaring he has faith, if he has no deeds to show? Can his faith save him? Suppose some 15 brother or sister is ill-clad and short of daily food; if any of you 16 says to them, "Depart in peace! Get warm, get food," without supplying their bodily needs, what use is that? So faith, unless it has 17 deeds, is dead in itself. Someone 18 will object, 'And you claim to have faith!' Yes, and I claim to have deeds as well; you show me your faith without any deeds, and I will show you by my deeds what faith is! You believe in one God? 19 Well and good. So do the devils, and they shudder. But will you 20 understand, you senseless fellow, that faith without deeds is dead? When our father *Abraham offered* 21 *his son Isaac on the altar*, was he not justified by what he did? In his 22 case, you see, faith co-operated with deeds, faith was completed by deeds, and the scripture was ful- 23 filled: *Abraham believed God, and this was counted to him as righteousness*—he was called *God's friend*. You observe it is by what he does 24

† Restoring 4<sup>11-12</sup> to what seems to have been its original place.

that a man is justified, not simply  
25 by what he believes. So too with  
Rahab the harlot. Was she not  
justified by what she did, when  
she entertained the scouts and  
got them away by a different  
road?

26 For as the body without the  
breath of life is dead,  
so faith is dead without deeds.

17 Whoever, then, knows what is right  
to do and does not do it, that is a  
sin for him.\*

CHAP.

3 My brothers, do not swell the  
ranks of the teachers; remember, we  
teachers will be judged with special  
2 strictness. We all make many a  
slip, but whoever avoids slips of  
speech is a perfect man; he can  
bridle the whole of the body as well  
3 as the tongue. We put bridles into  
the mouths of horses to make them  
obey us, and so, you see,† we can  
move the whole of their bodies.  
4 Look at ships too; for all their size  
and speed under stiff winds, they  
are turned by a tiny rudder wher-  
ever the mind of the steersman  
5 chooses. So the tongue is a small  
member of the body, but it can  
boast of great exploits. What a  
forest is set ablaze by a little spark  
6 of fire! And the tongue is a fire,  
the tongue proves a very world  
of mischief among our members,  
staining the whole of the body and  
setting fire to the round circle of  
existence with a flame fed by hell.  
7 For while every kind of beast and  
bird, of creeping animals and  
creatures marine, is tameable and

has been tamed by mankind, no 8  
man can tame the tongue—plague  
of disorder that it is, full of deadly  
venom! With the tongue we bless 9  
the Lord and Father, and with the  
tongue we curse men made *in God's*  
*likeness*; blessing and cursing 10  
stream from the same lips! My  
brothers, this ought not to be.  
Does a fountain pour out fresh 11  
water and brackish from the same  
hole? Can a fig tree, my brothers, 12  
bear olives? Or a vine, figs?  
No more can salt water yield  
fresh.

Who among you is wise and 13  
learned? Let him show by his  
good conduct, with the modesty  
of wisdom, what his deeds are.  
But if you are cherishing bitter 14  
jealousy and rivalry in your hearts,  
do not pride yourselves on that—  
and be false to the truth. That is 15  
not the wisdom which comes down  
from above, it is an earthly wis-  
dom, sensuous, devilish; for wher- 16  
ever jealousy and rivalry exist,  
there disorder reigns and every  
evil. The wisdom from above is 17  
first of all pure, then peaceable,  
forbearing, conciliatory, full of  
mercy and wholesome fruit, un-  
ambiguous, straightforward; and 18  
the peacemakers who sow in peace  
reap righteousness. Where do 4  
conflicts, where do wrangles come  
from, in your midst? Is it  
not from these passions of yours  
that war among your members?  
You crave, and miss what you 2  
want: you envy‡ and covet, but  
you cannot acquire: you wrangle  
and fight—you miss what you  
want because you do not ask God  
for it; you do ask and you do not 3  
get it, because you ask with the

\* This seems likely to have been the  
original position of 4<sup>17</sup>.

† Reading with C P, the Syriac and  
Armenian versions, ἰδε (idou), instead of  
εἰ δε.

‡ Accepting φθονεῖτε, the conjecture of  
Erasmus, for the φονεῖτε of the MSS.



wicked intention of spending it on  
 4 your pleasures. (Wanton creatures!  
 do you not know that the world's  
 friendship means enmity to God?  
 Whoever, then, chooses to be the  
 world's friend, turns enemy to  
 5 God. What, do you consider this  
 is an idle word of scripture?—'He  
 yearns jealously for the spirit he  
 6 set within us.') Yet *he gives grace*  
 more and more : thus it is said,

*The haughty God opposes,  
 but to the humble he gives grace.*

7 Well then, submit yourselves to  
 God;

resist the devil,  
 and he will fly from you :

8 draw near to God,  
 and he will draw near to you.  
 Cleanse your hands, you sinners,  
 and purify your hearts, you  
 double-minded.

9 Lament and mourn and weep,  
 let your laughter be turned to  
 mourning,

and your joy to depression;  
 10 humble yourselves before the  
 Lord,  
 and then he will raise you up.

13 Come now, you who say, "To-  
 day or to-morrow we are going to  
 such and such a city; we shall spend  
 a year there trading and making  
 14 money"—you who know nothing  
 about to-morrow! For what is  
 your life? You are but a mist,  
 which appears for a little and then  
 15 vanishes. You ought rather to  
 say, "If the Lord will, we shall live  
 16 to do this or that." But here you  
 are, boasting in your proud preten-  
 sions! All such boasting is wicked.

CHAP.

5 COME now, you rich men, weep  
 and shriek over your impending  
 miseries!

v

You have been storing up trea-  
 sure in the very last days; \*  
 your wealth lies rotting, 2  
 and your clothes are moth-  
 eaten;

your gold and silver lie rusted 3  
 over,  
 and their rust will be evidence  
 against you,  
 it will devour your flesh like  
 fire.

See, *the wages* of which you have 4  
 defrauded the workmen who  
 mowed your fields *call out*,  
 and the cries of the harvesters  
 have *reached the ears of the*  
*Lord of Hosts.*

You have revelled on earth and 5  
 plunged into dissipation;  
 you have fattened yourselves as  
 for *the Day of slaughter*;  
 you have condemned, you have 6  
 murdered the righteous—  
*unresisting.*

Be patient, then, brothers, till 7  
 the arrival of the Lord. See how  
 the farmer waits for the precious  
 crop of the land, biding his time  
 patiently till he gets *the autumn*  
*and the spring rains*; have patience 8  
 yourselves, strengthen your hearts,  
 for the arrival of the Lord is at  
 hand. Do not murmur against 9  
 one another, brothers, lest you are  
 judged; look, the Judge is standing  
 at the very door! As an ex- 10  
 ample of fortitude and endurance,  
 brothers, take the prophets who  
 have spoken in the name of the  
 Lord. See, *we call the stedfast* 11  
*happy*; you have heard of the  
 stedfastness of Job, and you have  
 seen the end of the Lord with him,  
 seen that *the Lord is very com-*  
*passionate and pitiful.* Above all, 12

\* Transferring the last clause of ver. 3  
 to what appears to have been its original  
 position.

my brothers, never swear an oath, either by heaven or by earth or by anything else; let your "yes" be a plain "yes," your "no" a plain "no," lest you incur judgment.

13 Is anyone of you in trouble? let him pray. Is anyone thriving?

14 let him sing praise. Is anyone ill? let him summon the presbyters of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the

15 name of the Lord; the prayer of faith will restore the sick man, and the Lord will raise him up; even the sins he has committed will be

16 forgiven him. So confess your sins to one another and pray for one

another, that you may be healed; the prayers of the righteous have a powerful effect. Elijah was a man 17 with a nature just like our own; but he offered prayer that it might not rain, and for three years and six months it did not rain; then he 18 prayed again, and the sky yielded rain, the earth brought forth its fruit.

My brothers, if anyone of you 19 goes astray from the truth and some one brings him back, understand 20 that he who brings a sinner back from the error of his way saves his soul from death and *hides* a host of *sins*.



# THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PETER

CHAP.

- 1 **PETER** an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the exiles of the Dispersion in Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia,
- 2 Asia, and Bithynia, whom God the Father has predestined and chosen, by the consecration of the Spirit, to obey Jesus Christ and be sprinkled with his blood: may grace and peace be multiplied to you.
- 3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! By his great mercy we have been born anew to a life of hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from
- 4 the dead, born to an unscathed, inviolate, unfading inheritance; it
- 5 is kept in heaven for you, and the power of God protects you by faith till you do inherit the salvation which is all ready to be revealed
- 6 at the last hour. You will rejoice then, though for the passing moment you may need to suffer
- 7 various trials; that is only to prove your faith is sterling (far more precious than gold which is perishable and yet is tested by fire), and it redounds to your praise and glory and honour at the revelation of
- 8 Jesus Christ. You never knew him, but you love him; for the moment you do not see him, but you believe in him, and you will thrill with an unspeakable and glorious
- 9 joy to obtain the outcome of your faith in the salvation of your souls.
- 10 Even prophets have searched and inquired about that salvation, the prophets who prophesied of the grace that was meant for you;

the Spirit of messiah within them 11 foretold all the suffering of messiah and his after-glory, and they pondered when or how this was to come; to them it was revealed that 12 they got this intelligence\* not for themselves but for you, regarding all that has now been disclosed to you by those who preached the gospel to you through the holy Spirit sent from heaven. The very angels long to get a glimpse of this!

Brace up your minds, then, 13 keep cool, and put your hope for good and all in the grace that is coming to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ. Be obedient children, instead of moulding yourselves to the passions that once ruled the days of your ignorance; as He who called you is holy, so 15 you must be holy too in all your conduct—for it is written, *You shall be holy because I am holy.* And as 17 *you call upon a Father* who judges everyone impartially by what he has done, be reverent in your conduct while you sojourn here below; you know it was *not by* 18 perishable *silver* or gold that *you were ransomed* from the futile traditions of your past, but by the 19 precious blood of Christ, a lamb unblemished and unstained. He was 20 predestined before the foundation

\* On the basis of Enoch i. 2 (οὐκ εἰς τὴν νῦν γενεάν διενουσμήνην ἀλλ' ἐπὶ πόρρω ὄσαν ἐγὼ λαλῶ) Dr. Rendel Harris plausibly reads διενουσύντο, as above, for the διηκόνουν of the ordinary text.

of the world and has appeared  
at the end of the ages for your  
21 sake; it is by him that you believe in God who raised him from the dead and gave him glory; and thus your faith means hope in God.  
22 Now that your obedience to the Truth has purified your souls for a brotherly love that is sincere, love one another heartily and steadily.  
23 You are born anew of immortal, not of mortal seed, by the living, lasting  
24 word of God; for

*All flesh is like the grass,  
and all its glory like the flower  
of grass :  
the grass withers  
and the flower fades,*

25 *but the word of the Lord lasts for ever—*

and that is *the word of the gospel* for  
2 you. So off with all malice, all guile and insincerity and envy and slander of every kind! Like newly-born children, thirst for the pure, spiritual milk to make you grow up  
3 to salvation. You have had a taste  
4 of the kindness of the Lord : come to him then—come to that living Stone which men have rejected and God  
5 holds choice and precious, come and, like living stones yourselves, be built into a spiritual house, to form a consecrated priesthood for the offering of those spiritual sacrifices that are acceptable to God through  
6 Jesus Christ. For thus it stands in the scripture :

*Here I lay a Stone in Sion,  
a choice, a precious corner-  
stone :*

*he who believes in him will never  
be disappointed.*

7 Now you believe, you hold him 'precious,' but as for the unbelieving—

*the very stone the builders rejected  
is now the cornerstone,*

292

*a stone over which men stumble and 8  
a rock of offence; they stumble over it in their disobedience to God's word. Such is their appointed doom. But you are the elect race, 9  
the royal priesthood, the consecrated nation, the People who belong to Him, that you may proclaim the wondrous deeds of Him who has called you from darkness to his wonderful light—you who once were no people 10  
and now are God's people, you who once were unpitied and now are pitied.*

Beloved, as sojourners and exiles 11 I appeal to you to abstain from the passions of the flesh that wage war upon the soul. Conduct yourselves 12 properly before pagans; so that for all their slander of you as bad characters, they may come to glorify God when you are put upon your trial, by what they see of your good deeds.

Submit for the Lord's sake to any 13 human authority; submit to the emperor as supreme, and to gover- 14  
nors as deputed by him for the punishment of wrongdoers and the encouragement of honest people— for it is the will of God that by 15  
your honest lives you should silence the ignorant charges of foolish persons. Live like free men, only 16  
do not make your freedom a pretext for misconduct; live like servants of God. Do honour to all, 17  
love the brotherhood, reverence God, honour the emperor.

Servants, be submissive to your 18 masters with perfect respect, not simply to those who are kind and reasonable but to the surly as well— for it is a merit when from a sense 19  
of God one bears the pain of unjust suffering. Where is the credit in 20  
standing punishment for having done wrong? No, if you stand



## I. PETER III

suffering for having done right, that is what God counts a merit.  
 21 It is your vocation; for when Christ suffered for you, he left you an example, and you must follow his footsteps.

22 *He committed no sin,  
 no guile was ever found upon  
 his lips;*

23 he was reviled and made no retort, he suffered and never threatened,

but left everything to Him who judges justly; *he bore our sins* in his own body on the gibbet, that we might break with sin and live for righteousness; and *by his wounds*  
 25 *you have been healed.* You were *astray like sheep*, but you have come back now to the Shepherd and Guardian of your souls.

3 In the same way, you wives must be submissive to your husbands, so that even those who will not believe the Word may be won over without a word by the behaviour of their wives, when they see how chaste and reverent you are.

2 You are not to adorn yourselves on the outside with braids of hair and ornaments of gold and changes

4 of dress, but inside, in the heart, with the immortal beauty of a gentle and modest spirit, which in the sight of God is of rare value.

5 It was in this way long ago that the holy women who hoped in God adorned themselves. They were

6 submissive to their husbands. Thus Sara obeyed Abraham by *calling him 'lord'*. And you are daughters of Sara if you do what is right and

7 *yield to no panic.\** In the same way you husbands must be considerate

in living with your wives, since they are the weaker sex; you must honour them as heirs equally with yourselves of the grace of Life, so that your prayers may not be hindered.

Lastly, you must all be united, 8 you must have sympathy, brotherly love, compassion, and humility, never paying back evil for evil, never 9 reviling when you are reviled, but on the contrary blessing. For this is your vocation, to bless and to inherit blessing;

*he who would love Life 10  
 and enjoy good days,*

*let him keep his tongue from evil  
 and his lips from speaking  
 guile:*

*let him shun wrong and do 11  
 right,*

*let him seek peace and make  
 peace his aim.*

*For the eyes of the Lord are on the 12  
 upright,*

*and his ears are open to their  
 cry;*

*but the face of the Lord is set against  
 wrongdoers.*

Yet who will wrong you if you 13 have a passion for goodness? Even 14 supposing you have to suffer for the sake of what is right, still you are blessed. *Have no fear of their threats, do not let that trouble you,* but reverence Christ as Lord in 15 your own hearts. Always be ready with a reply for anyone who calls you to account for the hope you cherish, but answer gently and with a sense of reverence; see 16 that you have a clean conscience, so that, for all their slander of you, these libellers of your good Christian behaviour may be ashamed. For it is better to suffer for doing 17 right (if that should be the will of God) than for doing wrong.

\* Apparently an allusion to the fear of violence at the hands of their (pagan?) husbands. The language, but not the idea, is that of Proverbs iii. 25.

## I. PETER IV

- 18 Christ himself died for sins, once for all, a just man for unjust men, that he might bring us near to God; in the flesh he was put to death but he came to life in the
- 19 Spirit. (It was in the Spirit that Enoch\* also went and preached to
- 20 the imprisoned spirits who had disobeyed at the time when God's patience held out during the construction of the ark in the days of Noah—the ark by which only a few souls, eight in all, were brought
- 21 safely through the water. Baptism, the counterpart of that, saves you to-day (not the mere washing of dirt from the flesh but the prayer for a clean conscience before God) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ
- 22 who is *at God's right hand*—for he went to heaven after angels, authorities, and powers celestial had been made subject to him.)
- 4 Well, as Christ has suffered for us in the flesh, let this very conviction that he who has suffered in the flesh gets quit of sin, nerve you
- 2 to spend the rest of your time in the flesh for the will of God and no
- 3 longer for human passions. It is quite enough to have done as pagans choose to do, during the time gone by! You used to lead lives of sensuality, lust, carousing, revelry,
- 4 dissipation and illicit idolatry, and it astonishes them that you will not plunge with them still into the same flood of profligacy. They
- 5 abuse you, but they will have to answer for that to Him who is prepared to judge the living and the
- 6 dead (for this was why the gospel

was preached to the dead as well, that while they are judged in the flesh as men, they may live as God lives in the spirit).

Now the end of all is near. 7 Steady then, keep cool and pray! Above all, be keen to love one 8 another, for *love hides* a host of *sins*. Be hospitable to each other, 9 and do not grudge it. You must 10 serve one another, each with the talent he has received, as efficient stewards of God's varied grace. If anyone preaches, he must preach 11 as one who utters the words of God; if anyone renders some service, it must be as one who is supplied by God with power, so that in everything God may be glorified through Jesus Christ. The glory and the dominion are his for ever and ever: Amen.

Beloved, do not be surprised at 12 the ordeal that has come to test you, as though some foreign experience befell you. You are shar- 13 ing what Christ suffered; so rejoice in it, that you may also rejoice and exult when his glory is revealed. If *you are denounced* for the sake of 14 *Christ*, you are blessed; for then *the Spirit of* glory and power, the Spirit of God himself, *is resting on you*. None of you must suffer as 15 a murderer or a thief or a bad character or a revolutionary; but 16 if a man suffers for being a Christian, he must not be ashamed, he must rather glorify God for that. It is time for the Judgment to begin 17 *with the household of God*;

and if it begins with us, what will be the fate of those who refuse obedience to God's gospel?

If *the just man is scarcely saved*, 18 *what will become of the impious and sinful?*

\* Accepting the emendation of Dr. Rendel Harris that Ἐνώχ has been omitted after ἐν ᾧ καὶ (ΕΝΘΚΑΙ [ΕΝΘΧ]), by "a scribe's blunder in dropping some repeated letters." The story of this mission is told in the Book of Enoch (see above, p. 291).



19 So let those who are suffering by the will of God trust their souls to him, their faithful Creator, as they continue to do right.

CHAP.

5 Now I make this appeal to your presbyters (for I am a presbyter myself, I was a witness of what Christ suffered and I am to share 2 the glory that will be revealed), be shepherds to your flock of God; take charge of them willingly\* instead of being pressed to it, not to make a base profit from it but 3 freely, not by way of lording it over your charges but proving a pattern 4 to the flock. Then you will receive the unfading crown of glory, when the chief Shepherd makes his appearance. You younger men must also submit to the presbyters. Indeed you must all put on the apron of humility to serve one another, for  
*the haughty God opposes,*  
*but to the humble he gives grace.*  
 6 Humble yourselves under the strong hand of God, then, so that

\* Omitting *κατὰ θεόν*.

when it is time, he may raise you; let all your anxieties fall upon him, 7 for his interest is in you.

Keep cool, keep awake. Your 8 enemy the devil prowls like a roaring lion, looking out for someone to devour. Resist him; keep 9 your foothold in the faith, and learn to pay the same tax of suffering as the rest of your brotherhood throughout the world. Once you 10 have suffered for a little, the God of all grace who has called you to his eternal glory in Christ Jesus, will † repair and recruit and strengthen you. The dominion is his for 11 ever and ever : Amen.

By the hand of Silvanus, a faithful brother (in my opinion), I have written you these few lines of encouragement, to testify that this is what the true grace of God means. Stand in that grace.

Your sister-church in Babylon, 13 elect like yourselves, salutes you. So does my son Mark. Salute one 14 another with a kiss of love.

Peace be to you all who are in Christ [Jesus].

† Omitting *θεμελιώσει* with A B, the Latin and Ethiopic versions.

## THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PETER

CHAP.

1 SYMEON PETER, a servant and  
apostle of Jesus Christ, to those  
who have been allotted a faith of  
equal privilege with ours, by the  
equity of our God and saviour Jesus  
2 Christ : grace and peace be multi-  
plied to you by the knowledge of \*  
3 our Lord. Inasmuch as his power  
divine has bestowed on us every  
requisite for life and piety by the  
knowledge of him who called us  
to his own glory and excellence—  
4 bestowing on us thereby promises  
precious and supreme, that by  
means of them you may escape the  
corruption produced within the  
world by lust, and participate in  
5 the divine nature—for this very  
reason, do you contrive to make  
it your whole concern to furnish  
your faith with resolution, resolu-  
6 tion with intelligence, intelligence  
with self-control, self-control with  
steadfastness, steadfastness with  
7 piety, piety with brotherliness,  
brotherliness with Christian love.  
8 For as these qualities exist and  
increase with you, they render you  
active and fruitful in the knowledge  
9 of our Lord Jesus Christ; whereas  
he who has not these by him is  
blind, shortsighted, oblivious that  
he has been cleansed from his erst-  
10 while sins. So be the more eager,  
brothers, to ratify your calling and  
election, for as you practise these  
qualities you will never make a slip;  
11 you will thus be richly furnished

with the right of entry into the  
eternal realm of our Lord and  
saviour Jesus Christ.

Hence I mean to keep on remind- 12  
ing you of this, although you are  
aware of it and are fixed in the Truth  
as it is; so long as I am in this tent, 13  
I deem it proper to stir you up by  
way of reminder, since I know my 14  
tent must be folded up very soon—  
as indeed our Lord Jesus Christ  
has shown me. Yes, and I will see 15  
to it that even when I am gone, you  
will keep this constantly in mind.  
For it was no fabricated fables 16  
that we followed when we reported  
to you the power and advent of  
our Lord Jesus Christ; we were  
admitted to the spectacle of his  
sovereignty, when he was invested 17  
with honour and glory by God the  
Father, and when the following  
voice was borne to him from † the  
sublime Glory, "This is my son,  
the Beloved, in whom I delight."  
That voice borne from heaven we 18  
heard, we who were beside him on  
the sacred hill, and thus we have 19  
gained fresh confirmation of the  
prophetic word. Pray attend to  
that word; it shines like a lamp  
within a darksome spot, till the  
Day dawns and the daystar rises  
within your hearts—understanding 20  
this, at the outset, that no pro-  
phetic scripture allows a man to  
interpret it by himself; for pro- 21  
phesy never came by human im-

\* Omitting, with P and the Latin Vulgate, τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ ἰησοῦ.  
296

† Reading with the Syriac and Latin (Vulgate) versions ἀπὸ instead of ἐκ.



## II. PETER II

pulse, it was when carried away by the holy Spirit that the\* holy men of God spoke.

- 2 Still, false prophets did appear among the People, as among you also there will be false teachers, men who will insinuate destructive heresies, even disowning the Lord who ransomed them; they bring rapid destruction on themselves, 2 and many will follow their immorality (*thanks to them* the true Way 3 *will be maligned*); in their lust they will exploit you with cunning arguments—men whose doom comes apace from of old, and destruction is awake upon their 4 trail. For if God did not spare angels who had sinned, but committing them to pits of the nether gloom in Tartarus, reserved them 5 under punishment† for doom: if he did not spare the ancient world but kept Noah, the herald of righteousness, safe with seven others, when he let loose the deluge 6 on the world of impious men: if he reduced the cities of Sodom and Gomorra to ashes when he sentenced them to devastation, and thus gave the impious‡ an example 7 of what was in store for them, but rescued righteous Lot who was sore burdened by the immoral 8 behaviour of the lawless (for when that righteous man resided among them, by what he saw and heard his righteous soul was vexed day after day with their unlawful doings)— 9 then be sure the Lord knows how

\* Reading of ἄγιοι θεοῦ ἄνθρωποι with N A, the Latin version, etc.

† Reading with N A, the Latin and Egyptian versions, and Syr<sup>phil</sup> καταζομένους τηρεῖν instead of τηρουμένους.

‡ Reading ἀσεβέων (B P Syr<sup>h</sup>) or τοῖς ἀσεβέων (sah boh) instead of ἀσεβείν. As Weizsäcker renders it, "ein Vorbild des Kommenden gebend für die Gottlosen."

to rescue pious folk from trial, and how to keep the unrighteous under punishment till the day of doom, particularly those who fall in with 10 the polluting appetite of the flesh and despise the Powers celestial. Daring, presumptuous creatures! they are not afraid to scoff at the angelic Glories; whereas even angels, 11 superior in might and power, lay no scoffing charge against these before the Lord. But those people!— 12 like irrational animals, creatures of mere instinct, born for capture and corruption, they scoff at what they are ignorant of; and like animals they will suffer corruption and ruin, done out of § the profits 13 of their evil-doing. Pleasure for them is revelling in open daylight—spots and blots, with their dissipated revelling, as they carouse in your midst!—their eyes are full of 14 harlotry, insatiable for sin; their own hearts trained to lust, they beguile unsteady souls. Accursed generation! they have gone wrong 15 by leaving the straight road, by following the road of Balaam son of Bosor, who liked the profits of evil-doing—but he got reprov'd 16 for his malpractice: a dumb ass spoke with human voice and checked the prophet's infatuation. These people are waterless foun- 17 tains and mists driven by a squall, for whom the nether gloom of darkness|| is reserved. By talking arro- 18 gant futilities they beguile with the sensual lure of fleshly passion those who are just escaping from the company of misconduct—promising 19 them freedom, when they are themselves enslaved to corruption (for a man is the slave of whatever

§ Reading, with N\* B P Syr<sup>phil</sup> ἀρμ ἀδικούμενοι instead of κομιτούμενοι.

|| Omitting [εἰς αἰῶνα].

## II. PETER III

20 overpowers him). After escaping the pollutions of the world by the knowledge of our Lord and saviour Jesus Christ, if they get entangled and overpowered again, the last state is worse for them than the first. Better had they never known the Way of righteousness, than to know it and then turn back from the holy command which was committed to them. They verify the truth of the proverb :

“ *The dog turns back to what he has vomited,*

*the sow when washed will wallow in the mire.*”

3 This is the second letter I have already written to you, beloved, stirring up your pure mind\* by way of reminder, to have you recollect the words spoken by the holy prophets beforehand and the command given by your apostles from the Lord and saviour. To begin with, you know that mockers will come with their mockeries in the last days, men who go by their own passions, asking, “Where is His promised advent? Since the day our fathers fell asleep, things remain exactly as they were from the beginning of creation.” They wilfully ignore the fact that heavens existed long ago, and an earth which the word of God formed of water and by water. By water the then-existing world was deluged and destroyed, but the present heavens and earth are treasured up by the same word for fire, reserved for the day when the impious are doomed and destroyed. 8 Beloved, you must not ignore this one fact, that *with the Lord* a single day is like a thousand years, and a

*thousand years are like a single day.* The Lord is not slow with what he promises, according to certain people's idea of slowness; no, he is longsuffering for your sake,† he does not wish any to perish but all to betake them to repentance. The day of the Lord will come like a thief, when the heavens will vanish with crackling roar, the stars will be set ablaze and melt, the earth and all its works will disappear.‡ Now as all things are thus to be dissolved, what holy and pious men ought you to be in your behaviour, you who expect and hasten the advent of the Day of God, which dissolves the heavens in fire and makes the stars blaze and melt! It is new heavens and a new earth that we expect, as He has promised, and in them dwells righteousness. Then, beloved, as you are expecting this, be eager to be found by him unspotted and unblemished in serene assurance. And consider that the longsuffering of our Lord means salvation; as indeed our beloved brother Paul has written to you out of the wisdom vouchsafed to him, speaking of this as he has done in all his letters—letters containing some knotty points, which ignorant and unsteady souls twist (as they do the rest of the scriptures) to their own destruction. Now, beloved, you are forewarned : mind you are not carried away by the error of the lawless and so lose your proper footing; but grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and saviour Jesus Christ. To him be the glory now and to the day of eternity : Amen.

\* A difficult phrase, referring perhaps to freedom from the contamination of heresies. Reuss renders, “votre sain jugement.”

† Reading δι’ with N A Lat. syr. sah., etc.  
‡ Adding οὐχ before εἰρηθεῖται with the Sahidic version.



# THE FIRST EPISTLE OF JOHN

CHAP.

1 It is of what existed from the  
very beginning, of what we heard,  
of what we saw, of what we wit-  
nessed and touched with our own  
hands, it is of the Logos of Life  
2 (the Life has appeared; we saw it,  
we testify to it, we bring you word  
of that eternal Life which existed  
with the Father and was disclosed  
3 to us)—it is of what we heard and  
saw that we bring you word, so  
that you may share our fellowship;  
and our fellowship is with the  
Father and with his Son Jesus  
4 Christ. We are writing this to you  
that our own joy may be complete.  
5 Here is the message we learned  
from him and announce to you :  
'God is light and in him there is  
6 no darkness, none.' If we say,  
'We have fellowship with him,'  
when we live and move in darkness,  
then we are lying, we are not  
7 practising the truth; but if we live  
and move within the light, as he  
is within the light, then we have  
fellowship with one another, and  
the blood of Jesus his Son cleanses  
8 us from every sin. If we say, 'We  
are not guilty,' we are deceiving  
ourselves and the truth is not in us;  
9 if we confess our sins, he is faithful  
and just, he forgives our sins and  
10 cleanses us from all iniquity; if  
we say, "We have not sinned," we  
make him a liar and his word is  
2 not within us. My dear chil-  
dren, I am writing this to you that  
you may not sin; but if anyone  
does sin, we have an advocate with

the Father in Jesus Christ the just;  
he is himself the propitiation for 2  
our sins, though not for ours alone  
but also for the whole world.

This is how we may be sure we 3  
know him, by obeying his com-  
mands. He who says, 'I know 4  
him,' but does not obey his com-  
mands, is a liar and the truth is not  
in him; but whoever obeys his word, 5  
in him love to God is really complete.  
This is how we may be sure we are  
in him: he who says he 'remains 6  
in him' ought to live as he lived.

Beloved, I am not writing you 7  
any new command, but an old  
command which you have had from  
the very beginning: the old com-  
mand is the word you have heard.  
And yet it is a new command I am 8  
writing to you—realized in him  
and also in yourselves, because the  
darkness is passing away and the  
true light is already shining. He 9  
who says he is 'in the light' and  
hates his brother, is in darkness still.  
He who loves his brother remains 10  
in the light—and in the light there  
is no pitfall; but he who hates his 11  
brother is in darkness, he walks in  
darkness and does not know where  
he is going, for the darkness has  
blinded his eyes.

My dear children, I am writing 12  
to you,

because your sins are forgiven  
for his sake :

fathers, I am writing to you, 13  
because you know him who is  
from the very beginning :

## I. JOHN III

- young men, I am writing to you,  
because you have conquered the evil One.  
children, I have written to you,  
because you know the Father :  
14 fathers, I have written to you,  
because you know him who is from the very beginning :  
young men, I have written to you,  
because you are strong, and the word of God remains within you, and you have conquered the evil One.
- 15 Love not the world, nor yet what is in the world; if anyone loves the world, love for the Father is  
16 not in him. For all that is in the world, the desire of the flesh and the desire of the eyes and the proud glory of life, belongs not to  
17 the Father but to the world; and the world is passing away with its desire, while he who does the will of God remains for ever.
- 18 Children, it is the last hour. You have learned that 'Antichrist is coming.' Well, but many antichrists have appeared — which makes us sure it is the last hour.
- 19 They withdrew from us, but they did not belong to us; had they belonged to us, they would have remained with us, but they withdrew to make it plain that they  
20 are none of us. Now, you have been anointed by the holy One,  
21 and you all possess knowledge. I am not writing to you because you do not know the truth, but because you do know it, and know that no lie has any connexion with the truth.
- 22 Who is the real liar?  
who but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ?

This is 'antichrist,'  
he who disowns the Father and the Son.

No one who disowns the Son can 23  
possess the Father :

he who confesses the Son possesses the Father as well.

Let that remain in you which 24  
you learned from the very beginning; if what you learned from the very beginning remains with you, then you will remain in the Son and in the Father.

Now this is what he has promised you,\* eternal life. I am writing 25  
to you in this way about those who would deceive you, but the unction 27  
you received from him remains within you, and you really need no teaching from anyone; simply remain in him, for his unction teaches you about everything and is true and is no lie—remain in him, as it has taught you to do. Remain with- 23  
in him now, my dear children, so that when he appears, we may have confidence instead of shrinking from him in shame at his arrival. As you know he is just, be sure 29  
that everyone who practises righteousness is born of him. 'Born 3  
of him!' Think what a love the Father has for us, in letting us be called 'children of God!' That is what we are. The world does not recognize us? That is simply because it did not recognize him. We are children of God now, 2  
beloved; what we are to be is not apparent yet, but we do know that when he appears, we are to be like him—for we are to see him as he is. And everyone who rests this hope 3  
on him, purifies himself as he is pure. Everyone who commits sin commits lawlessness : sin is lawlessness, and you know he appeared to take 5

\* Reading *ὁμῖν* instead of *ἡμῖν*.



[our] sins away. In him there is  
 6 no sin; anyone who remains in him  
 does not sin—anyone who sins has  
 neither seen nor known him. Let  
 7 no one deceive you, my dear chil-  
 dren: he who practises righteous-  
 8 ness is just, as He is just; he who  
 commits sin belongs to the devil,  
 for the devil is a sinner from the  
 very beginning. (This is why the  
 Son of God appeared, to destroy  
 9 the deeds of the devil.) Anyone  
 who is born of God does not commit  
 sin, for the offspring of God remain  
 in Him, and they cannot sin, be-  
 10 cause they are born of God. Here  
 is how the children of God and the  
 children of the devil are recognized;  
 anyone who does not practise  
 righteousness does not belong to  
 God, and neither does he who has  
 11 no love for his brother. For this  
 is the message you have learned  
 from the very beginning, that we  
 12 are to love one another: we are  
 not to be like Cain, who belonged  
 to the evil One and slew his brother.  
 And why did he slay him? Be-  
 cause his own deeds were evil and  
 13 his brother's just. Do not wonder,  
 brothers, that the world hates you.  
 14 We know we have crossed from  
 death to life, because we love the  
 brotherhood; he who has no love  
 [for his brother] remains in death.  
 15 Anyone who hates his brother is a  
 murderer, and you know no murder-  
 er has eternal life remaining  
 16 within him. We know what love  
 is by this, that He laid down his life  
 for us; so we ought to lay down  
 our lives for the brotherhood.  
 17 But whoever possesses this world's  
 goods, and notices his brother in  
 need, and shuts his heart against  
 him, how can love to God re-  
 18 main in him? My dear children,  
 let us put our love not into words

or into talk but into deeds, and  
 make it real.

Thus it is that we may be sure we 19  
 belong to the truth and reassure  
 ourselves whenever our heart con- 20  
 demns us; for God is greater than  
 our heart, and he knows all. If 21  
 our heart does not condemn us,  
 beloved, then we have confidence  
 in approaching God, and we get 22  
 from him whatever we ask, because  
 we obey his commands and do what  
 is pleasing in his sight. Now 23  
 this is what he commands, that we  
 believe in the name of his Son Jesus  
 Christ, and love one another as he  
 has commanded us to do; he who 24  
 obeys his commands remains within  
 him—and He remains within him.  
 And this is how we may be sure he  
 remains within us, by means of the  
 Spirit he has given us. Do not 4  
 believe every spirit, beloved, but  
 test the spirits to see if they come  
 from God; for many false prophets  
 have emerged in the world. You 2  
 can recognize the Spirit of God by  
 this: every spirit which confesses  
 Jesus as the Christ incarnate comes  
 from God, and every spirit which 3  
 does not confess Jesus [incarnate]  
 does not come from God. This  
 latter is the spirit of antichrist;  
 you were told it was coming, and  
 here it is already in the world. My 4  
 dear children, you belong to God,  
 and you have conquered all such,  
 for He who is within you is greater  
 than he who is in the world.

They belong to the world, 5  
 therefore they speak as in-  
 spired by the world,  
 and the world listens to them:  
 we belong to God— 6  
 he who knows God listens to  
 us,  
 he who does not belong to God  
 does not listen to us.

This is how we recognize the spirit of truth and the spirit of error.

7 Beloved, let us love one another, for love belongs to God, and every-  
 8 one who loves is born of God and knows God; he who does not love, does not know God, for God is love.  
 9 This is how the love of God has appeared for us, by God sending his only Son into the world, so that by  
 10 him we might live. Love lies in this, not in our love for him but in his love for us—in the sending of his Son to be the propitiation for our  
 11 sins. Beloved, if God had such love for us, we ought to love one an-  
 12 other. God no one has ever seen; but if we love one another, then God remains within us, and love for him  
 13 is complete in us. This is how we may be sure we remain in him and he in us, because he has given us a  
 14 share in his own Spirit; and we have seen, we can testify, that the Father has sent the Son as the Saviour of  
 15 the world. Whoever confesses that 'Jesus is the Son of God,' in him God remains, and he remains in  
 16 God; well, we do know, we have believed, the love God has for us.  
 God is love, and he who remains in love remains in God, and God  
 17 remains in him. Love is complete with us when we have absolute confidence about the day of judgment, since in this world we are living as  
 18 He lives. Love has no dread in it; no, love in its fulness drives all dread away, for dread has to do with punishment—anyone who has dread, has not reached the fulness of  
 19 love. We love, because He loved us first. If anyone declares, 'I love God,' and yet hates his brother, he is  
 20 a liar; for he who will not love his brother whom he has seen, cannot possibly love the God whom he  
 21 has never seen. And we get this

command from him, that he who loves God is to love his brother as well.

Everyone who believes Jesus is 5  
 the Christ, is born of God; and everyone who loves the Father, loves the sons\* born of him. This 2  
 is how we are sure that we love God's children, by loving God and obeying his commands (for love to 3  
 God means keeping his commands). And his commands are not irksome, for whatever is born of God conquers the world. Our faith, that is the conquest which conquers the 4  
 world. Who is the world's con- 5  
 queror but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God? Jesus 6  
 Christ, he it is who came by water, blood, and Spirit—not by the water alone, but by the water and the 7  
 blood. The Spirit is the witness to 8  
 this, for the Spirit is truth. The witnesses are three, the Spirit and the water and the blood, and the three of them are in accord. If 9  
 we accept human testimony, God's testimony is greater; for God's testimony consists in his testimony to his Son. He who believes in the 10  
 Son of God possesses that testimony within himself; he who will not believe God, has made God a liar by refusing to believe the testimony which God has borne to his Son. And the testimony is, that God 11  
 gave us life eternal and this life is in his Son.

He who possesses the Son pos- 12  
 sesses life:

he who does not possess the Son does not possess life.

I have written in this way to 13  
 you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that you may be sure

\* The Greek word is singular. It may be taken strictly, as meaning "the Son," or generically as above (see the next verse).



14 you have life eternal. Now the confidence we have in him is this, that he listens to us whenever we ask anything in accordance with  
 15 his will; and if we know he listens to whatever we ask, we know we obtain the requests we have made  
 16 to him. If anyone notices his brother committing a sin which is not deadly, he will ask and obtain life for him—for anyone who does not commit a deadly sin. There is such a thing as deadly sin; I do not mean he is to pray for  
 17 that. All iniquity is sin, but there are sins which are not deadly.

We know that anyone who is 18 born of God does not sin; He who was born of God preserves him, and the evil One never catches him.

We know that we belong to God, 19 and that the whole world lies in the power of the evil One.

We know that the Son of God 20 has come, and has given us insight to know Him who is the Real God; and we are in Him who is real, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the real God, this is life eternal. My dear children, keep clear of 21 idols.

## THE SECOND EPISTLE OF

## JOHN

1 THE presbyter, to the elect Lady and her children whom I love in the Truth (and not only I but all who 2 know the Truth) for the sake of the Truth which remains within us 3 and will be with us for ever: grace, mercy, peace will be with us from God the Father and from Jesus Christ the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

4 I was overjoyed to find some of your children leading the true Life, as we were commanded to do by 5 the Father. And now I entreat you, Lady—not as though I were writing you any new command, it is the command which we have had from the very beginning—let us 6 love one another. To live by his commands, that is what love means: and the command is, live in love as you have learned to do from the 7 very beginning. I say this, because a number of impostors have emerged in the world, men who

of Jesus Christ in the flesh; that marks the real ‘impostor’ and ‘antichrist.’ Watch yourselves; 8 you must not lose what you have been working for, but gain a full reward. Anyone who is ‘advanced’ 9 and will not remain by the doctrine of Christ, does not possess God: he who remains by the doctrine of Christ possesses both the Father and the Son. If anyone comes to 10 you and does not bring this doctrine, do not admit him to the house—do not even greet him, for 11 he who greets him shares in his wicked work.

I have a great deal to write to 12 you, but I do not mean to use ink and paper; I hope to visit you and have a talk with you, so that your \* joy may be unimpaired.

The children of your elect Sister 13 greet you.

\* Reading with A B and several versions, ὑμῶν, instead of ἡμῶν.



## THE THIRD EPISTLE OF JOHN

1 THE presbyter, to the beloved  
Gaius whom I love in the Truth.  
2 Beloved, I pray you may prosper  
in every way and keep well—as  
indeed your soul is keeping well.  
3 For I was overjoyed when some  
brothers arrived and testified to  
the truth of your life, as indeed you  
4 do lead the true Life; I have no  
greater joy than to hear of my  
5 children living in the Truth. Be-  
loved, you are acting loyally in  
rendering any service to the bro-  
thers and especially to strangers;  
6 they have testified to your love  
before the church. Pray speed  
them on their journey worthily of  
7 God; they have started out for  
his sake and declined to take any-  
8 thing from pagans; hence we are  
bound to support such men, to  
prove ourselves allies of the Truth.  
9 I have written to the church;  
only, Diotrephes, who likes to take

the lead among them, repudiates  
me. So when I come, I shall bring 10  
up what he is doing, babbling  
against me with wicked words—  
and, not satisfied with words, he  
refuses to welcome the brothers,  
checks those who want to welcome  
them, and excommunicates them  
from the church. Beloved, do 11  
not imitate evil but good; he who  
does good belongs to God, he who  
does evil has never seen God.

Everybody testifies to Deme- 12  
trius, and so does the Truth itself:  
I testify to him too, and you know  
my testimony is true.

I had a great deal to write to 13  
you, but I do not want to write  
to you with ink and pen; I am 14  
hoping to see you soon, and we will  
have a talk.

Peace to you! The friends 15  
salute you: salute the friends one  
by one.

## THE EPISTLE OF JUDAS (JUDE)

1 JUDAS, a servant of Jesus Christ  
and a brother of James, to those  
who have been called, who are  
beloved by God the Father and  
2 kept by Jesus Christ : mercy, peace  
and love be multiplied to you.  
3 Beloved, my whole concern was  
to write to you on the subject of  
our common salvation, but I am  
forced to write you an appeal to  
defend the faith which has once  
for all been committed to the  
4 saints; for certain persons have  
slipped in by stealth (their doom  
has been predicted long ago), im-  
pious creatures who pervert the  
grace of our God into immorality  
and disown our sole liege and Lord,  
5 Jesus Christ. Now I want to  
remind you of what you are per-  
fectly aware, that though the Lord  
once\* brought the People safe  
out of Egypt, he subsequently de-  
6 stroyed the unbelieving, while the  
angels who abandoned their own  
domain, instead of preserving their  
proper rank, are reserved by him  
within the nether gloom, in chains  
eternal, for the doom of the great  
7 Day—just as Sodom and Gomorra  
and the adjacent cities, which  
similarly glutted themselves with  
vice and sensual perversity, are  
exhibited as a warning of the ever-  
lasting fire they are sentenced to  
8 suffer. Despite it all, these vision-  
aries pollute their flesh, scorn the

Powers celestial, and scoff at the  
angelic Glories. Now *the very arch-* 9  
*angel Michael*, when he disputed  
the body of Moses with Satan, did  
not dare to condemn him with  
scoffs; what he said was, *The Lord*  
*rebuke you!* But these people 10  
scoff at anything they do not un-  
derstand; and whatever they do  
understand, like irrational animals,  
by mere instinct, that proves their  
ruin. Woe to them! they go the 11  
road of Cain, rush into Balaam's  
error for what it brings them, and  
perish in Korah's rebellion. These 12  
people are stains on your love-  
feasts; they have no qualms about  
carousing in your midst, *they look*  
*after none but themselves*—rainless  
clouds, swept along by the wind,  
trees in autumn without fruit,  
doubly dead and so uprooted, wild 13  
waves foaming out their own  
shame, wandering stars for whom  
the nether gloom of darkness has  
been reserved eternally. It was of 14  
these, too, that Enoch the seventh  
from Adam prophesied, when he  
said,

*Behold the Lord comes with my-*  
*riads of his holy ones,*  
*to execute judgment upon all,* 15  
*and to convict all the impious*  
*of all the impious deeds they have*  
*committed,*  
*and of all the harsh things said*  
*against him by impious sinners.*

For these people are murmurers, 16  
grumbling at their lot in life—they  
fall in with their own passions, their

\* *ἀπαρ* must be connected, as in the  
Syriac and Egyptian versions, with *σώσας*,  
not with *εἰδóτας* as in most manuscripts.



## JUDAS (JUDE)

talk is arrogant, they pay court to men to benefit themselves.

- 17 Now, beloved, you must remember the words of the apostles  
 18 of our Lord Jesus Christ; they told you beforehand, "At the end of things there will be mockers who go by their own impious passions."  
 19 These are the people who set up divisions and distinctions, sensuous creatures, destitute of the Spirit.  
 20 But do you, beloved, build up yourselves on your most holy faith and  
 21 pray in the holy Spirit, so keeping yourselves within the love of God and waiting for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ that ends in life

eternal. *Snatch some from the fire,* 22 and have mercy on the waverers, 23 \*trembling as you touch them, with loathing for *the garment* which the flesh has *stained*.

Now to him who is able to keep 24 you from slipping and to make you stand unblemished and exultant before his glory—to the only God, 25 our saviour through Jesus Christ our Lord, be glory, majesty, dominion and authority, before all time and now and for all time : Amen.

\* Reading *καὶ οὓς μὲν ἐκ πυρὸς ἀρπάζετε, διακρινομένους δὲ ἐλεᾶτε*, with Syr<sup>phil</sup> Clement and Jerome.

# THE REVELATION

## OF ST. JOHN

### CHAP.

1 A REVELATION by Jesus Christ, which God granted him for his servants, to show them *what must come to pass* very soon; he disclosed it by sending it through his  
2 angel to his servant John, who now testifies to what is God's word and Jesus Christ's testimony—to what  
3 he saw. Blessed is he who reads aloud, blessed they who hear the words of this prophecy and lay to heart what is written in it; for the time is near.

4 John to the seven churches in Asia: grace be to you and peace from HE WHO IS AND WAS AND IS COMING, and from the seven Spirits before his throne, and from Jesus Christ the faithful witness, the first-born from the dead, and the prince over the kings of earth; to him who loves us and has loosed us from  
6 our sins by shedding his blood—he has made us a realm of priests for his God and Father,—to him be glory and dominion for ever and  
7 ever: Amen. *Lo, he is coming on the clouds, to be seen by every eye, even by those who impaled him, and all the tribes of earth will wail because of him: even*  
8 so, Amen. “*I am the alpha and the omega,*” saith the Lord God, *who is and was and is coming, the almighty.*

9 I John, your brother and your companion in the distress and realm and patient endurance which Jesus brings, found myself in the island called Patmos, for adhering to God's word and the testimony of Jesus.

On the Lord's day I found myself 10 rapt in the Spirit, and I heard a loud voice behind me like a trumpet calling, “Write your vision in a 11 book, and send it to the seven churches, to Ephesus and Smyrna and Pergamum and Thyatira and Sardis and Philadelphia and Laodicea.” So I turned to see whose 12 voice it was that spoke to me; and on turning round I saw seven golden lampstands and in the middle 13 of the lampstands *One who resembled a human being, with a long robe, and a belt of gold round his breast; his head and hair were* 14 *white as wool, white as snow; his eyes flashed like fire, his feet glowed* 15 *like burnished bronze, his voice sounded like many waves, in his* 16 *right hand he held seven stars, a sharp sword with a double edge issued from his mouth, and his face shone like the sun in full strength.* When I saw him, I fell at his feet 17 like a dead man; but he laid his hand on me, saying, “*Do not be afraid; I am the First and the Last,\** I was dead and here I am 18 alive for evermore, holding the keys that unlock death and Hades. Write down your vision of what is 19 and what is to be hereafter. As for 20 the secret symbol of the seven stars which you have seen in my right hand, and of the seven golden lampstands—the seven stars are the angels of the seven churches, and

\* The words ‘and the living One’ (καὶ ὁ ὢν) have been added as a gloss from the next verse.



## REVELATION II

the seven lampstands are the seven  
 2 churches. To the angel of the church at Ephesus write thus:—  
 These are the words of him who holds the seven stars in his right hand, who moves among the seven golden  
 2 lampstands: I know your doings, your hard work and your patient endurance; I know that you cannot bear wicked men, and that you have tested those who style themselves apostles (no apostles they!) and detected them to be liars;  
 3 I know that you are enduring patiently and have borne up for my sake and have not wearied.  
 4 But I have this against you: you have given up loving one another  
 5 as you did at first. Now, remember the height from which you have fallen; repent and act as you did at first. If not, I will come to you [very soon] and remove your lampstand, unless you repent. Still,  
 6 you have this in your favour: you hate the practices of the Nicolaitans, and I hate them too. Let anyone who has an ear listen to what the Spirit says to the churches: 'The conqueror I will allow to eat from the tree of Life which is within the  
 8 paradise of God.' Then to the angel of the church at Smyrna write thus:—These are the words of the First and Last, who was dead  
 9 and came to life: I know your \* distress and your poverty (but you are rich!); I know how you are being slandered by those who style themselves Jews (no Jews are they, but a mere synagogue of  
 10 Satan!). Have no fear of what you are to suffer. The devil indeed is going to put some of you in prison, that you may be tested; you will have a distressful ten days. Be faithful, though you have to die

for it, and I will give you the crown of Life. Let anyone who has an  
 11 ear listen to what the Spirit says to the churches: 'The conqueror shall not be injured by the second death.' Then to the angel of the  
 12 church at Pergamum write thus:—These are the words of him who wields the sharp sword with the double edge: I know where you  
 13 dwell, where Satan sits enthroned, and yet you adhere to my Name, you have not renounced your faith in me even during the days when my witness, my faithful Antipas, was martyred in your midst—where Satan dwells. But I have  
 14 one or two things against you: you have some adherents there of the tenets of Balaam, who taught Balak how to set a pitfall before the  
 sons of Israel by making them eat food which had been sacrificed to idols and give way to sexual vice. So even with you; you likewise  
 15 have some adherents of the tenets of the Nicolaitans. Repent; if  
 16 not, I will very soon come to you and make war upon them with the sword of my mouth. Let anyone  
 17 who has an ear listen to what the Spirit says to the churches: 'The conqueror I will allow to share the hidden manna, and I will give him a white stone inscribed with a new name, unknown to any except him who receives it.' Then to the  
 18 angel of the church at Thyatira write thus:—These are the words of the Son of God, whose eyes flash like fire and whose feet glow like bronze. I know your doings, your  
 19 love and loyalty and service and patient endurance; I know you are doing more than you did at first. Still I have this against you: 20  
 you are tolerating that Jezebel of a woman who styles herself a

\* Omitting, as in ver. 13, [τὰ ἔργα καί].

## REVELATION III

prophetess and seduces my servants by teaching them *to give way to sexual vice and to eat food which has*  
 21 *been sacrificed to idols.* I have given her time to repent, but she refuses  
 22 to repent of her sexual vice. Lo, I will lay her on a sickbed, and bring her paramours into sore distress, if they do not repent of her practices; and her children I will exterminate. So shall all the churches know that I am *the searcher of the inmost heart*; I will requite each of you according to what you have done.  
 24 But for the rest of you at Thyatira, for all who do not hold these tenets, for those who have not (in their phrase) 'fathomed the deep mysteries of Satan'—for you this is my word: I impose no fresh burden  
 25 on you; only hold to what you have, till such time as I come. 'And the  
 26 conqueror, he who till the end lays to heart what I enjoin, *I will give him authority over the nations—*  
 27 *aye, he will shepherd them with an iron flail,*  
*shattering them like a potter's jars—*

as I myself have received authority  
 28 from my Father; also I will grant him to see the Morning-star.' Let anyone who has an ear listen to what the Spirit says to the churches.  
 3 Then to the angel of the church at Sardis write thus:—These are the words of him who holds the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars: I know your doings, you have the name of being alive, but  
 2 you are dead. Wake up, rally what is still left to you, though it is on the very point of death; for I find nothing you have done is complete  
 3 in the eyes of my God. Now remember what you received and heard, hold to it and repent. If you will not wake up, I shall come

like a thief; you will not know at what hour I come upon you. Still, you have a few souls at Sardis 4 who have not soiled their raiment; they shall walk beside me in white, for they deserve to. 'The conqueror shall be clad in white raiment; I will never *erase his name from the book of Life*, but will own him openly before my Father and before his angels.' Let anyone who has 6 an ear listen to what the Spirit says to the churches. Then to the 7 angel of the church at Philadelphia write thus:—These are the words of the true Holy One, who holds the key of David, *who opens and none shall shut, who shuts and none shall open.\** Lo, I have set a door open 8 before you which no one is able to shut; for though your strength is small, you have kept my word, you have not renounced my Name. Lo, I will make those who belong 9 to that synagogue of Satan, who style themselves Jews (no Jews are they, but liars!)—lo, I will have them *come and do homage before your feet* and learn that *I did love you*. Because you have kept the 10 word of my patient endurance, I will keep you safe through the hour of trial which is coming upon the whole world to test the dwellers on earth. I am coming very soon: 11 hold to what you have, in case your crown is taken from you. 'As for 12 the conqueror, I will make him a pillar in the temple of my God (nevermore shall he leave it), and I will inscribe on him the name of my God, *the name of the city* of my God (the new Jerusalem which descends out of heaven from my

\* Omitting (with Primasius) *οἶδᾶ σου τὰ ἔργα*, 'I know your doings,' a harmonistic gloss which interrupts the connexion of thought.



God), and my own *new name*.'  
 13 Let anyone who has an ear listen  
 to what the Spirit says to the  
 14 churches. Then to the angel of  
 the church at Laodicea write thus :  
 These are the words of the Amen,  
*the faithful and true witness, the*  
 15 *origin of God's creation*. I know  
 your doings, you are neither cold  
 nor hot—would you were either  
 16 cold or hot ! So, because you are  
 lukewarm, neither hot nor cold,  
 I am going to spit you out of my  
 17 mouth. You declare, 'I am rich,  
*I am well off, I lack nothing* !—  
 not knowing you are a miserable  
 creature, pitiful, poor, blind, naked.  
 18 I advise you to buy from me gold  
 refined in the fire, that you may be  
 rich, white raiment to clothe you  
 and prevent the shame of your  
 nakedness from being seen, and  
 salve to rub on your eyes, that you  
 19 may see. *I reprove and discipline*  
*those whom I love* ; so be in warm  
 20 earnest and repent. Lo, I stand  
 at the door and knock ; if anyone  
 hears my voice and opens the door,  
 I will come in and sup with him,  
 21 and he with me. 'The conqueror  
 I will allow to sit beside me on  
 my throne, as I myself have con-  
 quered and sat down beside my  
 22 Father on his throne.' Let any-  
 one who has an ear listen to what  
 the Spirit says to the churches."

## CHAP.

4 AFTER this I looked, and there  
 was a door standing open in heaven !  
 And the first voice I had heard  
 talking with me like *a trumpet* said,  
 "Come up here, and I will show  
 you *what must come to pass* after  
 2 this." At once I found myself  
 rapt in the Spirit ; and lo a Throne  
 stood in heaven with *One seated on*  
 3 *the throne*—the seated One re-

sembled in appearance jasper and  
 sardius—and *round the throne a* 4  
*rainbow* resembling emerald in  
 appearance ; also round the throne  
 four and twenty thrones, and on  
 these thrones four and twenty  
 Presbyters seated, who were clad  
 in white raiment with golden  
 crowns upon their heads. From 5  
 the throne *issue flashes of lightning*  
*and loud blasts and peals of thunder*.  
 And in front of the throne seven 6  
 torches of fire burn (they are the  
 seven Spirits of God) ; also in front  
 of the throne there is like a sea of  
 glass, *resembling crystal*. And on  
 each side of the throne, all round it,  
 four living Creatures full of eyes 7  
 inside and outside ; the first living  
 Creature resembling *a lion*, the  
 second living Creature resembling  
 an ox, the third living Creature with  
 a face like a man's, the fourth living 8  
 Creature like a flying eagle. The  
 four living Creatures, each with  
 six wings apiece, are full of eyes all  
 over their bodies and under their  
 wings, and day and night they  
 never cease the chant,

"Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord God  
 almighty,

who was and is and is coming."  
 And whenever the living Creatures 9  
 render glory and honour and  
 thanksgiving to him who is seated  
 on the throne, who lives for ever  
 and ever, the four and twenty 10  
 Presbyters fall down before him  
 who is seated on the throne, wor-  
 shipping him who lives for ever and  
 ever, and casting their crowns before  
 the throne, with the cry,  
 "Thou deservest, our Lord and 11  
 God,\* to receive glory and  
 honour and power,  
 for it was thou who didst create  
 all things :

\* Omitting [*ὁ ἀγίος*].

# REVELATION V, VI

they existed and were created by thy will."

CHAP.

thou hast made them *kings and 10*  
*priests for our God*, and they shall reign on earth."

5 THEN I saw lying on the right hand of *him who was seated on the throne, a scroll with writing on the back as well as inside, sealed with 2*

seven seals. And I saw a strong angel exclaiming with a loud voice,

"Who is fit to open the scroll, to 3 break the seals of it?" But no one was fit, either in heaven or on earth or underneath the earth, to open the scroll or look into it.

4 So I began to weep bitterly because no one had been found fit to open the scroll or look into 5 it; but one of the Presbyters told me, "Weep not; lo, *the Lion of Judah's tribe, the Scion of David,* he has won\* the power of opening the scroll and its seven seals."

6 Then I noticed a *Lamb* standing in the midst of the throne and the four living Creatures and the Presbyters; it seemed to have been *slain*, but it had seven heads and *seven eyes* (they are the seven Spirits of God sent out *into all 7 the earth*), and it went and took the scroll out of the right hand of *him who was seated on the throne.*

8 And when it took the scroll, the four living Creatures and the four and twenty Presbyters fell down before the Lamb, each with his harp and with golden bowls full of *incense* (that is, full of *the prayers 9 of the saints*), *singing a new song* :

"Thou deservest to take the scroll and open its seals,  
for thou wast slain and by shedding thy blood hast ransomed for God men from every tribe and tongue and people and nation;

Then I looked, and I heard the 11 voice of many angels round the throne and of the living Creatures and of the Presbyters, numbering *myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands*, crying aloud, "The 12 *slain Lamb* deserves to receive power and wealth and wisdom and might and honour and glory and blessing." And I heard every 13 creature in heaven and on earth and under the earth crying, "Blessing and honour and glory and dominion for ever and ever, to *him who is seated on the throne* and to the Lamb!" "Amen," 14 said the four living Creatures, and the Presbyters fell down and worshipped.

And when the Lamb opened one 6 of the seven seals, I looked, and I heard one of the four living Creatures calling like thunder, "Come."† So I looked, and there was a *white 2 horse*, its rider holding a bow; he was given a crown, and away he rode conquering and to conquer.

And when he opened the second 3 seal, I heard the second living Creature calling, "Come." And 4 away went another *red horse*; its rider was allowed to take peace from the earth and to make men slay each other; he was given a huge sword.

And when he opened the third 5 seal, I heard the third living Creature calling, "Come." So I looked and there was a *black horse*; its rider held a pair of scales in his hand, and I heard like a voice in 6 the midst of the four living Creatures saying, "A shilling for a

\* Literally, "has conquered (see iii. 21), so that he can open."

† Addressed either to the seer or, more probably, to the mounted figures.



## REVELATION VII

quart of wheat, a shilling for three quarts of barley; but harm not oil and wine!"

7 And when he opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth  
8 living Creature calling, "Come." So I looked, and there was a livid horse; its rider's name was *Death*, and *Hades* followed him. They were given power over the fourth part of the earth, *to kill men with sword and famine and plague and by the wild beasts of the earth.*

9 And when he opened the fifth seal, I saw underneath the altar the souls of those who had been slain for adhering to God's word and to the testimony which they  
10 bore; and they cried aloud, "*O Sovereign Lord, holy and true, how long wilt thou refrain from charging and avenging our blood upon those*  
11 *who dwell on earth?*" But they were each given a white robe, and told to remain quiet for a little longer, until their number was completed by their fellow-servants and their brothers who were to be killed like themselves.

12 And when he opened the sixth seal, I looked; and a great earthquake took place, *the sun turned black as sackcloth, the full moon*  
13 *turned like blood, the stars of the sky dropped to earth as a fig tree shaken by a gale sheds her unripe*  
14 *figs, the sky was swept aside like a scroll being folded up, and every mountain and island was moved*  
15 *out of its place. Then the kings of the earth, the magnates, the generals, the rich, the strong, slaves and freemen everyone of them, hid in caves and among the*  
16 *rocks of the mountains, calling to the mountains and the rocks, "Fall upon us and hide us from the face of him who is seated on*

*the throne and from the anger of the Lamb; for the great Day of their* 17  
*anger has come, and who can stand it?"*

After that I saw four angels 7  
standing at the four corners of the earth, holding back the four winds from blowing on the earth or on the sea or on any tree. And I saw 2  
another angel rise up from the east, with the seal of the living God; he shouted aloud to the four angels who were allowed to injure the earth and sea, "Do no 3  
harm to earth or sea or trees, until we seal the servants of our God upon their foreheads." And I heard 4  
what was the number of the sealed—a hundred and forty-four thousand sealed from every tribe of the sons of Israel, twelve thousand 5  
sealed from the tribe of Judah, twelve thousand from the tribe of Reuben, twelve thousand from the tribe of Simeon, twelve thousand 7  
from the tribe of Levi, twelve thousand from the tribe of Issachar, twelve thousand from the tribe of Zebulun, twelve thousand from 8  
the tribe of Joseph, twelve thousand from the tribe of Benjamin \* twelve thousand from the tribe of Gad, twelve thousand from the tribe of 6  
Asher, twelve thousand from the tribe of Naphtali, twelve thousand sealed from the tribe of Manasseh.

After that I looked, and there 9  
was a great host whom no one could count, from every nation and tribe and people and tongue, standing† before the throne and before the Lamb, clad in white robes, with palm-branches in their

\* The simple transposition of 5c-6 to a place after 8, as Dr. G. B. Gray has pointed out (*Encyclopaedia Biblica* 5209), yields a far more normal list of the tribes.

† In contrast to the dread of vi. 17, and in line with the thought of Luke xxi. 36.

## REVELATION VIII

10 hands; and they cried with a loud voice, "Saved by our God *who is seated on the throne*, and by the  
 11 Lamb!" And all the angels surrounded the throne and the Presbyters and the four living Creatures, and fell on their faces before the  
 12 throne, worshipping God and crying, "Even so! Blessing and glory and wisdom and thanksgiving and honour and power and might be to our God for ever and ever:  
 13 Amen!" Then one of the Presbyters addressed me, saying, "Who are these, clad in white robes?  
 14 where have they come from?" I said to him, "You know, my lord." So he told me, "These are the people who have come out of the great *Distress, who washed their robes* and made them white *in the blood of the Lamb*.  
 15 For this they are now before the throne of God, serving\* him day and night within his temple.  
     *and he who is seated on the throne shall overshadow them.*  
 16 *Never again will they hunger, never again will they thirst, never shall the sun strike them, nor any scorching heat;*  
 17 *for the Lamb in the midst of the throne will be their shepherd, guiding them to fountains of living water;*  
     *and God will wipe every tear from their eyes."*

CHAP.

8 AND when he opened the seventh seal, silence reigned in heaven for 2 about half-an-hour. Then I saw seven trumpets being given to the seven angels who stand before God.  
 3 And another angel went and *stood at the altar* with a golden censer;

\* In the sense of worship, as in xxii. 3.

he was given abundant *incense*, to be laid *with the prayers* of all the saints upon the golden altar in front of the throne; and the smoke 4 *of the incense with the prayers* of all the saints rose up from the angel's hand before God. And the angel 5 took the censer, *filled it with fire from the altar*, and poured it on the earth; then followed *peals of thunder, loud blasts, flashes of lightning*, and an earthquake. And 6 the seven angels with the seven trumpets prepared to blow their blasts. The first blew, and *there* 7 *came hail and fire mixed with blood, falling on the earth*; a third of the earth was burnt up, a third of the trees were burnt up, and all the green grass was burnt up. 8 The second angel blew, and *what looked like a huge mountain on fire* was hurled into the sea; a third of the sea *turned blood*, a third of the 9 creatures in the sea—the living creatures—perished, and a third of the ships were destroyed. The 10 third angel blew, and a huge *star blazing like a torch dropped out of the sky*, dropped on a third of the rivers and on the fountains (the 11 name of the star is Wormwood); a third of the waters became wormwood, and many people died of the waters, because they had turned bitter. The fourth angel blew; 12 and a stroke fell on a third of the sun, a third of the moon, and a third of the stars, so as to darken one third of them, withdrawing light from a third of the day and likewise of the night.

Then I looked, and I heard an 13 eagle flying in mid-heaven with a loud cry, "Woe, woe, woe to the dwellers on earth, for the rest of the trumpet-blasts that the three angels are about to blow!"



# REVELATION IX, X

CHAP.

9 THE fifth angel blew, and I saw  
a Star which had dropped from  
heaven to earth; he was given the  
2 key of the pit of the abyss, and  
he opened the pit of the abyss,  
*and smoke poured out of the pit,*  
*like the smoke of a huge furnace,*  
*till the sun and the air were darkened*  
3 *by the smoke from the pit.* And  
out of the smoke came *locusts on*  
*the earth*; they were granted power  
like the power wielded by scorpions  
4 on earth, but they were told not to  
harm *the grass on earth nor any*  
*green thing nor any tree*, only such  
human beings as had not *the seal*  
5 of God *upon their foreheads*; these  
they were allowed, not to kill but  
to torture, for five months—and  
their torture was like the torture  
of a scorpion when it stings a man.  
6 In those days *men will seek death,*  
*but they will not find it* :  
they will long to die,  
but death flies from them.  
7 *The appearance of the locusts*  
*resembled horses armed for battle* ;  
on their heads were sort of crowns  
like gold; their faces were like  
8 human faces, their hair like women's  
hair, and *their teeth like lions' fangs* ;  
9 they had scales like iron coats of  
mail; the whirring of their wings  
was *like the noise of many chariots*  
10 rushing to battle; their tails  
and their stings were like scorpions',  
and their power of hurting men  
for five months lay in their tails;  
11 they had a king over them, the  
angel of the abyss—his Hebrew  
name is Abaddon, but in Greek he  
is called Apollyon.  
12 The first woe has passed :  
two woes are still to come.  
13 Then the sixth angel blew; and  
I heard a voice from the four  
horns of the golden altar before

God, telling the sixth angel with 14  
the trumpet, "Let loose the four  
angels who are bound at *the great*  
*river Euphrates.*" So the four 15  
angels were unloosed, who had been  
kept ready for that hour and day  
and month and year, to kill the  
third of men. And the number 16  
of the troops of their cavalry was  
two hundred millions (I heard  
what was their number). And 17  
this is how the horses and their  
riders looked in my vision : they  
wore coats of mail red as fire,  
dark-blue as jacinth and yellow as  
smoke; the horses' heads were  
like lions' heads, and from their  
mouths poured fire and smoke  
and brimstone. By these three 18  
plagues the third of men were  
killed, by the fire, the smoke, and  
the brimstone, that poured out of  
their mouths; for the power of 19  
the horses lies in their mouths—  
and also in their tails (their tails  
are like serpents, they have heads,  
and it is with their heads that  
they hurt). But the rest of man- 20  
kind, who were not killed by these  
plagues, did not repent of *the*  
*works of their hands* and give up wor-  
shipping *demons and idols of gold*  
*and silver and brass and stone and*  
*wood, which cannot either see or hear*  
*or stir* ; nor did they repent of their 21  
murders or of *their magic spells* or  
of *their sexual vice* or of their thefts.

CHAP.

THEN I saw another\* strong angel 10  
descend from heaven; he was clad  
in a cloud, with a rainbow over  
his head, his face like the sun, his  
feet like columns of fire, and a 2  
small scroll open in his hand. He  
set his right foot on the sea, his

\* Referring to v. 2, in all probability;  
but it may simply mean, "another angel, a  
strong one."



## REVELATION XI

8 left upon the earth, and shouted  
aloud like a lion roaring; and  
at his shout the seven thunders  
4 gave voice. After the seven  
thunders had spoken, I was going  
to write it down; but I heard a  
voice from heaven saying, "*Seal*  
*up what the seven thunders have*  
5 *said, do not write it.*" Then the  
angel I saw standing on the sea  
and the earth *raised his right hand*  
6 *to heaven and swore by Him who*  
*lives for ever and ever, who created*  
*the heaven and what is in it, the*  
*earth and what is in it, and the sea*  
*and what is in it,* "There shall be  
7 no more delay; in the days of the  
seventh angel's voice, when he  
now blows his blast, then shall  
*the secret purpose of God be fulfilled,*  
as he assured *his servants the*  
8 *prophets.*" Then the voice I had  
heard from heaven again talked  
to me, saying, "Go and take the  
small scroll which lies open in the  
hand of the angel who is standing  
9 on the sea and the earth." So I  
went to the angel, saying, "Give  
me *the small scroll.*" "Take it,"  
said he, "*and swallow it; it will*  
*taste sweet as honey, but it will be*  
10 *bitter to digest.*" Then I took  
*the small scroll from the hand of*  
*the angel and swallowed it; it did*  
*taste sweet, like honey, but when*  
I had eaten it, it was bitter to  
11 digest. Then I was told, "*You must*  
*prophecy again of many peoples and*  
*nations and languages and kings.*"  
11 And I was given a reed like a rod,  
and told, "Rise up and measure  
the temple of God and the altar,  
2 numbering the worshippers; but  
omit the court outside the temple,  
do not measure that, for it has been  
given over to the *Gentiles*; and  
the city will be under their heel for  
3 two and forty months. But I will

allow my two witnesses to prophesy  
for twelve hundred and sixty days,  
clad in sackcloth (they are *the* 4  
*two olive-trees* and the two *lamp-*  
*stands which stand before the Lord*  
*of the earth*):

whoever tries to harm them, 5  
*fire will issue from their mouth*  
*and consume their enemies;*  
whoever should try to harm them,  
so must he be killed."

They have power to shut up the 6  
sky, so that no rain falls during  
the days when they are prophesy-  
ing; and they have power over  
*the waters, to turn them into blood,*  
and also to smite the earth with all  
*manner of plagues* as often as they  
choose. But, when they have 7  
finished their testimony, *the Beast*  
*that ascends from the abyss will make*  
*war on them and conquer them* and  
kill them, and their corpses will 8  
lie in the streets of that great  
City whose mystical name is *Sodom*  
and *Egypt*—where their Lord also  
was crucified. For three days and 9  
a half, men from all peoples and  
tribes and tongues and nations  
look at their corpses, refusing to let  
their corpses be buried; and the 10  
dwellers on earth will gloat over  
them and *rejoice*, sending presents  
to congratulate one another—for  
these two prophets were a torment  
to the dwellers on earth. But 11  
after three days and a half *the*  
*breath of life from God entered*  
*them; they stood on their feet*  
*(terror fell on those who saw them)*  
and heard a loud voice from heaven 12  
telling them, "Come up here."  
So up to heaven they went in a cloud,  
before the eyes of their enemies.  
At that hour *a great earthquake* 13  
took place, a tenth of the City  
*was destroyed*, and seven thousand  
souls perished in the earthquake:

## REVELATION XII

the rest were awestruck, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

14 The second woe has passed :  
the third woe soon is coming.

15 Then the seventh angel blew ;  
and loud voices followed in heaven,  
crying, "*The rule of the world has  
passed to our Lord and his Christ,  
and he shall reign for ever and*

16 *ever.*" Then the four and twenty  
Presbyters who are seated on their  
thrones before God, fell on their  
faces and worshipped God, saying,

17 "We thank thee, Lord God  
*almighty, who art and wast,*  
that thou hast assumed thy great  
power and *begun to reign ;*

18 *the nations were enraged,*  
but thine anger has come ;  
the time has come for the dead  
to be judged,

the time for rewarding thy ser-  
vants the prophets,

and the saints who reverence thy  
name, both low and high,

the time for destroying the de-  
stroyers of the earth."

19 Then the temple of God in  
heaven was thrown open, and the  
ark of his covenant was seen inside  
his temple ; there were flashes of  
lightning, loud blasts, peals of  
thunder, an earthquake, and a hail-  
storm.

12 And a great portent was  
seen in heaven, a woman clad in  
the sun—with the moon under her  
feet, and a tiara of twelve stars

2 on her head ; she was with child,  
crying in the pangs of travail, in

3 anguish for her delivery. Then  
another portent was seen in heaven !

There was a huge red dragon, with  
seven heads and seven horns and

4 seven diadems upon his heads ; his  
tail swept away a third of the stars

of heaven and flung them to the  
earth. And the dragon stood in

front of the woman who was on

the point of being delivered, to  
devour her child as soon as it was  
born. She gave birth to a son, a

5 male child, who is to shepherd all  
the nations with an iron flail ; her  
child was caught up to God and to

6 his throne, and she herself fled to  
the desert, where a place has been  
prepared for her by God, in which

she is to be nourished for twelve  
hundred and sixty days. And war

7 broke out in heaven, Michael and  
his angels fighting with the dragon ;  
the dragon and his angels also

8 fought, but he failed, and there  
was no place for them in heaven  
any longer. So the huge dragon

9 was thrown down—that old serpent  
called the Devil and Satan, the  
seducer of the whole world—thrown

down to the earth, and his angels  
thrown down along with him.

Then I heard a loud voice in heaven

10 saying, "Now it has come, the  
salvation and power, the reign of  
our God and the authority of his

Christ !—for the Accuser of our  
brothers is thrown down, who  
accused them before God day and

11 night. But they have conquered  
him by the blood of the Lamb and  
by the word of their testimony ;

they had to die for it, but they did  
not cling to life. Rejoice for this,

12 O heavens and ye that dwell in  
them ! But woe to earth and sea !  
The devil has descended to you

in fierce anger, knowing that his  
time is short." And when the

13 dragon found himself thrown down  
to earth, he pursued the woman  
who had given birth to the male

child ; but the woman was given

14 the two wings of a great eagle  
for her flight to the desert, to her  
appointed place, where she is

nourished for a Time, two Times,  
and half a Time, safe from the



## REVELATION XIII

15 serpent. Then from his mouth  
the serpent poured water after  
the woman like a river, to sweep  
16 her away with a flood; but the  
earth came to the rescue of the  
woman, the earth opened its mouth  
and swallowed up the river that  
the dragon had poured out of his  
17 mouth. So, enraged at the woman,  
the dragon went off to wage war on  
the rest of her offspring, on those  
who keep God's commandments  
and hold the testimony of Jesus.  
18 Then I stood on the sand of the  
13 sea, and I saw *a Beast rising out  
of the sea with ten horns* and seven  
heads, ten diadems\* on his horns,  
and blasphemous titles on his  
2 heads. *The Beast I saw resembled  
a leopard, his feet were like a bear's,*  
and his mouth like *a lion's*. To him  
the dragon gave his own power and  
his own throne and great authority.  
3 One of his heads looked as if it had  
been slain and killed, but the deadly  
wound was healed, and the whole  
earth went after him in wonder,  
worshipping the dragon for having  
given authority to the Beast, and  
4 worshipping the Beast with the cry,  
"Who is like the Beast?"  
Who can fight with him?"  
5 He was allowed *to utter loud* and  
blasphemous *vaunts*, and allowed  
*to exert* authority for two and forty  
6 months; so he opened his mouth  
for blasphemies against God, to  
blaspheme his name and his dwelling  
(that is, the dwellers in heaven).  
7 He was allowed *to wage war on the  
saints and to conquer them*, and  
given authority over every tribe  
and people and tongue and nation;  
8 and all the dwellers on earth will  
be his worshippers, everyone whose

name has not been *written* from  
the foundation of the world *in the  
book of Life*.† Let anyone who has 9  
an ear listen:—

*Whoever is destined for captivity, 10  
to captivity he goes:*

*whoever kills with the sword,  
by the sword must he be killed.*

This is what shows the patience  
and the faith of the saints.

Then I saw another Beast rising 11  
from the land; he had two horns  
like a lamb, but he spoke like a  
dragon. He exerts the full author- 12  
ity of the first Beast in his presence,  
causing the earth and its inhabit-  
ants to worship the first Beast,  
whose deadly wound was healed.  
He performs amazing miracles, 13  
even making fire descend from  
heaven on earth in the sight of  
men, and by dint of the miracles 14  
he is allowed to perform in presence  
of the Beast, he seduces the dwellers  
on earth; he bids the dwellers on  
earth erect a statue to the Beast  
who lived after being wounded by  
the sword, and to this statue of the 15  
Beast he was allowed to impart the  
breath of life, so that the statue  
of the Beast should actually speak.  
He has everyone put to death  
*who will not worship the statue of*  
the Beast, and he obliges all men, 16  
low and high, rich and poor,  
freemen and slaves alike, to have  
a mark put upon their right hand  
or their forehead, so that no one 17  
can buy or sell unless he bears the  
mark, that is the name of the  
Beast or the cipher of his name.  
Now for the gift of interpretation! 18  
Let the discerning calculate the  
cipher of the Beast; it is the cipher

\* Here, as in xii. 3, an assumption of the  
royal power which really belonged to God  
(see xix. 12).

† The words "of the Lamb slain" (τοῦ  
ἀρνίου τοῦ ἐσφαγμένου) are probably a gloss  
from xxi. 27. The book of Life elsewhere  
appears without any such addition.



## REVELATION XIV

of a man, and the figures are six hundred and sixty-six.

CHAP.

14 THEN I looked, and there was the Lamb standing on mount Sion, and along with him a hundred and forty-four thousand bearing his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads! And I heard a voice from heaven like the sound of many waves and the sound of loud thunder; the voice I heard was like harpists playing on their harps; they were singing\* a new song before the throne and before the four living Creatures and the Presbyters, and no one could learn that song except the hundred and forty-four thousand who had been ransomed from earth. They have not been defiled by intercourse with women—they are celibates; they follow the Lamb wherever he goes; they have been ransomed from among men, as the first to be reaped for God and the Lamb. And on their lips no lie was ever detected†; they are stainless. Then I saw another angel flying in mid-heaven with an eternal gospel for the inhabitants of the earth, for every nation and tribe and tongue and people; he cried aloud, "Fear God and give him glory, for the hour of his judgment has come; worship him who made heaven and earth, the sea and the fountains of water." And another, a second angel followed, crying, "Fallen, fallen is Babylon the great, who made all nations drink the wine of the passion of her vice!" They were followed by another, a third angel, crying aloud, "Whoever worships

the Beast and his statue, and lets his forehead or hand be marked, *he shall drink the wine of God's 10 passion, poured out untempered in the cup of his anger, and shall be tortured with fire and brimstone before the holy angels and before the Lamb: the smoke of their 11 torture rises for ever and ever, and they get no rest from it, day and night, these worshippers of the Beast and his statue, and all who are marked with his name."* This 12 is what shows the patience of the saints—they who keep God's commands and the faith of Jesus.

Then I heard a voice from heaven 13 saying, "Write this:—'Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from henceforth! Even so, it is the voice of the Spirit—blessed in resting from their toils; for what they have done goes with them.'"

Then I looked, and there was a 14 white cloud, and seated on the cloud One resembling a human being, a golden crown upon his head and a sharp sickle in his hand. And another angel came out of the 15 temple shouting aloud to him who sat upon the cloud,

*"Thrust your sickle in and reap, the time has come to reap, the harvest of earth is ripe and ready."*

So he who sat upon the cloud 16 swung his sickle over the earth, and the earth was reaped. Then 17 another angel came out of the temple, he too with a sharp sickle; and another angel came from the 18 altar—he who has power over fire—and called loudly to the one who had the sharp sickle,

*"Thrust your sharp sickle in, cull the clusters from the Vine of earth, for its grapes are fully ripe."*

\* Omitting [ἀς].

† The thought and phraseology of the whole passage should be compared and contrasted with 1 Pet. ii. 21–22.

## REVELATION XV, XVI

19 So the angel swung his sickle on the earth and culled the clusters from the Vine of earth, flinging the grapes into the great winepress  
20 of God's wrath; outside the City *was the winepress trodden*, and blood gushed out of the winepress as high as a horse's bridle for the space of two hundred miles.

CHAP.

15 THEN I saw another portent in heaven, great and marvellous: seven angels with seven plagues—the last plagues, for they complete  
2 the wrath of God. And I saw what was like a sea of glass mixed with fire, and, standing beside the sea of glass, those who came off conquerors from the Beast and his statue and the cipher of his  
3 name; they had harps of God and *they were singing the song of Moses the servant of God* and the song of the Lamb—

“Great and marvellous are thy deeds,  
Lord God almighty!

*Just and true thy ways,*

*O King of nations!*

4 *Who shall not fear, O Lord, and glorify thy name?*

for thou alone art holy.

Yea, all nations shall come and worship before thee,

for thy judgments are disclosed.”

5 After that \* I looked, and the temple of the tabernacle of testimony in  
6 heaven was thrown open, and out of the temple came the seven angels with the seven plagues, robed in pure dazzling linen, their breasts  
7 encircled with golden belts. Then one of the four living Creatures gave the seven angels seven golden bowls full of the wrath of God

\* That is, after the interlude of 2-4. The words always denote a fresh phrase or stage of the vision.

320

who lives for ever and ever; and *the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God* and from his might, nor could anyone enter the temple till the seven plagues of the seven angels were over. Then I heard a loud voice from *the temple* telling the seven angels, “Go and pour out the seven bowls of the wrath of God on earth.” So the first went off and poured his bowl upon the land; and noisome, painful ulcers broke out on those who bore the mark of the Beast and worshipped his statue. The second poured out his bowl upon the sea; it turned blood like the blood of a corpse, and every living thing within the sea perished. The third poured out his bowl upon the rivers and fountains of water, and they turned blood. Then I heard the angel of the waters cry, “O holy One, who art and wast, just art thou in this thy sentence. They poured out the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink! They deserve it!” And I heard the altar cry, “Even so, Lord God almighty: true and just are thy sentences of doom.”

The fourth angel poured out his bowl upon the sun; and the sun was allowed to scorch men with fire, till men, scorched by the fierce heat, blasphemed the name of the God who had control of these plagues; yet they would not repent and give him glory. The fifth poured out his bowl upon the throne of the Beast; his realm was darkened, and men gnawed their tongues in anguish, blaspheming the God of heaven for their pains and their ulcers, but refusing to repent of their doings. The sixth poured out his bowl on the great



## REVELATION XVII

river *Euphrates*, and its waters were dried up to prepare the way  
 13 for the kings *from the east*. Then I saw issuing from the mouth of the dragon and from the mouth of the Beast and from the mouth of the false Prophet, three foul  
 14 spirits like *frogs*—demon-spirits performing miracles, who come out to muster the kings of the whole world for battle on the great Day  
 15 of *almighty God*. (Lo, I am coming like a thief; blessed be he who keeps awake and holds his raiment fast, not to go naked and have the  
 16 shame of exposure!)\* And they were mustered at the spot called  
 17 (in Hebrew) *Harmagedon*. The seventh angel poured out his bowl in the air; then came a loud voice  
 18 out of the temple of heaven from the throne, crying, "All is over!"  
 19 followed by *flashes of lightning*, loud blasts, peals of thunder, and a mighty earthquake, the like of which never was since man lived  
 20 on earth, such a mighty earthquake it was; the great City was shattered in three parts, the cities of the nations fell, and God remembered to give *Babylon the great the cup of the wine of the passion* of his  
 21 anger. Every island fled away, the mountains disappeared, and huge hailstones fell from heaven on men, till men blasphemed God for the plague of the hail—for the plague of it was fearful.

CHAP.

17 THEN came one of the seven angels with the seven plagues and spoke to me, saying, "Come and I will show you the doom of the great Harlot who is seated on  
 2 many waters, with whom the kings

\* Ver. 15 interrupts the sequence of thought; it is either a gloss or misplaced, perhaps from the third chapter.

Y

of earth have committed vice, and the dwellers on earth have been drunk with the wine of her vice." 3  
 So he bore me away rapt in the Spirit to the desert, and I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet Beast covered with blasphemous titles; it had seven heads and ten horns. 4  
 The woman was clad in purple and scarlet, her ornaments were of gold and precious stones and pearls, in her hand was a golden cup full of all abominations and the impurities of her vice, and on her forehead a name was written by way of symbol, "*Babylon the great*, the mother of harlots and of all abominations on earth." Then 5  
 I saw the woman was drunk with the blood of the saints and the blood of the witnesses of Jesus; and as I looked at her I marvelled greatly. But the angel said to me, "Why marvel? I will explain to you the mystery of the woman, and of the Beast with the seven heads and the ten horns who carries her. *The Beast* you 6  
 have seen was, is not, but is to rise from the abyss—yet to perdition he shall go—and the dwellers on earth will wonder (all whose names have not been written from the foundation of the world in the book of Life), when they see that the Beast was, is not, but is coming. Now for the interpretation of the discerning mind! The seven heads are seven hills, on which the woman is seated: also, 10  
 they are seven kings, of whom five have fallen, one is living, and the other has not arrived yet—and when he does arrive, he can only stay a little while. As for 11  
 the Beast which was and is not, he is an eighth head; he belongs to the seven, and to perdition he

## REVELATION XVIII

- 12 shall go. *As for the ten horns* you have seen, *they are ten kings* who have no royal power as yet, but receive royal authority for an
- 13 hour along with the Beast; they are of one mind, and they confer their power and authority upon
- 14 the Beast. They will wage war on the Lamb, but the Lamb will conquer them because he is *Lord of lords and King of kings*—the Lamb and the elect, the chosen, the faithful who are with him.”
- 15 He also told me, “*The waters* you saw, on which the woman is seated, are peoples and hosts, nations and
- 16 tongues. As for the ten horns you have seen, they and the Beast will hate the harlot, lay her waste, and strip her naked; they will devour her flesh and burn her with
- 17 fire, for God has put it into their hearts to execute his purpose, by having one mind and by conferring their royal power upon the Beast, until the words of God are fulfilled.
- 18 As for the woman you have seen, she is the great City which reigns over *the kings of the earth.*” \*
- 18 After that I saw another angel descend from heaven, great in might; his radiance lit up the
- 2 earth, and he shouted aloud with a strong voice,  
*“Fallen, fallen is Babylon the great,*  
*now she is a haunt of demons,*  
*the den of all foul spirits,*  
*a cage for every foul and loath-*  
*some bird :*
- 3 *for all nations have drunk the wine of the passion of her vice,*  
*the kings of the earth have com-*  
*mitted vice with her,*  
*and by the wealth of her wanton-*  
*ness earth’s traders have grown rich.”*

\* Possibly xix. 9–10 (“The angel also . . .”) originally came at this place in the narrative.  
 322

And I heard another voice from 4  
 heaven crying,  
*“Come out of her, O my people,*  
*that you share not her sins,*  
*that you partake not of her*  
*plagues :*  
*for high as heaven her sins are* 5  
*heaped,*  
 and God calls her misdeeds to  
 the reckoning.  
*Render to her what she rendered* 6  
*to others,*  
 aye, double the doom *for all she*  
*has done ;*  
 mix her the draught double in  
 the cup she mixed for others.  
 As she gloried and played the 7  
 wanton,  
 so give her like measure of  
 torture and tears.  
 Since *in her heart she vaunts,*  
*‘A queen I sit,*  
*no widow I, tears I shall never*  
*know,’*  
 so shall her plagues *fall in a* 8  
*single day,*  
 pestilence, tears, and famine :  
 she shall be burnt with fire—  
 for *strong is God the Lord her judge.*  
*And the kings of the earth who* 9  
*committed vice and wantoned with*  
*her shall weep and wail over her,*  
 as they watch the smoke of her  
 burning; for fear of her torture 10  
 they will stand far off, crying,  
 “*Woe and alas, thou great city !*  
*thou strong city of Babylon !*  
 In one brief hour thy doom has  
 come.’

And the traders of earth shall *weep* 11  
*and wail over her ;* for now there  
 is none to buy their freights,  
 freights of gold, silver, jewels, 12  
 pearls, fine linen, purples, silk,  
 scarlet stuff, all sorts of citron  
 wood and ivory wares, all articles  
 of costly wood, of bronze, of iron  
 and of marble, with cinnamon, 13



balsam, spices, myrrh, frankincense, wines, olive-oil, fine flour and wheat, with cattle, sheep, horses, carriages, slaves, and *the*  
 15 *souls of men.\** The traders in these wares, who made rich profits from her, will stand far off for fear of her torture, *weeping and wailing :*

‘Woe and alas, for the great city, robed in linen, in purple and scarlet, her ornaments of gold, of jewels and pearl !

And all this splendour gone in one brief hour !’

17 And all *shipmasters* and sea-faring folk, *sailors and all whose business lies upon the sea, stood*  
 18 far off as they watched the smoke of her burning, crying, ‘*What city*  
 19 *was like the great City ?*’ They threw dust on their heads and cried, as they wept and wailed,

‘Woe and alas for the great City, where all *shipmen made rich profit by her treasures !*

*Gone, gone in one brief hour !’*

20 O heaven, rejoice over her ! Saints, apostles, prophets, rejoice !  
*For God has avenged you on her now.”*

21 Then a strong angel lifted a boulder like a huge millstone and flung it into the sea, crying,

“*So shall the great city, Babylon, be hurled down, hurtling, and never be seen any more :*

22 *and the sound of harpists and minstrels and fluteplayers and trumpeters shall never be heard in thee*  
*more :*

and craftsmen of any craft shall never be found in thee  
*more :*

\* Ver. 14 has been misplaced from its original position in the middle of ver. 23.

*and the sound of the millstone shall never be heard in thee*  
*more :*

*and the light of a lamp* 23  
*shall never be seen in thee*  
*more :*

*and the voice of the bridegroom and bride*  
*shall never be heard in thee*  
*more.*

Vanished the ripe fruit of thy 14  
 soul’s desire !

Perished thy luxury and splendour !

Never again to be seen.

For the magnates of earth were 23  
 thy traders ;

all nations were seduced by thy  
*magic spells.*

And in her was found the blood 24  
 of prophets and saints,  
*of all who were slain upon earth.” †*

CHAP.

AFTER that I heard what was 19  
 like the shout of a great host in heaven, crying,

“*Hallelujah !* salvation and glory and power are our God’s !

*True and just are his sentences of* 2  
*doom ;*

he has doomed the great Harlot who destroyed earth with her vice,

*he has avenged on her the blood of his servants.”*

Again they repeated, 3

“*Hallelujah !* And the smoke of her goes up for ever and ever !”

Then the four and twenty Presbyters and the four living Creatures fell down and worshipped God who is seated on the throne, crying, “*So be it, hallelujah !*” And a voice 5  
 came from the throne,

“*Extol our God, all ye his servants,*

† Ver. 24, like ver. 20, links xvii. 6 to the outburst of xix. 2.

## REVELATION XX

- ye who reverence him, low and high!"*
- 6 Then I heard a cry like the shout of a great host and the sound of many waves and the roar of heavy thunder—  
*"Hallelujah! now the Lord our God almighty reigns!*  
 7 *Let us rejoice and triumph,* let us give him the glory!  
 For now comes the marriage of the Lamb;  
 his bride has arrayed herself,  
 8 Yea, she is allowed to put on fine linen, dazzling white"  
 (the white linen is the righteous conduct of the saints). Then I was told, "Write this:—'Blessed are those who have been called to the marriage-banquet of the Lamb!'"  
 The angel also told me, "These are genuine words of God." Then I fell before his feet to worship him; but he said to me, "No, not that! I am but a servant like yourself and your brothers, who hold the testimony of Jesus. Worship God" (for the testimony borne by Jesus is the breath of all prophecy).
- 11 *Then I saw heaven open wide—* and there was a white horse: his rider is faithful and true, yea, *just are his judgments* and his warfare.  
 12 *His eyes are a flame of fire,* on his head are many diadems, he bears a written name which none knows but himself.  
 13 He is clad in a robe dipped in blood (his name is called THE LOGOS OF GOD),  
 14 and the troops of heaven follow him on white horses, arrayed in pure white linen.
- A sharp sword issues from his 15 lips, wherewith to smite the nations;  
*he will shepherd\* them with an iron flail,*  
 and trample the winepress of the passion of the anger of God almighty.  
 And on his robe, upon his thigh, 16 his name is written,  
 KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.  
 Then I saw an angel standing in 17 the sun, who shouted aloud to all the birds that fly in mid-heaven,  
*"Come, gather for the great banquet of God, to devour the flesh of kings, 18 the flesh of generals, the flesh of the strong, the flesh of horses and their riders, the flesh of all men, free and slaves, low and high alike."*  
 And I saw the Beast and the kings 19 of earth and their troops mustered to wage war on him who was seated on the horse and on his troops.  
 But the Beast was seized, together 20 with the false Prophet who had performed in his presence the miracles by means of which he seduced those who received the mark of the Beast and worshipped his statue; both of them were flung alive into the lake of fire that blazes with brimstone, while 21 the rest were killed by the sword of him who is seated on the horse, by the sword that issues from his lips. And all the birds were glutted with their flesh.  
 Then I saw an angel descend 20 from heaven with the key of the abyss and a huge chain in his hand; he gripped the dragon, 2 that old serpent (who is the devil

\* The verb had really come to mean no more than "rule" by this time; but the literal rendering may be retained for the sake of the antithesis in vii. 17.



- and *Satan*), and bound him for  
 8 a thousand years, flinging him into the abyss and shutting and sealing it on the top of him, to prevent him seducing the nations again until the thousand years were completed—after which he has to be released for a little while.
- 4 And *I* saw *thrones* with people sitting on them, who were allowed to judge—saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for the testimony of *Jesus* and *God's* word, those who would not worship the *Beast* or his statue, and who would not receive his mark on their forehead or hand; they came to life and reigned along with the
- 5 *Christ* for a thousand years. As for the rest of the dead, they did not come to life until the thousand years were completed. This is
- 6 the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he who shares in the first resurrection; over such the second death has no power, they shall be *priests of God* and the *Christ*, and reign along with him during the
- 7 thousand years. But when the thousand years are over, *Satan* will be released from his prison,
- 8 and he will emerge to seduce the nations at the four corners of the earth, even *Gog* and *Magog*, mustering them for the fray. Their number was like the sand of the sea,
- 9 and they swarmed over the broad earth, encircling the leaguer of the saints and the beloved City; but fire descended from heaven and consumed them, and their seducer, the devil, was flung into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the *Beast* and the false *Prophet* also lie, to be tortured day and night for ever and ever.
- 11 Then *I* saw a great white throne, and One who was seated thereon;

from his presence earth and sky fled, no more to be found.

And *I* saw the dead, high and low, 12 standing before the throne, and books were opened—

also another book, the book of Life, was opened—

and the dead were judged by what was written in these books, by what they had done.

The sea gave up its corpses, 13

Death and Hades gave up their dead,

and all were judged by what each had done.

Then Death and Hades were 14 flung into the lake of fire,

and whoever was not found en- 15 rolled in the book of Life was flung into the lake of fire—

which is the second death, the lake of fire.\*

Then *I* saw the new heaven and 21 the new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away; and the sea is no more.

And *I* saw the holy City, the new 2 Jerusalem, descending from God out of heaven, all ready like a bride arrayed for her husband. And 3

*I* heard a loud voice out of the throne, crying,

“Lo, God's dwelling-place is with men,  
 with men will he dwell;  
 they shall be his people,  
 and God will himself be with them:

he will wipe every tear from 4 their eyes,  
 and death shall be no more—

\* Unless this line is to be omitted altogether, it must be placed thus after ver. 15, not after 14 (as in the ordinary text), since there is no question of a second death except for human beings.

## REVELATION XXI

no more *wailing or crying* or pain,  
for the *first things* have passed  
away."

- 5 Then *he who was seated on the throne* said, "*Lo, I make all things new.*" And he said, "Write this: 'these words are trustworthy and  
6 genuine.'" Then he said, "All is over! I am the alpha and the omega, the First and the Last. I will let *the thirsty* drink of the fountain of *the water of Life* without  
7 price. The conqueror shall obtain this, and *I will be his God, and he*  
8 *shall be my son*; but as for the craven, the faithless, the abominable, as for the murderers, the immoral, the sorcerers, the idolaters, and liars of all kinds—their lot is the lake that *blazes with fire and brimstone*, which is the second death."
- 9 Then came one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls filled with the *seven last plagues*; and he spoke to me thus, "Come, and I will show you the Bride,  
10 the wife of the Lamb." *So he carried me off, rapt in the Spirit, to a huge, high mountain, where he showed me the City, the holy Jerusalem, descending from God*  
11 *out of heaven, with the glory of God.* The sheen of it resembled some rare jewel like jasper, clear as  
12 crystal; it has a huge, high wall with twelve gates, twelve angels at the twelve gates, and names inscribed thereon which are the names  
13 of the twelve tribes of the sons of Israel, three gates on the east, three gates on the north, three gates on the south, and three gates on the  
14 west. And the wall of the City has twelve foundation-stones, bearing the twelve names of the  
15 twelve apostles of the Lamb. He who talked to me had a golden

wand by way of a measuring-rod. to measure the City and its gates and wall; the City lies *foursquare*, 16 the length the same as the breadth, and he measured fifteen hundred miles with his rod for the City, for its breadth and length and height alike; *he made the measure of the* 17 *wall seventy-two yards, by human, that is, by angelic reckoning. The material of the wall is jasper, 18 but the City is made of pure gold, transparent like glass. The found-* 19 *ation-stones of the city-wall are adorned with all sorts of precious stones, the first foundation-stone being of jasper, the second of sapphire, the third of agate, the fourth of emerald, the fifth of* 20 *onyx, the sixth of sardius, the seventh of chrysolite, the eighth of beryl, the ninth of topaz, the tenth of chrysoprase, the eleventh of jacinth, the twelfth of amethyst. The twelve gates are twelve pearls, 21 each gate made of a single pearl; and the streets of the City are pure gold, clear as crystal. But I saw* 22 *no temple in the City, for its temple is the Lord God almighty and the Lamb. And the City needs* 23 *no sun or moon to shine upon it, for the glory of God illumines it, and the Lamb lights it up.*

*By its light will the nations walk; 24 and into it will the kings of earth bring their glories (the gates of it will never be shut* 25 *by day, and night there shall be none), they will bring to it the glories 26 and treasures of the nations. Nothing profane, none who prac-* 27 *tises abomination or falsehood shall enter, but those alone whose names are written in the Lamb's book of Life.*



## REVELATION XXII

- 22 THEN he showed me *the river of the water of Life*, bright as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and  
 2 of the Lamb *through* the streets of the City; *on both sides of the river grew the tree of Life*, bearing twelve kinds of fruit, *each month having its own fruit*; and the leaves served to heal the nations.
- 3 None who is accursed will be there;  
 but the throne of God and the Lamb will be within it, his servants will serve and worship him,
- 4 they will see his face, and his name will be on their foreheads.
- 5 Night there shall be none; they need no lamp or sun to shine upon them,  
 for the Lord God will illumine them;  
 and they will reign for ever and ever.
- 6 And the angel said to me, "These words are trustworthy and genuine, for the Lord God of the spirits of the prophets has sent his angel to show his servants *what must*  
 7 very soon come to pass. *Lo, I am coming* very soon; blessed is he who lays to heart the words of the prophecy of this book!"
- 8 I John saw and heard all this; and when I heard and saw it, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel who had shown me  
 9 it all. But he said to me, "No, not that! I am but a servant like yourself and your brothers the prophets, who lay to heart the words  
 10 of this book. Worship God." Then he said, "Do not seal up the words of the prophecy of this book, for the time is near:
- 11 Let the wicked still be wicked, let the filthy still be filthy,

let the righteous still do right, let the holy still be holy!  
*Lo, I am coming* very soon, with 12 my reward,  
 to requite everyone for what he has done.

I am the alpha and the omega, 13 the First and the Last, the beginning and the end.

Blessed are those who wash their 14 robes,\* that theirs may be the right to the tree of Life, the right to enter the gates of the City! Begone, 15 you dogs, you sorcerers, you vicious men, you murderers, you idolaters, you who love and practise falsehood, every one of you!"

"I Jesus have sent my angel to 16 give you this testimony for the churches; I am the Scion and offspring of David, the bright star of the Morning."

"Come," say the Spirit and the 17 Bride:

let the hearer too say, "Come"; and let the thirsty come, let anyone who desires it, take the water of Life without price.

I adjure all who hear the words 18 of the prophecy of this book:

"If anyone adds to them,  
 God will add to him the plagues described in this book;

and if anyone removes any words 19 written in this book,

God will remove his share in the tree of Life and in the holy City described in this book."

He who bears this testimony 20 says, "Even so: I am coming very soon." Amen, Lord Jesus, come!

The grace of the Lord Jesus 21 Christ be with you all.† Amen.

\* Reading πλύνοντες τὰς στολὰς αὐτῶν with A, Primasius, the Vulgate, etc.

† Reading πάντων or πάντων ὑμῶν

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY  
RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED,  
BRUNSWICK ST., STAMFORD ST., S.E.,  
AND BUNGAY, SUFFOLK.







**University of Toronto  
Library**

---

**DO NOT  
REMOVE  
THE  
CARD  
FROM  
THIS  
POCKET**

**Acme Library Card Pocket  
Under Pat. "Ref. Index File"  
Made by LIBRARY BUREAU**



